TRANSCENDING THE NINE HEAVENS

BOOK 02

Fengling Tianxia

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Transcending the Nine Heavens

(傲世九重天)

by

Fengling Tianxia

(风凌天下)

Synopsis

Chu Yang, the Ninth Master of the Nine Tribulations Sword, sacrificed almost everything he had for the sake of improving his martial arts, including the love of his life. After spending three years locating the fifth fragment of the Nine Tribulations Sword, he was ambushed by all sides at that very place. Mortally injured with no means of escape, Chu Yang executed a sacrificial technique by plunging the Nine Tribulations Sword into his very own heart. “With the blood of my heart, ten thousand tribulations will collapse!”

After witnessing the death of all his ambushers, Chu Yang’s vision began to darken. At a distance, moments before his death, he saw the mastermind who had plotted his downfall — Mo Tian Ji. With that, his eyes finally closed.

However, with a start, Chu Yang once again awoke to find that he had returned to when he was sixteen years of age! Furthermore, the Sword Spirit of the Nine Tribulations Sword now resided within his Dantian, the energy center of his body! From that very moment, Chu Yang would then begin to right all of his past regrets, and carve his very own legend by fulfilling his destiny as the final Master of the Nine Tribulations Sword, and defeating the Heavenly Devils beyond the realm of the Nine Heavens Continent.

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Novel Saga @ Qidian International

Editing by Novel Saga @ Qidian International

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ Hasseno Blog

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 101: King of Hell Chu

The one who was paddled two hundred times by Minister Chu's order hated him even more with all the forced cultivation. Yet, somehow that hatred gradually disappeared and in its place was appreciation... (TLN: Now that's Stockholm syndrome.)

Minister Chu might be a little cruel and a little strict... but he is leading us to a bright future.

During this time, the performance of the three brigades greatly improved. A small piece of paper, with more than ten fifth rank officials' names written on it, was brought out from Minister Chu's room. This caused a great commotion because they were all Great Zhao Nation's spies.

After this was confirmed, Prince Tie Bu Tian was extremely shocked. He immediately went to check for himself to avoid any wrongful killings. In the end everything was verified with evidence and witnesses piling up like a mountain. This made the prince livid. The execution ground of Iron Cloud Citadel was once again covered in blood.

Currently, all the nobles of Iron Cloud Citadel were feeling very insecure!

The notices posted on the walls of Iron Cloud Citadel seemed to have some new information every day. Each detail was usually about some high ranking official who had been found guilty with a crime so atrocious that the punishment was execution and seizure of properties.

Moreover, these cases were carefully judged by Minister Chu; the evidence was abundant and clear. Everything was ironclad and did not leave room for a shadow of a doubt.

Presently, the name Bu Tian Pavilion was shining as brightly as a midday sun in Iron Cloud Citadel. The people praised them

endlessly, while the officials were all feeling restless. Even though they were just hunting down spies and traitors right now, who knew when this legendary minister would start chopping down greedy officials who took bribes?

This was something no one could predict.

With us officials, who could say that their butt is completely clean? Who had never wiped their butts with their hands? Impartiality, integrity... Motherf*, are there any good officials like that in this world?

The result was, all the officials started to straighten up without any orders or coordination. They just wanted to show a good front so that if the Minister's judgement came down on them, they could at least say, "This little official had seen the error of his ways, and, since then, had not dared to... Please have mercy..."

There was something nobody knew about: all the valuables, rare elixirs, precious gems... mysteriously disappeared after they were seized. No one knew where they were sent to...

The three brigades of Bu Tian Pavilion, comprising of Iron Blood, Fierce Blood, and Heavenly Secret slowly changed their names to Iron Blood Hall, Fierce Blood Hall, and Heavenly Secret Hall. This was because under the temptations of gold and silver as well as high ranking positions, Bu Tian Pavilion had grown more crowded. It was like a rolling snowball growing in size.

It had been a little over half a month and the number of members in Bu Tian Pavilion had increased from eighty to one hundred thirty people, almost a half more than the number from before the cleansing.

Meanwhile, Minister Chu became more and more mysterious. In the beginning, with just the original members of Bu Tian Pavilion, Minister Chu would come out of his room for a stroll every now and then. But since new members started coming in, only Wu Qian Qian came out of that room to give orders.

The old members of Bu Tian Pavilion were given orders to not say anything about Minister Chu to anyone... The new members did not even know what Minister Chu looked like.

What they did know about him were vague little details based on word of mouth. Apparently, Minister Chu was very young, and seemed frail and scholarly in appearance. He did not know any martial arts, but had wisdom beyond compare. There was nothing that could escape his keen observation... In all of Bu Tian Pavilion, there were none that did not respect him...

These were all rumors without one shred of evidence for verification... The whole thing helped the enigmatic Minister Chu put on another layer of mystery.

On the other hand, the great families and the officials of Iron Cloud Nation had started to call Minister Chu, “King of Hell Chu.” Whenever “King of Hell Chu” gave the order, his little demons went and took the souls. If King of Hell Chu gave the order, there was absolutely no escape!

At the time, all of Iron Cloud Citadel had a saying, “If the King of Hell wants you dead at midnight, who would dare to keep you till four in the morning?” These words were about none other than Minister Chu.

As the word spread, everyone who heard them nodded in agreement. It was as if these words were an actual reflection of how they felt...

King of Hell Chu... Was the King of Hell! Even more so, if the actual King of Hell called a soul, a doctor might be able to help keep that person alive for a few more days. But if King of Hell Chu gave the order... you could not even drag it out 15 minutes more.

King of Hell Chu was even more powerful than the King of Hell...

The rumors spread quickly. And when the people of Bu Tian Pavilion heard this moniker, they immediately said to themselves,

“Oh god! Who was the genius that came up with such a perfect title?”

Minister Chu stayed in his room every day. From time to time, he gave out an order for some souls. The ones with their names written down were essentially dead. The King of Hell only asked for one soul at a time, but Minister Chu always gave orders for the whole family to be executed and the entire estate to be seized. In addition, there were others who were implicated in relation to the case as well...

That door... seemed gloomy to everyone, even in broad daylight. Some people even said this about Minister Chu’s room: “Outside that door is the world of the living; one step in and you are in the netherworld.” Those who heard this nodded in agreement...

Minister Chu’s office was the mysterious palace of the King of Hell!

Since then, everyone in Bu Tian Pavilion referred to Minister Chu as “King of Hell.” They all believed that he was worthy of this title. In fact, if anything, he made it more glorious...

“Hey, have you seen the King of Hell today?”

“No, the King of Hell rarely makes an appearance.”

“There, the King of Hell just sent out another order for souls...”

“One already went out this morning. The Soul Demoness brought it out and gave it to the Dark Reaper...”

The Dark Reaper was actually former Pavilion Lord of Bu Tian Pavilion, former leader of Fierce Blood Brigade, and current Lord of Fierce Blood Hall – Official Cheng Zi Ang!

Even a stunning beauty like Wu Qian Qian was given the moniker “Soul Demoness” because of her task as the bearer of Chu Yang’s orders... Wu Qian Qian was always gentle, but as talks of King of Hell Chu grew, causing fear in the hearts of those who heard it, wherever the Soul Demoness went, people naturally became

worried…

“Motherf*, the King of Hell didn’t kill enough yet?”

“How could the King of Hell ever get enough? Are you joking?”

…

“Ahh… what does the King of Hell look like?”

“The King of Hell… You want me to die with you? Just shut your mouth…”

“Just a little introduction…”

“In short, if an ordinary person sees the King of Hell, he would be scared breathless in the best case…” the speaker, himself, had never seen “King of Hell Chu,” but did not hesitate to spin his own tale.

“Scared breathless… in the best case? In the worst case… then what?”

“Worst case… their souls would fly right out on the spot. They might not ever be able to reincarnate. That happens very often…”

“Motherf*! That terrifying?”

“Yes, he is the King of Hell…”

As a result, the rumors spread far and wide. The further they went, the more erroneous they became. The King of Hell became more and more fierce. In less than a month… the name King of Hell Chu had established a reputation in Iron Cloud Citadel!

With regards to these rumors, our King of Hell Chu could not just sit idly by and not pay any mind to them… The moment those rumors started spreading fiercely, Chu Yang immediately gave an order, “Send people out to pour more oil on the fire, and quickly spread this rumor further; make it even fiercer… Let the people know more, the more ominous the better…”

After that, King of Hell Chu made himself a horrifying mask, and

appeared a few times in Bu Tian Pavilion. Blue face with yellow fangs and filled with demonic aura, even in broad daylight, it made people almost pee in their pants...

Over time, with the exception of the people he knew, even the older members who had seen Chu Yang were confused. They gradually forgot what Chu Yang used to look like and only recognized the coldblooded, ruthless, bloodthirsty King of Hell Chu...

Chapter 102: Too clean, not good

“King of Hell Chu, hehe… Chu Yang, you are really skilled!” Wu Qian Qian covered her tiny mouth, and laughed in front of Chu Yang until her whole body trembled.

Every time she thought about Chu Yang’s nickname, Wu Qian Qian could not help but laugh. At the same time, she also had a sense of admiration intermingled with a hint of frustration.

Even though Chu Yang was a year younger than her, he was able to do things she could not even dream of. With the strength of only one person, someone with no background at that, he became the minister of Bu Tian Pavilion!

This position was the dream of her father, Wu Yun Liang. But with all his efforts these past years, he was not able to succeed; Chu Yang accomplished everything in just two weeks!

Of course her father’s background was different from that of Chu Yang, who was all alone; Tie Bu Tian did not want to take such a big risk with Wu Yun Liang. But… Was Chu Yang not also from Beyond the Heavens Sect? Was the prince not afraid that Chu Yang was a pawn of Beyond the Heavens Sect?

The prince was cautious with her father; why was he not cautious with Chu Yang?

These questions were currently troubling Wu Qian Qian, but of course, she did not say them out loud.

Since she knew Chu Yang, she continually heard people talk about him. And then she met him again on the occasion that she had to come and invite him in the prince’s stead; it was an extremely ceremonious occasion… Even now, Wu Qian Qian felt as if her life was a dream. Towards this little martial brother she held an incredible admiration.

Wu Qian Qian knew Chu Yang pretty well; when she thought

about it, no one in the world could do the job better than Chu Yang!

As things progressed, the situation became even more unexpected for Wu Qian Qian. Within a night, as a newly instated minister of Bu Tian Pavilion, Chu Yang reorganized Bu Tian Pavilion and made everyone, including Revered Martial Artists, respect him!

The others did not know Chu Yang's cultivation level, but how could Wu Qian Qian not know? Chu Yang... was only a Martial Warrior!

A Martial Warrior who became the leader of a group comprising of Martial Masters, Martial Great Masters, and even Revered Martial Artists... He was able to get everyone to respect him, and even idolize him...

This made Wu Qian Qian feel as if she was dreaming. Moreover, Chu Yang intentionally created a mysterious air, and did not show his true abilities. He gave everyone the impression that he was a scholarly figure who did not know any martial arts!

However, even stranger to her was the fact that these martial artists were not the type to be humble and obedient. And yet, they allowed a weak scholar to be above them; in addition, they even worshipped him and obeyed him unconditionally.

And recently, there was even the stranger incident of King of Hell Chu. The mere mention of this name was enough to scare young children to stop crying at night!

Wu Qian Qian felt like she was lost in a fog.

"Uh! You should call me Minister Chu." Chu Yang said, raising his brows.

That was about the only thing he could do, because, even in his room, he always kept that menacing mask on his face.

He was not overdoing it; he had an ulterior motive.

Since his current strength was not enough, an air of mystery was required. An air of mystery, in combination with a high authority, was capable of creating great power. Humans always worshipped gods, but had anyone seen a god? If there was a god that people could see every day... that would not be a god anymore...

And Chu Yang was currently making a god. That god was him!

Moreover, Chu Yang intentionally released the rumor “King of Hell Chu did not know martial arts...” While she was not sure how effective that strategy was, such a rumor had the power to fool enemies. If he ever ran into danger, he would have a greater chance of escaping...

“Minister Chu? Can I not call you King of Hell Chu?” Wu Qian Qian tilted her head smiling as she sat opposite of Chu Yang. She seemed to be very interested in that hideous mask.

In fact, each time Wu Qian Qian saw Chu Yang, if he was in a good mood, she would feel more at ease. Even if he was wearing his grotesque mask, she still felt uplifted. But if Chu Yang was in a bad mood, forget about laughing freely, her breathing would become more tense.

Wu Qian Qian did not know why she felt that way.

“Up to you. How you call me is your choice.” Chu Yang looked down and continued to look at the documents in front of him.

Before him was a stunning beauty whose scent filled the air, but Chu Yang seemed to be completely without feeling and continued to analyze the data before him.

This made Wu Qian Qian have the feeling that this man would succeed at anything he desired no matter what environment he was in!

Chu Yang’s eyes quickly went over the documents, and then stopped, motionless.

This was a normal routine for Chu Yang. He would go over

documents on an official, and then stop to find any flaws within them. Each time he did this, he usually took a long time to think everything over.

The spies normally never took that much effort to cover themselves. There were too many of them in Iron Cloud, and yet, no spies were found. From this he realized that they hid very carefully. So Chu Yang was trying find small flaws amongst millions of people; then he could start cutting them down.

This was easier said than done!

Wu Qian Qian was sitting quietly on the side watching Chu Yang think. She was a smart girl who knew when it was okay to tell jokes and help Chu Yang relax, and when it was time to be quiet and not bother him. Although she did not have much life experience, her female intuition was perfect for the job.

This was also the reason why Chu Yang allowed her to stay in the room with him.

He was in no mood for any sort of pleasure, but men and women working together was a natural part of life and was commonplace. Having a great beauty in front of him certainly was good motivation.

No one would ever want to lose face in front of a beauty; Chu Yang was also not an exception.

Tang Xin Sheng, thirty-seven years old, assistant minister of records, Iron Cloud Citadel's, worked with impartiality and integrity. Good official, started at nineteen and underwent steady promotions. Positions held... During his tenure, he had excellent assessments...

Wu Luo Zhi, thirty-eight years old, assistant minister of rites... some embezzlements, diligent official...

Qian Qi Shu, thirty-seven years old, assistant minister of the military... extraordinary perseverance. As a general, he and his

soldiers looted Great Zhao a few times...

Zhou Zhi Jun, upstanding official, but...

After looking at all the documents, Chu Yang contemplated for a while. Then he took another stack of documents...

After a long time he put together more than a dozen documents, and felt as if they had no issues. He wanted to put them aside, but had a vague sense that he missed something. After looking over them once more, he still did not discover anything...

Chu Yang rested his chin on his hand and pondered for a long time. He was once again at a loss, and sighed.

“Chu Yang, if you investigate the officials one by one like that, how many could you check? Are none of the officials good in your eyes?” Wu Qian Qian had witnessed Chu Yang double-checking these documents and wanting to check them again so she asked.

After hearing these words, Chu Yang’s brows suddenly pinched together. He looked at Wu Qian Qian and his countenance suddenly seemed like he had just had an epiphany.

“Yes!” Chu Yang finally realized what the issue was. What Wu Qian Qian said helped him push away the fog in his mind.

“Are none of the officials good?” Chu Yang muttered as a smile appeared on his face. “You’re right, Elder Martial Sister Wu. Thank you for the reminder; you have done me a great favor!”

“Great favor?” Wu Qian Qian was at a loss. She was clueless as to how she had helped him.

“How could there be good officials in this world?” Chu Yang said coldly. His eyes paused on Tang Xin Sheng’s document. The problem was, Tang Xin Sheng was too clean!

Too clean, not good!

This official was hardworking, and regardless of whether he was promoted or demoted he remained upright and uncorrupted. Even

when he became assistant minister of records, he still grew his own vegetables and dressed simply. He ate like a commoner and saved all his money for the poor...

He was a big official of the fourth rank, and yet his wife still weaved and his son still worked on the farm! His son had the ability to qualify as an official, but he maintained: “The father is an official; if the son becomes an official too, then greed would develop and they would be tainted. For the good of the people, it is enough that one person in the family is an official.” And with that, he completely blocked any possibility of his son becoming an official!

His meaning was, since he was a big official, his son would surely be allowed to pass the qualifying tests even if he did not have the ability. They were better off without such an accomplishment. It was enough that the father was an official; the son should just avoid this path to prevent public suspicion.

This man was a saint!

But... were there such things as saints in this world? Some people might believe that, but Chu Yang unequivocally did not!

Chapter 103: Suspicions everywhere

If there was an issue with this person, it was that he was too upright, too clean! In short, it was so perfect it was fake!

Chu Yang's methods had always gone against the grain.

One verse he always kept in mind: people worked hard to become officials for wealth. A person who did not put himself first would be destroyed by heaven and earth (TLN: actually a very common saying). In his previous life, he wandered everywhere and was angered by the endless greed of officials that he had witnessed so often.

Even if an official was considered as being extremely upright, he still lived in a big house and ate rare delicacies. No one ended up living life any less luxuriously than the big wealthy families.

No one was truly capable of living upright and being poor. Even ordinary peasants would hope that their land would be expanded by a few meters, and their families could eat a little better.

Frankly speaking, the people Tang Xin Sheng helped ate and dressed better than the people in his own family.

"There's an issue with this person!" Chu Yang contemplated and pointed to the document on Tang Xin Sheng, "Investigate!"

"Huh?" While Wu Qian Qian had not been in Iron Cloud Citadel that long, she had heard of the great official who "poured out his own blood to protect his country and stayed upright for the people," Tang Xin Sheng! (TLN: Would it be information overload if I tell you that his name meant heart of a saint?)

Tang Xin Sheng had become a role model for all of the officials in Iron Cloud Citadel to emulate!

How could a person like this be a spy? Is Chu Yang messed up in the head?

“No need to doubt, give it to Heavenly Secret Hall to investigate immediately! Before this afternoon, I want to see that information in front of me. If by then, the information indicates that Tang Xin Sheng did not do anything wrong, all of Heavenly Secret Hall would be paddled as punishment! Repeat everything I said to Chen Yu Tong!”

Wu Qian Qian wrinkled her nose, wrote a note and walked out.

Suddenly there was a burst of chaos outside; people were yelling and horses were neighing. Heavenly Secret Hall’s people were running out as if there was a fire. King of Hell Chu’s paddle was surely not going to spare anyone.

Chu Yang smiled and said slowly, “You must remember, everyone in this world is flawed; a saint like him cannot possibly exist!” He pointed to Tang Xin Cheng’s document and snorted icily.

In his heart, he always remembered these words: “Are there saints in this world? First, let’s assume that there are. Then would the saint not need food and clothes? Would these things not require the use of money? Would the saint need to find a wife? And other physical needs?... If a person needs any of these things then he is surely not a saint! Because he has needs, and from that we can infer that there are no saints in this world.”

These words were said by Mo Tian Ji! Chu Yang hated Mo Tian Ji to the bone, but he could not deny that these words of his made sense.

Since the day the three halls were created until now, Chu Yang had always managed them with great severity. But, under Chu Yang’s strictest scrutiny was Heavenly Secret Hall. The leader of Heavenly Secret Hall would be called in and yelled at by Chu Yang every two to three days. Afterward, he would come out with a grim face, and grab his underlings to yell at...

Of course, when King of Hell Chu yelled, he had reasons; a person

would only get yelled at if he did something wrong. While Chen Yu Tong got yelled at he could not get angry; after all, he deserved it since he was at fault. Minister Chu was the big boss...

So, the only thing Chen Yu Tong could do was yell at his underlings and dare not get mad at Minister Chu. This had created a rigorous and meticulous work ethic for Heavenly Secret Hall. As time went on, no one dared make a mistake...

Writing one wrong word would lead to the hall's leader getting yelled at. Then everyone under him would suffer with him. Who would dare to make a mistake?

But of course, Chen Yu Tong and his men did not know that their suffering was brought on by Mo Tian Ji's words. If they knew this, they would probably swallow Mo Tian Ji alive...

It was not even afternoon when detailed information on Tang Xin Sheng was placed on Chu Yang's desk. The amount of information greatly increased to about half a foot thick. This kind of efficiency even impressed Wu Qian Qian...

Truly fast...

Chu Yang opened it and carefully looked over them once; a smile finally appeared on his face.

The new information was also clean, but under Chu Yang's eyes, many discrepancies were found.

"This person became an official ten years ago. He was twenty-seven years old at the time. He was a poor youth from a farming family. He lost his parents at the age of ten. At the age of twelve his village was raided by Great Zhao; the whole village perished with him as the lone survivor. He was hiding in a cellar."

Chu Yang spoke slowly as Wu Qian Qian, with brush in hand, quickly wrote down everything he said, "Everyone was killed in the most meticulous manner; this is the first point of suspicion. Moreover, if his house had a cellar, then in accordance with the

general customs of rural life, wouldn't most of the houses have cellars as well? Why was his house not searched? Everyone died, and yet a little child hiding in a cellar was unscathed. This is the second point of suspicion."

"If Great Zhao soldiers killed villagers, there would surely be pillaging. After pillaging, they would only need to set fire to the place. This is the best and easiest way. So a fire would be inevitable in these cases. If he was really in a cellar and no one discovered him, even if the fire did not reach him, he would not be able to live through the suffocation! In a situation where he could not have possibly survived, he managed to do just that. This is the third point of suspicion."

"After that, he escaped from his village and came to Brocade Official City. Brocade Official City is not far from that village, only fifty miles. But this distance, to a youth of twelve, was not exactly close... Forget about that, this point is a little forced. Let's just put that aside for now. Uh... when he arrived at Brocade Official City, he immediately found a famous scholar to study under... A village child was able to find referrals for such a thing? Without any referrals, would that famous scholar take on such a beggar to be his student? He was such a saint? This is the fourth point of suspicion."

"Uh... Tang Xin Cheng passed his scholar exam at sixteen, and married after. He passed his official exam at the age of twenty six; and was trained for six months before becoming an official at the age of twenty-seven. Haha, even heavenly talents need time to learn how to be an official and the ways of politics. How could he be instated only six months after passing his examination? This is the fifth point of suspicion."

"While there were clearly witnesses for this time period... A poor guy getting chosen as a guard would be a call for celebration. Tang Xin Cheng successfully passed his exams like a prodigy, a godsend; and yet he did not have any fame at the time. This does not fit with

human mentality.”

“Mentality?” Wu Qian Qian paused and asked with some doubts.

“A person like that, no matter where, is always a role model for everyone to follow. And yet Tang Xin Cheng did not want to be this role model, he continually downplayed his accomplishments. A rising youth who did not want to be famous. This is the sixth point of suspicion.”

Chu Yang continued, “If he was truly humble, then he should not have promoted anything he did. However, since he became an official until now, word of his good deeds spread at an extremely fast pace. Plus, he was only an official of a small area and managed very few people, how did the word get spread so quickly? It seemed as if there was someone behind him putting in effort to build him up.”

“When he came to Iron Cloud Citadel, he became even more unyielding; it seemed that everyone knew that this was an upright official! He has been an official for only ten years, and his position is not low. But such great fame is abnormal. This is the seventh point of suspicion.”

“He is extremely harsh with himself, but forgiving with others. Plus, in his ten years as an official, not one person hates him, not one enemy! Everyone is on good terms... This is the eight point of suspicion!”

Chu Yang smiled slightly, “Everyone says he does a good job. But, whether in the political arena or Jiang Hu, people must choose a side. If you stay in the middle, you would offend both sides. This is unavoidable! The royal court is like this; two-sided fighting until some sort of balance is reached so they can move forward.”

“He has superior ability, never got into any power struggles, and yet he has never lacked in accomplishments.” Chu yang laughed, “This world has never been so overly fair, and yet such a phenomenon happened with him. He had no money, no backings,

and no background, how did he receive such fairness? This is the ninth point of suspicion!”

“More than ten years ago, Diwu Qing Rou just started to have some power. He immediately started his plan of depriving Iron Cloud of blacksmiths. The timing is too much of a coincidence! This is the tenth point of suspicion.”

“Even though his accomplishments were clear and not small, but going from a lowly ninth rank official to a fourth rank official in ten years... It seems that he was promoted once a year... (TLN: This is as the author wrote it. Maybe promotions are half a rank each time?) This speed is too fast. This is the eleventh point of suspicion.”

“His son is talented, but he won’t allow him be an official. He used the excuse of avoiding people’s criticisms, but he was not an Iron Cloud Citadel official at the time. So why did he need to avoid people’s criticism then? Moreover, he is overprotective of his son and barely allows contact with the outside world. Would this not make it difficult for him to contribute to the nation with what he called ‘undying loyalty’? Such an action is difficult to decipher, but is filled with hidden meanings. His son is a farmer, but never ceased his scholarly studies... Laughable. If he does not want to be an official, why keep studying? For whose benefit is he preparing?”

Chu Yang’s smile became icy, “This is the twelfth point of suspicion!”

“With these twelve points, even if he were a real saint, I would still want to kill him!” In King of Hell Chu’s eyes there appeared a sharp light with such darkness, as if it was from the netherworld.

Chapter 104: Dark Night Challenger

Wu Qian Qian was shocked; she could not imagine that Chu Yang was able to find so many questionable points from just looking through the documents on a good and upstanding official like that!

Even though there were a few speculations that were a little forced, with so many suspicious points gathered in one place, it was too abnormal! To say that this was a big coincidence… hmm… even Wu Qian Qian did not believe that there was such a coincidence in this world.

“If this person really is a spy, then he is probably the biggest fish that Bu Tian Pavilion has ever caught!” Chu Yang said grimly.

Wu Qian Qian shuddered; she understood very well what Chu Yang meant by “biggest fish”… If his speculations were true, then the number of people involved in this case, from top to bottom, would be at least a few hundred!

It will be another bloodbath!

“Chu Yang, even if he is a spy, we cannot just kill… ah…” Wu Qian Qian said, “This person’s fame is too great. His prestige is high among the people of Iron Cloud; if you just kill him, I am afraid there would be civil unrest.”

In the time period that Wu Qian Qian had been assisting Chu Yang, she participated in analysis of officials and commoners of Iron Cloud Nation every day. Therefore, her experience in dealing with these matters had greatly improved compared to when she was still at Beyond the Heavens Sect.

“Really? Then what do you suggest we do?” Chu Yang smiled. Wu Qian Qian had a good learning curve; over this past time period, she became better with each day. She probably would not need too long to become a very capable assistant.

Chu Yang did not know why Tie Bu Tian sent Wu Qian Qian

there, but he had a reason for not rejecting her: Wu Qian Qian was a person of Beyond the Heavens Sect. If he had to leave this place, he hoped that Wu Qian Qian could manage Bu Tian Pavilion in his stead.

This was the greatest gift Chu Yang was preparing for his sect. After all, his target was not this Lower Three Heavens.

Since the beginning, Chu Yang had every intention to "unintentionally" guide and train Wu Qian Qian's mind, and make her a qualified leader.

"If he is a real spy... but these past few years, he clearly worked hard and did his duties. This is as clear as day... Moreover, all the things he has done was for Iron Cloud. So if we kill him without proper evidence, the people will not be appeased; there could be civil unrest." Wu Qian Qian pondered, "Even if we do find evidence of him being a traitor, it is still uncertain whether the people will believe it or not."

"I think we should discuss this with the prince first." Wu Qian Qian said, "We must find a proper solution. Plus, we must also carefully plan on how to proceed after this is dealt with. We also need to think about how to deal with the issues that will arise after this."

"Yes, we definitely cannot be reckless with this matter. Tie Bu Tian must be part of this process!" Chu Yang praised. After his praise, he thought for a little and continued, "I will let you take care of informing Tie Bu Tian! See how he wants to deal with this and act accordingly. I am going out for a little bit."

Then Chu Yang took the black cloak off his body, and placed his mask on the desk as well.

"You're going out again?" Wu Qian Qian was at a loss for words.

These days, Chu Yang only came here to work a little then he would immediately leave without a trace; even she did not know

where he went.

Chu Yang's whereabouts were indeed secretive. Wu Qian Qian could not imagine how he managed to finish such a huge workload at Bu Tian Pavilion. Based on this amount of work he should have spent a great amount of time.

And yet, it seemed as if Chu Yang was just relaxing and smelling the roses. Without any great difficulties, his work was getting done smoothly.

"Ah, it's getting too boring in here... I am going for a stroll." Chu Yang said carelessly as he pressed on the wall behind him. A secret door suddenly opened. Chu Yang's body flashed and disappeared behind it.

The door slowly closed, leaving no trace of its existence. If anyone were to look, they would certainly think that this was only a normal wall.

Wu Qian Qian helplessly sighed. She put on Chu Yang's cloak, wore his mask and sat in his position. These days, whenever Chu Yang was not there, Wu Qian Qian became his replacement.

Could it be that this air of mystery was a cover for his laziness? Wu Qian Qian shook her head and smiled. She quickly started writing on a piece of paper, and imitated Chu Yang's voice as she shouted, "Someone! Bring this to the prince immediately; I have something important to discuss with the prince..."

...

Of course Chu Yang acted mysteriously not to be lazy.

But it was partly true that he was lazy with Bu Tian Pavilion's business. His other reason was to maintain his air of mystery and secretly develop Heavenly Armament Pavilion. That place was being built ostentatiously; it could not be neglected...

Most importantly, Chu Yang also wanted to strengthen himself! After his enlightenment on the Gentle Force of water, Chu Yang

felt his martial power was gradually changing qualitatively. There were many aspects that he never thought of or even imagined. And now his eyes seemed to have gradually opened up to them.

The feeling of stepping into a brand new area of martial arts was Chu Yang's greatest motivation to work hard at cultivating!

These days, in Iron Cloud Citadel, there was not just the appearance of "King of Hell Chu," but rumor had it that there was the emergence of one "Dark Night Challenger," also not any less famous.

Recently, most of the famous masters in Iron Cloud Citadel were harassed by a crazy guy. The number of martial art schools and protection services in Iron Cloud Citadel was numerous. Its harsh northerly environment produced many sturdy people and a large number of masters in the field of martial arts. Although the number of top level martial experts were not many, Iron Cloud was number one in the Lower Three Heavens for the large quantity of martial artists.

This Dark Night Challenger was extremely weird. He seemed to have a different appearance each day. His disguise became more chaotic each time. Today, he was twenty years old; tomorrow, he would be thirty. The day before, he carried a weak young master look; then the day after he had a red face with a few chest hairs. In a few days, there would be a few moles that looked like rat poop. In short, every day was a different face.

And yet it seemed that his disguise was careless. This Dark Night Challenger tried hard to keep people from knowing who he was, but he was most unsuccessful...

The rumors were true; Chu Yang really did want to have a different appearance each day. The first time, he was really meticulous. Then the second time, he didn't pay too much attention. And all the times after that were really careless, as if he could not wait to go out and fight... Regardless, no one would

recognize that it was him. As the days went by, he became even more careless. There were some days when he would forget what disguise he used the day before...

No matter what appearance Chu Yang put on, everyone would call out in recognition: “Aahh, it’s him. It’s Dark Night Challenger; even if he turned into ashes, I would recognize him!”

This Dark Night Challenger’s martial power was not that high; he seemed to be only a Martial Warrior... but he seemed to improve with each day. Plus, he worked under strict principles.

Within a time frame of about twenty days, that guy had challenged more than thirty martial arts experts. If someone was keeping track of his challenges, then they would have seen that he did not challenge people randomly.

The first person he challenged was the absolute weakest amongst the famous martial artists in Iron Cloud Citadel. As time passed, he gradually moved up to more powerful martial artists. Everything was methodical, without any chaos. Each subsequent one was more powerful than the one before...

If the order of his challenges was used to rank the martial artists of Iron Cloud Citadel, there would be no errors.

This guy only wounded people; plus, these wounds were not serious. And he absolutely did not kill anyone... No one could deny his challenges. He did not curse at people. And he certainly did not use any vulgar means to instigate a fight. His abnormal method was already unbearable to everyone.

If someone turned him down, fine... This guy would immediately sit at your front door, and not allow anyone to pass. Going out to buy food? No! Going out to see friends? No! Going out for a stroll? Absolutely not.

All were prohibited from going out!

Anyone who wanted to send him away? Just fight first.

If someone else tried to send him away, he just ignored all their cursing... And in just a little time, people from all around gathered, with their gawking, pointing and noises. The house then ended up surrounded by a few hundred spectators. How could anyone bear that?

So, with the exception of the first ten days when people were still inexperienced, anyone challenged by the Dark Night Challenger would immediately jump out to fight with him and get it over with.

If they did not fight with him, they knew they would never be able to live in peace. Plus, this guy fought with principle. If he is not a match for me then he would run away. If he beat me then he would not challenge me again.

Later on, the martial artists of Iron Cloud Citadel openly competed to see who could get the most time with the Dark Night Challenger. If the Dark Night Challenger beat you, then he would immediately knock on someone else's door. And your rank dropped... This meant that you were no longer part of the circle of experts...

Chapter 105: Just do it

In short, the appearance of this Dark Night Challenger created a wave of excitement among the ranks of martial artists in Iron Cloud Citadel. In the beginning, some people were just fighting halfheartedly, but it led to Dark Night Challenger not bothering with them anymore. They then became the “weak” ones. Wherever they went, people pointed and said, “Look, it’s him… He normally bragged about how he’s strong as an ox… After one fight with Dark Night Challenger, he was ignored…”

Some people joked, “Why did the dragon not go to the shrimp’s house?”

“Because the shrimp was not worthy… Hahaha…“

“Ah, so that’s it… understood, understood… big brother is so smart. Your explanation is perfect. Here I thought he was really strong as an ox…!”

“Not really, not really… hahaha…”

And the end result… he completely lost face.

Since they had already seen examples, how could the rest of the martial artists not put in all of their efforts and fight? Each additional day was an increase in fame…

Chu Yang jumped a few rounds, and by the time he came back to the main street, he had become a youth with a pale face and tousled hair. On his left cheek was a mole, and on the right was a large scar… He looked very ugly.

And like that Chu Yang walked openly toward his target of the day. Suddenly, someone on the street, acted as if he had just discovered a new continent, “Wow! Look, the Dark Night Challenger…”

“Where… where…?”

“There… there…”

“Quickly, quickly. Let’s follow and see.”

“Does it look like he’s heading toward Meteor Martial Arts School again? Could it be that Meteor Martial Arts School persevered yesterday?”

“Uh, it seems so.”

“Hahaha… let’s place some bets. I have ten taels of silver on Meteor Martial Arts School not being able to persevere today… Come, come, anyone has the guts to bet… Hahaha…”

“I will bet on the Dark Night Challenger, twelve taels.”

“I will bet…”

A bunch of gamblers gathered together. Seven or eight mouths jubilantly yelled out their bets as they followed behind the Dark Night Challenger. The crowd headed in the direction of Meteor Martial Arts School…

With his eyes looking up at the sky, Chu Yang quickly strode forward… Internally, he thought it was funny. He did not expect his method of improving his martial skill was able to bring such enjoyment for Iron Cloud Citadel…

Since he was enlightened with Gentle Force of water, Chu Yang had started to think about how he could incorporate Gentle Force of water with his sword and palm technique.

His sword techniques included Gentle Wind Sword and Floating Cloud Sword; there were gentle types of sword techniques… But these were gentle techniques, not gentle forces. What Chu Yang was still trying to figure out was how to create a gentle force from a hard sword.

Gentle, but not weak. Soft, but lethal. This particular aspect, even after he traversed all the continents, he had not seen anyone use it yet.

Firm or flexible depended on your mind... these states cannot be changed within seconds. One simply could not be fortified like a mountain one moment and flexible like the wind the next. Instead, inner energy must be transformed before each sword strike. This was what it meant for firmness and flexibility to be dependent on the mind!

Chu Yang was absolutely sure that if he could achieve this, then he would be able to bring forth a new brand of martial arts to the continents of the Nine Heavens. Moreover, it would be powerful in not just killing enemies but in defending lives as well.

For methods like that to be incorporated into world dominating techniques such as Nine Tribulations Transcending the Nine Heavens Technique was inconceivably difficult.

He could only fight, fight... and never cease to fight! Only from fighting could he receive little trickles of martial arts enlightenment to achieve his goal. Just sitting in meditation... he would probably break his head in vain.

That was why Chu Yang transformed himself into one Dark Night Challenger to fight with these famed martial artists. Moreover, by challenging his targets like this, he could fight two or three people each day. Within this group there must be people who cultivated their techniques using an unyielding method, and also those who went with a gentle method.

After each fight, Chu Yang thought hard about each detail, and, from there, he tried to find clues to incorporating Gentle Force into his battles.

And during this time period, Nine Tribulations Sword's spirit remained quiet; it did not make itself heard even once.

This was proof that it intended to let Chu Yang search and discover for himself!

The first time Chu Yang learned something new after coming

back from a fight, the sword spirit said to him, “If you comprehend it, then it is yours. If I tell you, then it belongs to Nine Tribulations Sword.”

The two things were fundamentally different!

...

Looking at Meteor Martial Arts School in front of him, Chu Yang pulled up his sleeves, let out a spirited cry and charged right through the gates... Another fight had begun...

Behind him, a rowdy crowd stayed close yelling and calling as they also rushed in...

****

At the same time, Tie Bu Tian had his eyebrows pinched together as he was deep in thought. Since he started holding control of Iron Cloud until now, he had never faced a decision as difficult as this one.

Tang Xin Sheng!

Looking at the twelve reasons Chu Yang had listed on the paper, Tie Bu Tian sighed endlessly... In principle, this issue did not need further investigation. The dozen reasons gathered here was enough to prove one thing: Tang Xin Sheng was a spy!

Even for someone with such wisdom and temperament as Prince Tie Bu Tian, looking at these twelve reasons was enough to be certain of this conclusion, beyond a shadow of a doubt.

Tie Bu Tian was just shocked... yes, shocked! A spy who had been in Iron Cloud Nation who had been, for the last ten years, calling wind and rain; he remained standing like a powerful tower... Moreover, he seemed to have become a saint of Iron Cloud Nation!

This... this is a spy? Of all the officials of Iron Cloud Nation, is there anyone who is less likely to be a spy than this person? An upright official who loves the people like his own children. He was

honest and fair. Everyone has nothing but praise for him. The people fervently support him...

Tie Bu Tian smiled bitterly. A spy... like this!

This type of spy, once they start rebelling, their influence can cause great devastation! He could easily control public opinion and use the people's anger for his cause... These tactics could put all of Iron Cloud Nation in chaos!

As for dealing with this spy... it's clear that publicly arresting and putting him on trial is not an option. No one will ever believe that such an upstanding official was working as a spy for another nation. If this is not dealt with properly, it could lead to civil unrest.

Tie Bu Tian was silent for a while, then he asked, "What did the minister say?"

Wu Qian Qian, standing opposite of him, answered reservedly, "Minister Chu said to check with Your Highness first before deciding on a plan."

Tie Bu Tian's prestigious air was at its height; Wu Qian Qian felt lowly as she stood in front of him. This type of royal air put so much pressure on her that she had trouble breathing...

In this aspect, Wu Qian Qian truly admired Chu Yang. This junior martial brother was from the same sect as her, and practiced the same techniques as her. His martial power was even less than her, but when he stood in front of Tie Bu Tian, he was not the least bit nervous. Perhaps... he was even more relaxed than Tie Bu Tian!

What's even stranger was... sometimes when the two of them were together, Tie Bu Tian seemed to be more nervous than she was just now!

This was truly unbelievable!

"Me? No!" Tie Bu Tian smiled, "Checking with me first is the right thing to do, but he certainly would not do things according to

my thoughts.” It seemed that after he heard Wu Qian Qian relay Chu Yang’s words, Tie Bu Tian became more relaxed.

“This King of Hell Chu… he just disappeared, didn’t he?” Tie Bu Tian tilted his head and winked as he asked. This showed that the prince was in a good enough mood that he had time for a joke.

King of Hell Chu… the moment Tie Bu Tian thought about these words, he already wanted to laugh. It was unbelievable that Chu Yang managed to establish for himself such a scary reputation in a short time period. This was truly brilliant!

“Yes. His whereabouts during this time is an absolute mystery.” Wu Qian Qian answered anxiously; she was worried for Chu Yang.

“That’s good. That’s good.” Tie Bu Tian’s answer almost made Wu Qian Qian fall to the ground. A person who was not putting his full effort into his duties, who went missing every few days, and the prince evaluated it as good.

What kind of logic was this?

“Tell him to just do it according to his own judgement.” Tie Bu Tian smiled, “I will work with him; there will not be any problems.”

Chapter 106: Undecipherable

Wu Qian Qian agreed but her mind was full of doubt... Just do what? According to Chu Yang? What plans does he have?

Tie Bu Tian smiled and said mystically, “Remember that Minister Chu once said he will be gentle... Hahaha...” In his mind, he was thinking about what Chu Yang said before: “If I really can’t avoid it, I will use a more gentle method.” Tie Bu Tian could not help but laugh. He also was trying to guess what Chu Yang’s plans will be.

Wu Qian Qian became even more annoyed as she thought: How? Be gentle? Is he indirectly reminding me to be gentler with Chu Yang? Is this prince trying to set me up with Chu Yang? Or perhaps... Chu Yang has asked Tie Bu Tian to be a matchmaker? Why did he say “Minister Chu once said he will be gentle”? When she got this point, her face immediately turned red... This is... too embarrassing...

Seeing Wu Qian Qian’s face turned red, a flash of envy appeared in Tie Bu Tian’s eyes. But right after, he teased, “Miss Wu, your face is really red... What are you thinking about?”

“Ah... umm... well...” Wu Qian Qian was caught by surprise and was temporarily at a loss for words.

“Chu Yang... is indeed a rare good man.” Tie Bu Tian smiled, “If Miss Wu... then you should show him a lot of love.”

Wu Qian Qian became infinitely shy, and looked sheepishly at the ground.

In reality, she and Chu Yang never had any intentions toward each other, but somehow, there were lots of rumors about the two being in some sort of love affair!

Chu Yang absolutely did not pay attention to them. His heart was currently hardened like a stone, he couldn’t care less for these silly rumors. Whatever other people thought was their business; what

did it have to do with him?

However, Wu Qian Qian was no longer like she was before. During this time period, no matter where she went, she received all sorts of looks that seemed to imply these rumors. At first, she was embarrassed and angry even. Over time, she learned to tolerate them, and became used to them… then they became a little real to her. In short, this girl at her most beautiful age, was gradually experiencing a change of heart…

This sort of change… was especially potent for those of her age.

“Oh, the rare elixirs and precious minerals seized by Minister Chu… what is he doing with them?” Once he knew that Chu Yang had his own plans, Tie Bu Tian was much more relaxed; now he had time to turn his attention to other things.

Chu Yang had requested to keep these, and Tie Bu Tian readily complied. There were many of such things in the royal palace; it was not worth it to nitpick with Chu Yang on these measly things. In fact, there were things that the royal palace had that Chu Yang would not be able to find in those places. But anything that could be found in those places, the royal palace would surely have them. Therefore, Tie Bu Tian just turned a blind eye as Chu Yang pocketed these things…

However, Tie Bu Tian was very curious: Why did Chu Yang grab them? Until now, he still haven’t use them. Moreover, he never used them to help Bu Tian Pavilion… He is only one person, does he need so much elixirs? Ah, if it’s just elixirs, that’s understandable. As a precaution for injuries? This could be explained by a person’s fear of death… But why so much rare minerals?

“I don’t know this either. After each seizure, Chu Yang gave orders for all of them to be placed in an appointed storage room…” Half way through her answer, Wu Qian Qian suddenly stopped. She realized… that small storage room Chu Yang appointed shared

the same wall as his room at Bu Tian Pavilion. From what Wu Qian Qian remembered, that storage room was not all that big... With their constant seizures, that storage room should have been filled already... Yet how is it that we are still able to put things in there?

“Well, when I have time, I must take a look.” Tie Bu Tian smiled happily. His smile hid a mysterious pleasure.

“If Your Highness has no other orders, I will take my leave.” Wu Qian Qian said. She was not Tie Bu Tian’s subject; in essence, Beyond the Heavens Sect and Tie Bu Tian were working together, and she was just there to help... She did not need to show Tie Bu Tian such excessive decorum...

Of course, there was some calculations on Wu Yun Liang’s part. If Wu Qian Qian could become queen or even the king’s mistress in Iron Cloud, then... However, according to the current situation, Wu Yun Liang’s hope had no chance of coming to fruition.

“Oh, your father sent this.” Tie Bu Tian pulled out an envelope and gave it to Wu Qian Qian.

“Thank you, Your Highness.” Wu Qian Qian received the letter with some excitements.

Actually, Wu Yun Liang sent three envelopes, one for Bao Kuang Lei, one for Wu Qian Qian, and one directly to Tie Bu Tian. Of course, besides the two parties involved, no one knew the content of the letter Wu Yun Liang sent to Tie Bu Tian...

Watching Wu Qian Qian leave, Tie Bu Tian’s gaze gradually changed. Finally, he looked down and sighed. He suddenly thought about that “King of Hell Chu,” and could not help shake his head and laugh.

Minister Chu’s method was truly undecipherable by anyone. In such a short time, he had managed to build layers upon layers of strategies. Even something as easy to understand as his origin had been turned into total confusion.

Chu Yang came from Beyond the Heavens Sect, that was no secret. First, he was an heir of a powerful family who had fallen into hard times and had to wander around Jiang Hu. Second, he was a descendant of a fallen Iron Cloud general. Third, he was a chosen disciple of a reclusive martial expert, apparently with the powers of tigers and dragons. Fourth, he was a student of a great scholar; and even though he was weak, he was a heaven sent genius. Fifth, he was from one of the families in Middle Three Heavens, and had come down to train...

Furthermore, there seemed to be witnesses and evidence for every statement. If one were to investigate, these statements could be verified...

Tie Bu Tian truly could not understand why Chu Yang made such confusing rumors...

During this period, Tie Bu Tian knew that Chu Yang's mysterious disappearances were for strengthening Heavenly Armament Pavilion. Tie Bu Tian was looking forward to seeing the future of Heavenly Armament Pavilion as well. Even though he knew that it was Chu Yang's personal force, he believed that when the time comes, Heavenly Armament Pavilion could be counted on to lend a hand.

Tie Bu Tian wanted to use Chu Yang to lead Bu Tian Pavilion and fight for Iron Cloud, to defeat Diwu Qing Rou. And, naturally, Chu Yang wanted to use this fight for the world as an opportunity to strengthen his own power!

This relationship was beneficial to both sides!

As for after peace was achieved... Hmm... In truth... Tie Bu Tian was not certain of this distant future. So he did not bother to think about it...

*****

At this moment, in the prime minister's mansion in Great Zhao

Nation...

Diwu Qing Rou sat in his chair as he looked at the pile of news on his desk, his countenance was calm... However, his finger tapped rhythmically on his chair in a very slow motion. There seemed to be a long interval between each tap.

In front of him, the people sitting there did not dare to open their mouths and break the silence. Because this action signified that Diwu Qing was thinking about something.

“King of Hell Chu, hahaha...” Diwu Qing Rou smiled and said slowly, “This King of Hell Chu, do we dare to overlook him?”

These words seemed be a question, but also seemed to be rhetorical. Everyone was not able to grasp Diwu Qing Rou’s meaning just now. They looked at each other, and all of them cautiously chose to remain silent.

“This King of Hell Chu was just instated and he already managed to dig out so many of our people... Can any of guess what methods he used?” Diwu Qing Rou slowly.

“Methods?” Everyone was caught by surprise. All of the spies’ backgrounds were painstakingly planned by the Golden Horse Riders Department. Without question, every aspect did not have the tiniest of flaws. Asking them to think of this now was impossible in a short time period.

“The problem is not on our part, but that King of Hell Chu.” Diwu Qing Rou said in a low voice, “His methods for finding spies are totally opposite of normal reasoning. For most people, they will first think about whether the person is a spy before finding the flaws... that would be much easier.”

“For King of Hell Chu, he looked at ordinary or good points of the officials instead. In other words, his investigations focus on upstanding officials, those who kept themselves clean and worked hard... He especially looked at people like these and searched for

abnormalities.” Diwu Qing Rou sighed, “This King of Hell Chu is not simple at all!”

Chapter 107: Make the move! Slaughter the Sun

“Your Excellency, I am still not sure what you mean by that!” One of the six people sitting on the right spoke up; the other five nodded in agreement with him.

“This type of official should get promoted often! This King of Hell Chu seized this idea to start his investigation. It is not just him, we all know this. Therefore we arranged for our inside men to be hardworking, loyal, and dedicated; moreover, they were not allowed to be greedy. All these things gave them the momentum needed to climb to high positions. It is there that we can reap the most benefits!”

The person explaining was not Diwu Qing Rou, but a person sitting next to him, “The most important thing for an inside man is to gain the trust of the enemies and gradually rise in position. When the time comes, they could then have the greatest influence! If we can think of this, then King of Hell Chu can also think likewise!”

“Because of this, we suffered a critical loss of manpower in Iron Cloud!” He continued gravely.

The person just talking had a lanky build. If he lay down on the ground and let someone sit on him, the other person would probably think that he was sitting on a bamboo. (TLN: what a weird description)

“If our people did not act that way, how could they have high positions in Iron Cloud?” A man with rough and crude features said hastily, “Isn’t this too contradictory…”

“Not necessarily!” One middle-aged scholarly official with a goatee smiled, “He could investigate, but in the end he might not be able to find anything. This is because there are some people that

even he would not dare to touch!”

“You can’t assume that he would not dare to touch them!” The speaker was none other than Diwu Qing Rou, a man famed as being dignified in his entire lifetime. At this moment a look of apprehension appeared on his face. He pondered and continued, “With one sweep, this King of Hell Chu made nine of our inside men at Bu Tian Pavilion lose their lives! As for the officials in Iron Cloud, he already took six shots. His aim was precise and merciless; he never left one stone unturned. This person… is Iron Cloud’s greatest threat to us.”

“Plus, while removing spies from Bu Tian Pavilion, this King of Hell Chu stated…” Diwu Qing Rou’s face showed a flash of admiration, “that he did not need evidence, he only needed to suspect someone to kill them!!!”

“This man is truly decisive and cruel. Plus his methods are highly irregular!” Diwu Qing Rou said definitively, “This person is potentially not any less dangerous than Tie Bu Tian!”

He turned, and with his back facing everyone, he in a low voice said, “Right after receiving this news, I have already had people prepare an Invisible Falcon to send a message to number one. If anything irregular is discovered, immediately withdraw!”

“What???”

Everyone was very surprised. Were things really that serious? While everyone was still analyzing the situation, Diwu Qing Rou had already responded with such extreme measures.

“In addition, Golden Horse Riders Department already mobilized a leader and a number of martial experts to Iron Cloud! If number one is safe, then they will kill Chu Yang and return. If they run into a dangerous situation, then they will kill Chu Yang and return with number one! Give order for Black Horse Riders and Iron Horse Riders (TLN: killers and intelligence) in Iron Cloud to fully cooperate with each other!!!”

“This plan’s name is Slaughter the Sun!” (TLN: It’s Tu Yang, a play on Chu Yang’s name. Tu means slaughter and yang means sun) Diwu Qing Rou issued a series of decisive orders, a bloodthirsty aura flashed in his eyes.

Tie Bu Tian! You think a King of Hell Chu can help you sprout wings and fly? Watch as I chop him down!!!

“Minister! This is ten years in the making; it cost us a lot of resources… Do we just give it all up?” The middle age official with the goatee questioned.

“Let’s hope I am overreacting!” Diwu Qing Rou’s countenance became sullen, “But this is not the time for you people to doubt! Carry out my orders immediately! Also, have the five northern corps move forward a hundred miles!!!”

“A hundred miles?” Everyone was dumbfounded. Did the prime minister want to start a war? A hundred miles put them in Iron Cloud territory! Even though there were no towns or villages there, could Iron Cloud military just sit idly by?

“Do as I say!!!” Diwu Qing Rou’s back seemed to hunch a little. His eyes seemed to feel heavy. He slowly close his eyes as he silently said to himself: Hopefully, it’s not too late!

Suddenly, his eyes opened as he said quickly, “No matter what, no one is allowed to touch Tie Bu Tian!”

Everyone quickly filed out. Diwu Qing Rou turned; his eyes brightened with a searching gaze. With a look of expectation, he muttered to himself, “If you are a true rival, let’s see how you handle this move of mine.”

Then, Diwu Qing Rou slightly shook his head and smiled as he looked at the blue sky in the distance through his window. In that direction… was Iron Cloud!

Diwu Qing Rou stood dreamily for a while, then he said, “Get me all the information on Beyond the Heavens Sect for this recent

period!”

****

From the prime minister’s mansion, Diwu Qing Rou tossed his arm up, and a white bird flew to the sky. After making a few rounds and determining its orientation, the bird went into the white clouds and disappeared.

Invisible Falcon! It was a strange animal of the Nine Heavens! It was capable of changing color and hiding in the sky, a most advanced intelligent creature used for courier. Its speed was three times faster than that of an eagle. Moreover, it could fly for one day and night without food or drink.

With its speed, the Invisible Falcon could go from Great Zhao’s capital to Iron Cloud Citadel in half a day.

After an hour, at the northern gate of Great Zhao’s capital, three black riders rushed out at top speed. As the three riders whipped their horses, the sound of thundering hooves was heard all around. Within a blink of an eye, only a trail of dust could be seen at the city’s gate.

Thousand Mile horses! There were only a few in the entire continent, and yet they did not mind wasting the horses’ energy on this short trip.

Their destination was Iron Cloud Citadel!

*****

At this moment, Chu Yang, the Dark Night Challenger, had just finished another fight and was walking out from Meteor Martial Arts School. He conveniently found a place to sit down and changed his appearance. After all signs of the Dark Night Challenger were gone, he stepped out, feeling a bit of regret.

If the “Meteor Force” of Meteor Martial Arts School’s owner was a little higher, then under his attack, Chu Yang could have started to combine Gentle Force of water with Nine Tribulations

Transcending the Nine Heavens Technique.

Chu Yang was currently at a bottleneck. He could feel that he was close to a breakthrough, but was kept out of reach by a very thin line.

It was as thin as a piece of paper, but it kept him from breaking through. Such a feeling was very irritating!

The path to understanding required a suitable opponent, not too high, not too low. Otherwise, no success could be found!

There was another type of understanding that could be achieved under the oppression of a killing aura. But when two people were simply competing, no such aura can be found. Killing aura came from the heart; if there was no killing intention in the heart, no killing aura could be created.

This was something that could not be helped. Luckily, while Chu Yang's martial power was not too high, he still managed to find a suitable opponent. If he was at a higher state and ran into a bottleneck like this, finding the right opponent would have been more difficult than plucking a star from the sky!!!

To be at the peak was to be lonely! It was not until now that Chu Yang understood this!

Finding an opponent would be hard!

Without pressure there was no breakthrough, but if there was pressure, you would have to be sure that your life could be maintained under that pressure... No wonder so many top masters had to work hard to find an opponent.

If it was a simple matter of life and death fighting, it would be much easier. However, being enlightened while fighting an enemy was as rare as dreaming while remaining wide awake!

Once standing on the pinnacle of martial arts, there would not even be an enemy let alone an opponent.

Because he was deep in thoughts, Chu Yang's pace slowed down. It was still early, maybe he should go to Emerald Flow Lake. He thought and turned; he headed toward the southern gate of Emerald Flow Lake.

Thinking about Emerald Flow Lake, Chu Yang could not avoid thinking about Gu Du Xing. It has been more than twenty days, shouldn't he already be back?

When he comes back and sees that I went from fifth grade Martial Warrior to ninth grade Martial Warrior in a little more than twenty days, how would he react?

Chapter 108: Qing Wu

As Chu Yang thought about this, he could not help but smile.

To go up by three grades like that was not simple... First, he had to seize and gather all the herbal elixirs. After that, Nine Tribulations Sword purified them to be more potent for use... In addition, over more than twenty days, he fought forty to fifty matches, big and small. He fought until his whole body ached and was in pain. The price was not small at all.

A training method like that was downright masochistic. There was no avoidance, a hit for a hit. Plus, he had to avoid using fatal moves, and more importantly avoid using Nine Tribulations Sword... If the sword was used, the person will die and there was simply no chance of any sort of understanding or enlightenment.

On the other hand, if his martial power was not as high as the other person... Would this not be just asking for a beating?

Chu Yang was lost in his thoughts when there was an earth-shattering sound of screaming from the direction of the citadel's gate, "Where is Du Shi Qing? Du Shi Qing, you come out here right now!" The sound of the voice carried endless madness and grief.

The person that called out must have incredible martial power!

Chu Yang was startled, he turned toward the direction of the citadel gate and asked himself, "Who is it? This person's martial power is very high... What is he looking for Du Shi Qing for...?"

The sound was from some distance, but for some unknown reason Chu Yang suddenly felt like his insides were burning. It was as if something terrible was happening.

Chu Yang immediately shot toward the southern gate.

He did not understand why he was reacting this way; he only knew that his heart felt really anxious! Why?

The voice did not cease calling Du Shi Qing's name. The urgency and panic in it made it clear to everyone who heard that the person yelling was in a state of frenzy!

He came closer and closer!

Chu Yang's body looked as if it was ripping through the wind as it shot forward.

At the citadel's gate, a man in black was carrying another person on his back was rushing past the soldiers like a whirlwind. Before they had a chance to react, their eyes simply widened as this black whirlwind swept past them on the main road into the citadel. One soldier with quick reflex was about to block him when he was hit in midair. His arms and legs went flailing, and blood was splattered everywhere!

What move that person made... no one could see clearly!

"Stop!" The martial masters guarding the gate jumped up to block him. A white figure glided down front of the man in black. The white and black figures fought, and within a blink of an eye... "Bam bam." The white figure let out an awful noise as he fell to the ground. Blood spurted from his mouth. As he was falling down there was even the cracking sounds of the bones in his body breaking!

Because of this little moment, seven to eight other figures had managed to get in position and block the man in black.

With his momentum gone, the wild eyed man in black angrily yelled, "Get out of my way! Get Du Shi Qing now!"

"Such defiance!" Du Shi Qing was Tie Bu Tian's guest at the royal palace; everyone knew this... Currently, Du Shi Qing was in the royal palace treating the emperor of Iron Cloud Nation; how could anyone bother him?

"Get out of my way!" There was a trickle of blood on the edge of the man's mouth. He had apparently suffered from internal

injuries, but he still exuded an overpowering aura. Seeing the seven to eight people blocking him and the soldiers surrounding him, he became furious; he activated his energy and made his move in a flash.

With one shot, an unstoppable, raging force burst!

The seven people facing him exclaimed in unison, “Revered Master?”... And without delay they responded with full force.

The man’s mouth grimaced and he roared, “If you don’t make way, you will all die!” A fierce force was released from his palm.

Even in this dangerous situation, the man still had one of his arms wrapped around the person on his back. As for the person lying on his back, there was no movement the whole time. The whole body was completely covered by a large cloak, making it impossible to see what that figure looked like. But based on the shape, that person seemed to be really frail, maybe a child...

“Pow!” One sound rang out as the force of seven people came into contact with the man’s palm’s force... It was followed by all seven people flying in four directions with pale faces.

Their opponent clearly did not use his full strength... The man in black’s strength was enough to leave others stunned.

“What is your friend’s illness that you must find Senior Du?” An official below called out loudly, “Please understand that this is Iron Cloud Citadel, and Senior Du is an honored guest... Your being impatient and causing trouble will only delay your friend’s treatment. I hope you will carefully rethink your actions!”

After hearing so, the man in black trembled. He swooped down from the air and grabbed the official, “You know Du Shi Qing? Where is he? Bring me to him quickly!”

“This situation... this lowly official does not have the authority!” Even though he was held under a tight grip, that official never showed any signs of fear and said boldly, “No matter how high

your martial power is, seeing Du Shi Qing is not something you could do based on martial power."

"You are courageous!" The man in black slowly released him. His bloodshot eyes suddenly brightened like a hungry wolf in front of its prey. But when he spoke again, his voice was in part calmer, "Then what is the quickest way to see Du Shi Qing?"

That official was just using his quick wit to talk the man down. Du Shi Qing was in the royal palace; how could a small time official like him know how to solve this problem? There was immediately a troubled look on his face.

The man grinded his teeth and yelled angrily, "You lied to me!" He raised his arm, wanting to take this official's life with one palm! Seeing the situation, soldiers from four sides gathered around him and shouted. Their unsheathed swords shined over the entire southern gate!

Without a care, the man shouted, "If you delay me, I will not mind killing the entire Iron Cloud Citadel! Do you think I care about killing a few more people?" He raised up his arm preparing to kill; he did not even blink.

"Stop!" A black shadow flew forward. Before he even reached the man, he shouted in midair, "If you want to see Du Shi Qing, you just have to talk to me!"

Upon hearing these words, the man pulled back his arm. A second ago, his energy was bursting out, seemingly unstoppable. And yet, now, it had completely disappeared like a passing breeze.

The person quickly flying forward was Chu Yang. When he saw the control this person had with his power, he was shocked, "A King level master!"

The man looked up at Chu Yang's mask, "Take off your mask! I don't like those who hide like that. I also can't trust them!"

"Do you want to see Du Shi Qing or do you want me to take off

my mask?" Chu Yang grunted coldly, "If I could take it off, why would I bother wearing it in the first place?"

The man snorted and stared at Chu Yang sharply with eyes like a hawk's, "Do you know where Du Shi Qing is?"

"Of course I do! But if it's not important, then no one is allowed to bother Senior Du." Chu Yang said, "I also need to know for sure whether that person is injured or is just sick. Does that person need to be treated by Du Shi Qing himself?"

The man in black stared at Chu Yang fiercely. His gaze looked as if he wanted to swallow Chu Yang.

"If it is a small injury or some ordinary illness then it could be cured by many medical centers in the city!" Chu Yang said as he remained indifferent to the man's gaze. Strangely, he became more and more anxious. He felt as if there existed some relationship between him and this man. If not, then how could his fortified emotions be so chaotic at this moment?

"Everyone out of the way; there's no problem." Chu Yang looked in all four directions as his right hand pulled out a shiny token. On it were two clearly engraved words: "Bu Tian."

"Bu Tian Pavilion's man!" All the officials and soldiers suddenly felt a chill, "Move away, move away. Let's go." The soldiers surrounding the man immediately dispersed.

Everyone rubbed their foreheads, still feeling afraid. At first, they were annoyed with that masked guy and wanted to tell him to take it off. But now, they were very glad that they did not.

So it was King of Hell Chu. It's so fortunate that we did not mess with him!

The gaze of the man in black suddenly became calmer. He gently moved the person from his back to in front of him; each movement was done with great care as if not wanting to disturb that sick person!

Then he gently lifted the cloak and said, “It is an injury and an illness! If it could easily be cured then I would not have to run for thousands of miles to Iron Cloud Citadel! I am afraid not even Du Shi Qing can…”

He sighed softly.

But at this time, Chu Yang could no longer hear what he was saying.

When that cloak was lifted, Chu Yang’s blood boiled. His eyes became blurred… He almost lost consciousness.

No wonder his state of mind became so abnormal… It turned out…

Chu Yang’s heart felt bitterness and pain. His eyes were blurred by the streams of tears. When he saw this injured person, his body was shaken violently. It was as if it took all of his body as well as his spirit to form the words… With a trembling voice, he called out, “Qing… Wu…”

Chapter 109: She is my life!

In the blink of an eye, the cloak lifted to reveal a tiny face. Like a flash of lightning, it went right into Chu Yang's heart! At this moment, heaven and earth was spinning in front of him!

It was as if time stood still! Everything around him, even heaven and earth, completely disappeared!

Qing Wu... Qing Wu...! You have finally appeared! You have finally appeared...!

My entire life, I will dance for you;

You will be the only one I dance for.

For a thousand times, my heart will never change.

I will not be bitter even if I have to die a thousand deaths!

(TLN: Some version/part of Mo Qing Wu's poem.)

Qing Wu, who do I exist for?

For you! It's for you...!

Curved eyebrows and a tiny white face that had now turned pale. A pair of eyes that was supposed to be lively had completely shut. Her face was filled with suffering; her dry lips were tightly closed. There was a wound on her chest; it stained her white outfit black!

"Hei Mo!!!" (TLN: Dark Ghost)

Chu Yang's pupils constricted as he roared in anger! This injury was unique to the Hei Mo family; there was no mistaking it.

At this moment, Chu Yang finally understood some of the questions he had in his past life.

On Mo Qing Wu's chest, there was a wound. And that wound was the biggest hindrance on her path to advancement in martial arts. Because of this hindrance, her highest achievement was only Martial Great Master!

She was clearly more talented than other people, but because of this she could not advance after achieving Martial Great Master level! After Martial Great Master was Revered Martial Artist; and to cultivate at the level of Revered Martial Artist she needed to train her five internal organs.

With such an injury, this could never be successful.

Mo Qing Wu had said that she was injured as a child. Because she did not receive timely treatment the wound became worse. By the time she reached home, it had become an incurable internal injury.

When Mo Qing Wu talked about that, her face showed a trace of sorrow and scorn. She also said that her beloved uncle lost his life needlessly because of her...

It was also because of this injury that Mo Qing Wu was unable to break out of an ambush and ended up perishing in the end!

“Who are you? How do you know my little miss?” The man in black eyed Chu Yang suspiciously. This person’s face is completely covered and looked very mysterious. But when he saw little miss, his eyes reacted fiercely, filled with panic!

Then when he saw little miss’s wound, there was an anger in his eyes that seemed to want to burn everything. His demeanor shows a pain as if his heart is being crushed.

This is the greatest pain of the heart!

Chu Yang’s behavior put the man in black completely at ease. His eyes seemed to say that he would rather be injured a thousand times than let his little miss be hurt in any way.

With his mind a little relaxed, the man seemed to become shaky and almost fell down. He put in a great effort to keep his balance as he reached both of his hands toward Chu Yang, “I will leave little miss in your hands...! Please save her...!!!”

Chu Yang quickly reached out to receive Mo Qing Wu. The man in black seemed to have been able to lift a heavy boulder from his

heart; he almost collapsed to the ground. His face was filled with exhaustion; even though he wanted to walk, he could not move.

“Are you alright?”

Chu Yang’s heart felt as if it was burning. He only wanted to hold Mo Qing Wu and run to find Du Shi Qing right away. But seeing the condition of the man in black, he could not bring himself to leave.

“When little miss got hurt… I used my own energy to prolong her life on the way here…!!!” The man in black smiled weakly.

Chu Yang immediately understood. So he was also injured, but on the way here, he used his own energy to prolong Mo Qing Wu’s life. This was on top of him going at top speed to Iron Cloud Citadel to find Du Shi Qing. If he did not have such determination, his body probably would have given out on the road.

With one arm holding Mo Qing Wu, Chu Yang grabbed the man in black with his other hand and yelled, “People! Prepare a carriage for me quickly!!!”

“You go ahead…! Little miss cannot hang on much longer…!! I will be okay…!!!” The man in black weakly shook his head. With all his efforts, he freed himself from Chu Yang’s grasp and pushed him away, “Go quickly!!!”

Chu Yang’s heart burned; clearly the man in black loved Mo Qing Wu even more than he loved himself.

Mo Qing Wu’s current condition was dire; he could not delay any longer. The only thing Chu Yang could do was give that man some of his leftover energy. After completing one cycle, he said to the soldiers, “Bring him to Bu Tian Pavilion and find Wu Qian Qian for me!”

After that, he held Mo Qing Wu and ran as if he was flying.

The officials and soldiers became even more startled. Wu Qian Qian? Is that not the Soul Demoness next to King of Hell Chu?

The man in black suddenly lost his color as he watched Chu Yang's figure gradually disappear in the distance. He was a lamp without any oil. He was no longer capable of healing his own injury since his dantian was completely empty...

Even if I try to recover, I probably will lose one level. If I do nothing, this internal injury could never be healed in the future. However, this youth sent a wave of pure energy through me, and even managed to quickly direct it around my body for one cycle; in this process he had gathered any leftover energy!

This created an energy path, and, essentially, eliminated future problems. All I have to do now is follow that path and heal my own injury... This is tantamount to him saving my life!

Chu Yang moved like a whirlwind as he headed toward the prince's manor. He pulled down his mask and said, "Where is the prince? I am from Bu Tian Pavilion and I need to see the prince with an important matter."

After hearing that he was a man of Bu Tian Pavilion, the guards were startled. Was this a man of King of Hell Chu? They definitely could not delay him or say anything erroneous. Being watched by King of Hell Chu, even their ancestors would turn over in their graves...

They dared not shoulder such a burden and quickly sent him in.

"I need Du Shi Qing to help me heal an injury!" Chu Yang quickly said the moment he saw Tie Bu Tian.

"This little girl?" Tie Bu Tian asked in surprise as he looked at Chu Yang holding Mo Qing Wu in his arms.

"Yes!" Chu Yang forcibly nodded, "She is my life! Please hurry!"

Tie Bu Tian was immediately startled! Other people might not know who Chu Yang was, but how could he not know? King of Hell Chu, who could easily wipe out the entire family of a royal court's official, was in such a rush that he did not greet Tie Bu Tian

ceremoniously. He did not even bother with simple courtesies and simply said straight out: She is my life!

So he could guess how important this girl was.

“I will take you to the royal palace!” Tie Bu Tian quickly decided and stood up immediately; with long strides, he walked out. He gave orders to get the horses ready and send them at full speed to the palace. He sent for Du Shi Qing, and made sure that Du Shi Qing, the saintly physician, could immediately treat “Chu Yang’s life”...

*****

In the royal palace. In a quiet room.

Du Shi Qing slowly pulled back his fingers from Mo Qing Wu’s wrist. He took a deep breath and shook his head.

“What’s wrong?” Chu Yang asked anxiously.

“This injury, I cannot cure.” Du Shi Qing sighed as he looked at Chu Yang sympathetically, “Who is this little miss to you?”

He had a very good impression of Chu Yang. Furthermore, he had given Chu Yang his life’s work; he had already seen Chu Yang as the heir of his work. If Chu Yang had a problem, how could he not be concerned?

“She is the most important person!” Chu Yang’s heart sank. If Du Shi Qing said he could not treat it, then how serious was Mo Qing Wu’s injury?

Why did the reputed Hei Mo of Middle Three Heavens do such a thing to a young girl?

“The injury could be treated easily, but the poison is difficult to treat.” Du Shi Qing frowned, “If someone did not use his energy to prolong her life, this little miss would probably have lost her life already. But even if her life was held by energy, it has been too long, more than a day. The poison has seeped into her five internal

organs…”

Du Shi Qing sighed, “If it was only injury and poison, in this old man’s hand, it is not a problem. But this little miss was born with a Three Yin Meridian, and that one sword strike damaged its critical point. It won’t be difficult to save her life, but her Three Yin Meridian is damaged. We can never get rid of the poison that went into the Three Yin Meridian. It will stay there for her whole life and can never be healed!”

Chu Yang was shocked.

That was really the case. Du Shi Qing had said that Mo Qing Wu could survive but the poison would stay with her whole life and she could never be healed. Mo Qing Wu really did suffer from the same situation in the previous lifetime!

Three Yin Meridian was not an illness but a heavenly gift! With a Three Yin Meridian, all the meridians would have much better flow compared to normal people. No matter what technique you were cultivating, it made that technique much more effective. However, if a Three Yin Meridian is damaged, there would be no hope of recovery!

And Mo Qing Wu got injured at the critical point of her Three Yin Meridian yet again!

This was a heavenly gift, but Mo Qing Wu could never truly recover because of this gift!

Du Shi Qing would never hide anything from Chu Yang; he told him everything he knew. Since he already said so, Chu Yang already knew that forcing him to do anything else would be useless.

“Senior Du, please don’t keep anything from me. Please tell me everything you know. Currently, saving her life is the most important thing.” Chu Yang said.

“Good.” Du Shi Qing checked Mo Qing Wu’s pulse once again.

After thinking for a moment, he wrote down a prescription, and chuckled, “It’s a good thing we are currently in the royal palace. Otherwise, even if you knew how to treat this, there would be a lack of many precious herbs out there. Even though she is unlucky, she is fortunate enough that she was able to get to the royal palace and find me. Let’s just see it as finding fortune in misfortune!”

Chu Yang sighed.

*****

Not long after, a medicine boy brought in a bowl of precious herbal medicine extract for Mo Qing Wu to drink all at once. He discovered that this little miss had her jaw clenched tight and he could not open her mouth.

“Even with a poisoned wound, this little miss is quite resilient. She clearly clenched her teeth and did not complain about pain; but her strong will power had made her clench even in her unconscious state. If the medicine does not get swallowed down, then...” Du Shi Qing’s eyes suddenly widened. His mouth opened wide as he shivered.

Because...

Chu Yang had taken the bowl of medicine and took a big gulp in his mouth. Then he bent down and covered his lips on this little miss’s lips and gradually transferred the medicine...

Chu Yang’s face was completely calm.

Other people might not know, but how could Du Shi Qing not? In this medicine was lotus root. It was the most bitter thing in the world, and very effective for internal injuries. A normal person would not be able to drink this while conscious.

There was a Revered Martial Artist who got injured and needed this medicine. Revered level masters were supposed to have great control, but he ended up spitting out the medicine. In the end, Du Shi Qing had to give him medicine to make him unconscious first

before giving him the bitter elixir.

To play it safe, a conscious person would be knocked unconscious first before he was given this medicine; it was because Du Shi Qing saw that this little miss was unconscious that he added this most effective ingredient into her medication...

But, currently, Chu Yang had the medicine in his mouth. Even though his color was very pale, he did not seem to notice any hardship. He did not seem to notice that the medicine was just boiled and was very hot... Little by little, he transferred the medication...

Chapter 110: Bitter? Not bitter

Seeing Chu Yang's serious expresion, Tie Bu Tian's heart palpitated. He remembered Chu Yang once said: She is my life! Was it possible that the one lying there was his life? This little miss was clearly more important to him than his own life!

Who was this little miss? His little sister?

Tie Bu Tian would never have thought that Chu Yang would develop feelings for a little girl. She seemed to be only ten years old, how could that be?

Watching Chu Yang take one big mouthful of medicine, and then kept it in his mouth for a while until it cooled. Then he carefully gave the medicine to her, every moment was filled with love. Tie Bu Tian did not understand why his heart was beating erratically!

He was no longer able to watch the two, and turned his head in a different direction.

With last of the medicine gone, Chu Yang immediately stood up and turned to ask the saintly physician, "Senior Du, how many more times does she need to take this medicine?"

"One time today is enough. After the medicine gets into her body, you should help clear her meridians so that the medicine can be distributed faster. Then she could wake up by tonight." Du Shi Qing looked up at the afternoon sky and calculated the time.

"At that time, I will prepare some medications to help her recover quickly. I think after seven to eight days, her life will no longer be in danger and she will be back to normal again. Her injuries will all be healed, but, regretfully, the injury to her Three Yin Meridian... my hands are tied."

Du Shi Qing looked at Chu Yang and continued, "Currently, there is no physician or medicine in this world that can treat this internal injury. You should not waste your efforts..."

Of course, Du Shi Qing had seen clearly through Chu Yang's thoughts. If he did not emphasize this, Chu Yang might do something rash. He knew that Chu Yang would go to end of the earth for this little miss. Others might not, but Chu Yang definitely would!

Anyone could have seen Chu Yang's love for this little miss was to the point of desperation.

Du Shi Qing might not have been good at anything else, but his expertise in medicine was famous even at Upper Three Heavens! If he said that then Mo Qing Wu's internal injury really had no possible treatment.

Chu Yang understood this well, and he also understood Du Shi Qing's words: You have been through a lot of hardship to have what you have today; you should not ruin your life to treat this illness!

"All the legendary rarities... also cannot do anything?" Chu Yang asked sadly; there was still a tiny ray of hope inside him.

"Perhaps you don't know what this poison is, but I am absolutely certain that it is the legendary Poison of Hei Mo. If this poison did not reach the Three Yin Meridian, then my medicinal skill would be able to heal it without a problem. But once it seeped into the Three Yin Meridian, even gods would not be able to do anything!"

Du Shi Qing said solemnly without any reservations, "Even if you could gather all nine great legendary herbs from under the heavens right now, you still cannot completely cure it!" Du Shi Qing paused a little to look at Chu Yang and continued speaking gently, "Chu Yang, what I could do is help her regain consciousness and stop the injury from affecting her mortality. Then she could still marry and have a family without any health issues. With any luck, she will live to be a hundred years old! The only problem is that she could not advance in martial arts!"

"As a female, this should be normal for her, just like other

females.” Du Shi Qing said earnestly. (TLN: ...)

Chu Yang sighed and dropped his head, “Gathering all nine great legendary herbs would still not completely cure it...” These words were the greatest blow for Chu Yang; they destroyed any remaining hope he had.

This might have meant nothing if it happened to other women, but it was absolutely unacceptable for Mo Qing Wu! If it was not for this damning condition, Mo Qing Wu would not have been ambushed and killed in the previous life.

Mo Qing Wu never talked about her family with him, but Chu Yang was absolutely sure that she came from a powerful family. How could anyone from a humble background have cultivated such grace and elegance as hers?

In the previous life, Mo Qing Wu would rather wander all over Jiang Hu than to go home. Why was this the case? This must be related to her injury. Or Mo Qing Wu just did not want to go home because her family did not treat her well. Or perhaps she was disowned by her family for some other reason.

If a daughter had Three Yin Meridian, she would be treated like a precious treasure. Why would they disown her? Unless it was because her Three Yin Meridian was injured!

In other words, everything originated from today!

This injury led to Mo Qing Wu’s tragedy; if she did not suffer this injury, she would not have left her family and would not have met Chu Yang. And she would not be ambushed and killed!

So Chu Yang could not accept this! He could not have Mo Qing Wu suffer from this injury for the rest of her life. Even if he could stay by her side and protect her, he could not be there every second. No! Mo Qing Wu must have the ability to protect herself! Then Chu Yang could be at ease.

“Chu Yang, what is this little miss to you?” Tie Bu Tian had

finally opened his mouth and asked about this. Tie Bu Tian was a confident person so it was rare to see him curious like this.

But Tie Bu Tian's question had awaken Chu Yang from his deep thoughts.

"She is my..." The moment Chu Yang opened his mouth, his face suddenly grimaced, "Pew... pew... Senior Du, what's in this medicine that made it so bitter? I... I... Blah..." Chu Yang felt as if his mouth was full of herbal medicine.

This bitterness was extremely horrible!

Chu Yang's face grimaced as his eyes rolled.

"Well, you didn't feel it was bitter earlier?" Tie Bu Tian and Du Shi Qing asked in surprise.

Chu Yang hesitated. Early, all of his thoughts were concentrated on Mo Qing Wu. When he saw that she was able to take in the medicine, he continued to give her medicine without even noticing if it was bitter or sweet...

Now that they were taking about it, he tasted the total bitterness of the medicine. But at the same time, he remember Mo Qing Wu's poem: A lifetime does not make a gentle dance, a dance is a lifetime of bitterness; my entire life, I will dance for you; even in bitterness, I will dance an entire lifetime...

Bitter? Chu Yang could not help but grin. How is this bitter? Is this bitterness really bitter compared to the bitterness that Mo Qing Wu had to endure in the previous lifetime? It probably can't even compare.

"You... You're really..." Du Shi Qing admired the young man in front of him more and more. Chu Yang was truly a caring person. This made him feel that he was not wrong in his judgement of Chu Yang...

To save a life, he did not even pay attention to his own self; this was truly a selfless sacrifice...

At the same time, Tie Bu Tian had a different line thought. Chu Yang's greatest weakness was this little miss! Once the enemies learns of his weakness, it would be disastrous. This information must be kept secret!

But what is this little miss's background?

"Senior Du, about your treatment for this little miss today, I hope you would not let any little piece of information slip out." Tie Bu Tian smiled as he politely reminded Du Shi Qing.

Du Shi Qing initially hesitated and then immediately understood the prince's meaning. He quickly replied, "Your Highness needs not worry; not one other person will know about this."

After a short amount of time, Mo Qing Wu's face became rosier. Her breathing gradually normalized; she looked as if she was sleeping soundly. Seeing this, Chu Yang became more at ease, and the bitterness in his mouth also greatly lessened...

On the other hand, his curiosity heightened. Since he was already here, he started to look at this legendary royal palace.

"Is this really the royal palace? It's definitely opulent and luxurious..." Chu Yang looked as he assessed with great interest, "I feel as if it's a little desolate somehow."

"Of course it's desolate." Tie Bu Tian sighed as he explained, "In order get my work done, I don't usually stay in the royal palace. Moreover, most people were sent out of the palace; only a few ladies who take care of my father, and some custodial staff are left. Currently, there are hundreds of things that need attention in Iron Cloud... To maintain everything in the palace would require a large expenditure."

Chu Yang immediately said "oh," indicating he understood, but he asked with curiosity, "What about your younger sister? You don't take care of her?"

Chu Yang clearly remembered that young lady at Heavenly

Armament Pavilion calling Tie Long Cheng “second uncle.” Those two words “second uncle” might mean nothing when used with other people, but addressing Tie Long Cheng as such was not ordinary.

Before arriving at Iron cloud, Chu Yang did not know anything about the royal family, but after entering Bu Tian Pavilion, he learned that the emperor had only one brother, Tie Long Cheng.

If that was the case, that young lady must be Tie Bu Tian’s sister!

“My little sister?” Tie Bu Tian seemed surprised; a flash of troubled emotion appeared in his eyes. He laughed and said calmly, “That troublesome girl, have you met her?”

“Ah, she once came to Heavenly Armament Pavilion.” Chu Yang nodded.

“That little girl is such a headache…” Tie Bu Tian smiled and said, “But she is also very cute. Minister Chu suddenly brought her up… Hahaha… Don’t tell me Minister Chu has feelings for my little sister?”

Without waiting for an explanation from Chu Yang, Tie Bu Tian laughed, “Minister Chu is a superior person, if you feel that way, I would not mind making the match.”

Chu Yang laughed because he knew Tie Bu Tian was just joking. He replied, “I am just a commoner, how can I be suitable for the princess? I was really curious when I met the princess in Iron Cloud; she seemed very mysterious.”

Tie Bu Tian blinked and acted as if he was covering some deep emotion. He explained, “The existence of my little sister is a secret that no one knows about. That year, Great Zhao continually sent assassins to kill royal family members. To protect my little sister, her birth was hidden from everyone. After that, father got injured, so I did not dare announcing this to the world. If the enemies knew and came to hurt her, wouldn’t this big brother be responsible for

that?”

Tie Bu Tian continued sadly, “It is unfortunate to be a female in a royal family. It is even more unfortunate to be born in times of war. Those of royal blood are already few, and with the repeated onslaught of war… everything is just worse. I can only hope that my little sister can live a peaceful normal life. Concealing her identity was a precautionary measure to keep her safe. On the off chance that Iron Cloud might fall one day, she could at least keep her life. Even if she lives as a commoner somewhere, she would still live.”

He took a deep breath as if he was trying to keep at bay the emotion that was rising inside him.

After remaining silent for a while, Chu Yang felt as if there was something hidden in Tie Bu Tian’s words. So he said, “That’s true. Being born in a royal family might mean living a luxurious life that ordinary people can only dream of, but it also means living under such pressure that could crush you to death. Your little sister is lucky to have a great big brother like you; that is her good fortune.”

Also affected by the gloomy atmosphere, Du Shi Qing sighed.

It had always been the case that daughters of the royal family were used as tools to establish diplomatic relationships under the guise of marriage. It did not matter what the princess thought; everything was in the interests of the nation…

Chapter 111: She is your weakness

“Let’s not talk about that anymore. What are you planning to do about this little miss?” Tie Bu Tian asked Chu Yang.

“Let’s talk about that after we leave the palace.” Chu Yang bowed to Du Shi Qing and said, “Thank you Senior Du. I owe you once again!”

Chu Yang’s words were mysterious. Owe…? These words were ordinary, but even Du Shi Qing did not expect that when he reach the end of his road, Chu Yang will save his life because of these words!

Chu Yang was a conscientious man; in the future, he would still remember that Du Shi Qing had saved Mo Qing Wu this time. Moreover, Du Shi Qing was an elder worthy of his respect…

Du Shi Qing laughed, and waved his hand dismissively. He paid no mind to it…

Walking out of the royal palace, Tie Bu Tian looked at Chu Yang holding the little miss like a precious treasure, and could not help but frown, “Minister Chu, what I am about to say will not be pleasant to you, but I have to remind you… It is very likely that this little miss will be your weakness.”

Chu Yang frowned and looked up at Tie Bu Tian. He asked, “What do you mean?”

“I can see that you sincerely like this girl. However, if Diwu Qing Rou’s spies discover this, then…” Tie Bu Tian said sincerely, “I am afraid this will put her in harm’s way! Elder Martial Brother Chu, be careful!”

“That’s right!” Chu Yang was startled and a little afraid. He did not think of this point before; he and Diwu Qing Rou are mortal enemies… Diwu Qing Rou was famous for his unscrupulous methods. It was really possible that he would target Qing Wu. Chu

Yang gave Tie Bu Tian a profound look, “Thank you for reminding me!”

With two lifetimes of guilt and longing toward Mo Qing Wu, even if he was heartless, seeing his greatest motivation in life appearing in front of him… how could he not give the most loving care?

Chu Yang sat on Tie Bu Tian’s carriage and looked at Mo Qing Wu in his arms. He felt grateful that the heaven and earth had finally allow the two of them to see each other…

Mo Qing Wu is still young, only a little girl, but I can wait. We will live together for the rest of our lives!

The carriage stopped at a secluded spot; Chu Yang jumped down with Mo Qing Wu in his arm. With a few flashes, he disappeared from Tie Bu Tian’s sight.

Tie Bu Tian looked at Chu Yang holding this little miss and softly sighed…

Tie Bu Tian did not know who she was. And since Chu Yang did not volunteer this information, as a friend, Tie Bu Tian would never force Chu Yang to do so. This was a trust.

But Tie Bu Tian could feel that Chu Yang whole heartedly loved and cared for this little miss, and would not change because of his advice.

Or, even if he wanted to change, he could not change…

Tie Bu Tian sighed and muttered, “So you are not a heartless person after all… I wish you luck!” He turned and said softly, “Let’s go.”

The carriage started to move once again.

In Tie Bu Tian’s mind, even though Chu Yang was acting like an impulsive youth, this was just some harmless fun; it would not have an effect on the big picture. When the time comes, Chu Yang

would once again be a cold and calculating machine, without any emotions... Completely devoted to the end goal.

Slaughtering was no different from an everyday meal for Chu Yang. That was why Tie Bu Tian maintained his belief that Chu Yang was a heartless leader who was capable of taking decisive actions to achieve his goals.

He did not pay attention to anything; power, wealth, and people's lives were all inconsequential to him. In addition, he would not even care about his own life when he gets mad!

But today, the appearance of Mo Qing Wu had given Tie Bu Tian a glimpse of Chu Yang's affection and devotion.

While he did not know if this was bad or good for Chu Yang, he felt really happy... he was happy for his friend. He finally realized that Chu Yang was not a heartless machine, but a person of flesh and blood, filled with emotions.

Chu Yang returned to Bu Tian Pavilion; he followed a secret passage and entered his room. Wu Qian Qian was in there, wearing a ferocious mask and a black robe covering her whole body. When she saw Chu Yang suddenly returned, with an unconscious girl at that, she was surprised.

Seeing Chu Yang's current expression she decided not to ask any questions.

"Where is the person from this afternoon?" Chu Yang asked.

"Still unconscious." Wu Qian Qian said casually, "His injury is very serious."

"Good! As long as he's not dead!" Chu Yang said quickly, "Prepare a carriage for me. After dark, I will immediately bring them to Emerald Flow Lake."

The constructions at Emerald Flow Lake were now completed, and it was now habitable.

Wu Qian Qian nodded then added, “The prince said the Tang Xin Sheng matter will be entirely up to you; there is no need to go through him.”

With an “ah,” Chu Yang said nonchalantly, “I already know. Notify Heavenly Secret Hall to stop investigating Tang Xin Sheng. On the other hand, give orders to Fierce Blood Hall to send to people to capture Tang Xin Sheng tonight! They must take care to look like brigands or something else. No matter if it is success or failure, anyone exposing his identity or involvement of Bu Tian Pavilion will be killed… nine generations of his family will be killed!

Wu Qian Qian shuddered and sudden raised her head, exclaiming, “You… you are too bold!”

“Bold?” Chu Yang frowned and said, “Quite the opposite; I am worried that taking action tonight might already be too late.”

Chu Yang had some regrets. He should have captured Tang Xin Sheng right after looking of the documents. He had dealt with too many officials that way; surely, this would make Tang Xin Sheng more cautious.

Tang Xin Sheng was capable of climbing to this position as a spy; he was definitely intelligent. And he would absolutely be able to sense the approaching danger!

Therefore, Chu Yang did not hold much hope for Fierce Blood Hall’s mission tonight. He was currently thinking about what the next move would be if Tang Xin Sheng could not be captured.

Regardless of whether they could capture him or not, the next step was critical.

Originally, Chu Yang had wanted to go himself, but the appearance of Mo Qing Wu made him abandon that thought. Mo Qing Wu was still unconscious; he wanted to be next to her and take care of her.

The affairs of the world are important, but next to Mo Qing Wu, they are nothing. No matter how important these affairs were... they were not his wife...

*****

Emerald Flow Lake.

Chu Yang carefully placed Mo Qing Wu on his bed. Then he sat on the side, resting his chin on his hand... watching dreamily.

I will try hard to struggle against the heavens and go against fate. I would suffer ten thousand lifetimes just to be with you in this one! To compensate for all your sufferings...!

I love you!

Qing Wu...!

They were not supposed to meet for another ten years, but they had now met early. Seeing the young face on his bed, Chu Yang sighed. In his heart there was a bittersweet emotion. He was happy and, at the same time, confused about what he should do...

I have grown up, but she is still young like this... Qing Wu, when will you become Mo Qing Wu of the previous life?

One dance... one bitter life...

If that is the case... I would rather not ever be able to see your beautiful dance so you could live happily...

On the other side of the wall, there was a moan, followed by rustling noises... a brawny figure appeared at the doorway. He asked with a hoarse voice, “How is little miss?”

Chu Yang quietly stood up and looked at the man in black who was standing at the door.

The man in black hastily rushed into the room. He looked at Mo Qing Wu lying on the bed... then he carefully put up his finger to check her breathing... afterward, his face relaxed as if a weight had been lifted. He sat down on a chair in front of Chu Yang and

smiled, “Little miss all right, thank heavens!”

This man in black had strong steps and moved quickly. While his face was still pale, there were no serious issues... His injury had recovered well. Chu Yang could not help but lament... the healing ability of this King level expert was to strong...

This person looked at Chu Yang with eyes filled with gratitude. He said, “Thank you! Little martial brother; it was lucky you were there today! This great kindness... I shall repay in the future!”

“I did not help you because I was hoping for a repayment.” Chu Yang smiled and said, “How are you?”

“I am fine; my body is just a little weak.” A strong hatred appeared in the man’s eyes, “At Connecting Cloud Mountain, we were attacked by Hei Mo’s people. I did not expect there would be two King level men amongst them... They managed to punch me twice because of a momentary mistake. But that’s not important; what I worry about is little miss. Ahhhhhh....”

“Connecting Cloud Mountain...” Chu Yang was shocked. Connecting Cloud Mountain was more than seven hundred miles from her. This person was seriously injured by Hei Mo’s people... and yet he was able to run more than seven hundred miles in a day to get to Iron Cloud Citadel!

This was not even taking into consideration the time he spent asking for information on the road... To know that Du Shi Qing was at Iron Cloud Citadel, he must have spent a lot of time listening and asking around...

This person was truly strong and resilient.

“Little martial brother, what family are you from? Why don’t you look familiar?” The man took a few breaths, then he took the tea cup next to Chu Yang, and drank it all. He wiped his mouth and asked.

“What do you mean family?” Chu Yang frowned.

“What family in Middle Three Heavens are you from?” The man in black opened his eyes wide.

“I am not a person of Middle Three Heavens.” Chu Yang smiled helplessly.

“Then how do you know our little miss? Even her name? And even about Hei Mo?” This man was a crude person; so even with ordinary questions, his eyes still opened wide and his sideburns stood up.

“...” Chu Yang found it a little difficult to explain this. Perhaps he should just say, “I am your little miss’s future husband who was born again...!”

If he had said that, Chu Yang was sure that, even as his savior, the man would punch him a few times in the mouth.

“This is a long story!” Chu Yang sighed and quickly changed the subject, “Why have you come here?”

The man looked at Chu Yang’s face and suddenly showed an understanding smiled, “Ah... So that’s how it is; I understand; I understand. Hahaha... If that is the case, I won’t ask anymore...”

Chu Yang was confounded.

What do you understand? What’s that? So that’s what? Even I still don’t understand...

“I am an orphan; this is also a long story...” The man in black sighed heavily, “It can’t be discussed in a few words... Do you have wine?”

Chu Yang was dumbfounded. This man is really jumpy. A second ago he was sighing, and now he asked for wine... Plus, he still has a serious injury like this...

As if he saw through Chu Yang’s hesitation, the man beat his chest stating, “It’s fine. If you have wine, go ahead and bring it out... There’s nothing to worry about. Even if it makes my injury

worse, I must drink. Aahhhh... I want to use wine to chase away my sorrow....”

Chu Yang’s face twitched; motherf*, you can even say that... With such an injury and you want to use wine to chase away your sorrow... send you to the underworld is more like it....

Chapter 112: Mo family clan

After emptying three bowls of wine, the man in black exhaled. The smell of wine filled the air and he spoke, “That hits the spot. Ah... That was f* depressing. The world was peaceful; everything was good; and suddenly came the day when Nine Tribulations Sword was discovered.”

“Nine Tribulations Sword?” Chu Yang’s heart immediately pounded violently! At this moment, his heart seemed to almost jump out of his chest.

Nine Tribulations Sword’s coming out was something that only he knew. Why did it seem like the whole world knew about it?

“When Nine Tribulations Sword comes out, the clouds will dance; ten thousand tribulations destroyed, and the stars will cry; heaven and earth will change, fate... These words were passed down in Nine Heavens from ten thousand years ago. These words were the prophecy written by Supreme level master Chen Liu Yun.” When he got to these three words, the man in black’s face could not conceal a deep level of respect.

In the history of all of the continents of Nine Heavens, there had only been two Supreme level masters. One of them was Chen Liu Yun. The world originally did not have Supreme level, but since those two broke through the final hurdle Supreme level came into being!

“Saintly wind (TLN: Chen Feng) starts inside; outside in the heavens the moving cloud (TLN: Liu Yun) swings!”

Saintly wind Supreme Wu Chen Feng and moving cloud Supreme Chen Liu Yun were eternal legends of the Nine Heavens.

Of course Chu Yang knew about this Chen Liu Yun. What he did not know about was the prophecy he left behind.

“The meaning of this prophecy is that once Nine Tribulations

Sword found its master, there would be a great change in heaven and earth! The current states of Nine Heavens will be changed. Therefore, when Nine Tribulations Sword appeared, all the descendants of the great families came out to experience Jiang Hu! According to legends, the master of Nine Tribulations Sword will be lord of all the great families in Nine Heavens."

"By the time all the chaos ends, the great families' rankings will be rearranged. Their position in Upper Three Heavens and Middle Three Heavens will be determined by their strength." The man in black took another gulp of wine, "And the master of Nine Tribulations Sword will be the key player in all of this."

"Uh.... Huh? Ah...! Oh...." Chu Yang's mouth was gaping like a fish that was dying of thirst. Even with his fortified mind, he did not know what he wanted to say at this moment...

"You're stunned, right?" The man in black swirled the wine gourd, looking very satisfied. This was no big secret amongst the great families in Middle Three Heavens; he did not think that saying something like this would cause someone to be so shocked. The whole thing filled the man in black with a sense of great accomplishment...

"Ah... Stunned! Really stunned!" Chu Yang nodded repeatedly like a chicken pecking on the ground. He was not only shocked; it was more like his whole world had turned upside down... Master of Nine Tribulations Sword? Are they talking about me?

Am I really that skilled? Am I able to shake up Upper Three Heavens and Middle Three Heavens with just a Martial Warrior cultivation level?

"Anyway, motherf*... This is not a good thing at all..." The face of the man in black became angry all of a sudden, "Nine Tribulations Sword appearing so people could train is not a bad thing, but it involves the rankings of all the great families. Because of this, all the young disciples of the great families who came out to

train were given the task of subduing the disciples of the other families! If on the off chance that they could not be subdued, then killing them would also be acceptable! No matter how, their opponents must be weakened!”

Chu Yang rubbed his forehead as his eyes rolled.

“The mortal enemies of Mo family clan is Hei Mo family clan and Yan family clan. These past few hundred years, the three families might seem peaceful on the outside, but they never stopped fighting in the shadows. Now that Nine Tribulations Sword appeared, the conflicts between the three great families were pushed out in the open. This is especially true with the younger generation; they carry the attitude that if you live then I will die!”

The man in black sighed, “This time the two young masters came out to train with three guards in tow. Little miss argued and wanted to go out for some fun... Our clan’s master thought that with three King level masters protecting them, nothing bad could happen; so he agreed. In addition, he sent me to guard little miss.” He sighed and took a large gulp of wine. Then he lamented, “I have failed to live up to the trust of our clan’s master...”

Four King level masters went along to protect them? Chu Yang felt as if his brain was about to be short-circuited. How powerful was the Mo family clan of Middle Three Heavens?

Ack..., under the protection of four King level masters, and they let Mo Qing Wu get injured? Are these four guys fakes?

“King level masters are amongst the top in Middle Three Heavens. But, right now, all the young disciples that came out to train in Jiang Hu will determine the fate of the next few hundred years, few thousand years, even the survival of the whole family clan. Compared to this, are King level masters of any consequence?” The man in black said with great disdain.

“So that’s how it is.” Chu Yang’s countenance became serious.

Gu Du Xing once talked about the disciples of the families in Middle Three Heavens coming out to train in Jiang Hu, but Chu Yang did not think that this would have such great implications and deep impacts...

It seemed some things would need to be reevaluated.

“After coming out, eldest young master and second young master had some disagreements. They argued well into the afternoon and went their separate ways. Eldest young master went to Great Zhao with two guardians. And second young master went sightseeing with little miss.”

“When we got to Connecting Clouds Mountain, we heard a rumor that on the side of the cliff, there was a special site. Second young master suspected that this site contained the remains of a Monarch level ancestor. Since the location was isolated, he decided to see for himself. Little miss and I waited on top of the cliff as second young master and third Mo uncle went down to search. Not long after they went down, the whole gorge suddenly became engulfed in flames. We were ambushed by the enemies...”

“It was a trap!” Chu Yang said resolutely.

He felt some contempt for this second young master. If there was really the remains of a Monarch level master, would you just luckily discover it right after stepping into Jiang Hu from Middle Three Heavens? It was clearly a trap and you brought your younger sister straight into it... Such a retard!

“Bam...!” The man in black slapped his thigh in agreement and said, “Who would say it was not? It was definitely a trap! Third Mo uncle and I tried to talk him out of it many times, but he would not listen...!”

“I struggled to bring little miss out of the flames only to be immediately ambushed by the Hei Mo family clan! Little miss has a Three Yin Meridian, even though she is a girl, she would grow up to become a powerful master. This was why the Hei Mo family clan

wanted to kill her!”

“A pair of Saber and Sword King along with twelve Revered Martial Artists attacked all at once. I almost lost my life there... Even little miss was injured by one sword strike of the Hei Mo Sword King. Luckily, the sword tip was slightly off, or else...” The man in black became angry, “Motherf*, I will pay them back one day!”

He did not notice that Chu Yang had fallen silent since he mentioned “Three Yin Meridian.”

“Does the Mo family clan put great importance on Mo Qing Wu’s Three Yin Meridian?” Chu Yang asked cautiously.

“Of course! The chance of it occurring in a female is extremely rare. Any female with Three Yin Meridian would have limitless success in the future. Reaching Emperor level would not be out of the ordinary. One of the great grandmothers of the Mo family clan had Three Yin Meridian. She left a cultivation technique designed especially for those with Three Yin Meridian. Little miss would only need to cultivate according to this technique and she could easily reach the peak of cultivation, stepping into heaven.” The man in black said proudly.

His attitude had shown how much he cared for Mo Qing Wu, and was even very proud of her.

“Ah... What if Three Yin Meridian is damaged?” Chu Yang asked solemnly, “Are there any consequences?”

“Three Yin Meridian is damaged?” The man in black looked at Chu Yang in surprise.

He suddenly stood up; the wine gourd in his hand fell to the ground as he glared at Chu Yang.

“I said... if...” Chu Yang said lightly.

“If... If...” The man in black muttered helplessly. He suddenly remembered that one sword strike was in the middle of Mo Qing

Wu's chest. That was the critical point of Three Yin Meridian...

He remained quiet for a while and said gravely, "If that's the case... Little miss's life is over..." His voice was full of loss and sorrow.

"Over?" Chu Yang frowned. He asked with a slightly dangerous aura, "Over how?"

The man in black smiled bitterly, "Whether it's a family or a country, they're all the same. Their children dress well and act arrogantly. They might not even know a little bit of martial arts... and might only know how to do bad things. But each of them has their own place and their own value."

Chu Yang nodded silently.

"The role these useless people played are great. They are usually used to establish relations with other families, to consolidate power." The man in black laughed dryly, "Powerful people are very cautious. If two powers wanted to work with each other, they needed the appropriate reasons to do so. Because when one power grows too fast, the others would unite to attack it!"

"If they wanted to join powers without being attacked, then there are two ways. Teacher and student relationship or in-laws relationship." Chu quietly finished his explanation, "The teacher and student relation runs the risk of students stealing your family's secrets. So establishing an in-laws relationship is best. By building these interfamily relationships, they can contribute to their family's strength."

"Yes, that's exactly how it is!" The man in black lowered his head and said, "The Mo family clans has such descendants. They are usually not allowed to participate in ranking competitions because they are not worthy. Like the case of the eldest son, Mo Tian Xing. When he was ten, he was demoted to third young master because he lacked talent. Even though he is the oldest, he has to call his younger brothers older brothers..."

“If little miss’s Three Yin Meridian is damaged… then… then…” The man in black stood up anxiously, “Little martial brother, how is little miss?”

“Her Three Yin Meridian is damaged… Would the family toss her aside and turn her into a tool for making connections with other families?” Chu Yang’s gaze and tone were cold. He did not seem to notice the anxiousness of this King level master.

“Ahhh…” The man in black sighed, “If the family decides, since she has no hope of recovery… I am afraid…”

Chapter 113: Uncle Chu Yang

With sorrow on his face, he said, “In addition, little miss is really close to second young master and doesn’t get along with eldest young master. There is great contention between second young master and eldest young master. Currently, in the family, the eldest young master is most popular; he has the support of most of the clan elders... It would not be unexpected if eldest young master inherits the position of master of the clan. If little miss... Ah, the consequences would be disastrous!”

Chu Yang nodded and sneered. This was why Mo Qing Wu did not return home in the previous life. There were surely other hidden circumstances as well...!

For these family clans, there was no such thing as love. Mo Qing Wu always hung around her second brother so her Three Yin Meridian indirectly created an advantage for her second brother. How could the eldest young master not hold a grudge?

What happened to Qing Wu today was surely just what the eldest young master would want. Why would he want to help this little sister? If he comes into power, Mo Qing Wu would surely not be able live peacefully like before.

“The name of the Mo family clan’s third young master is Mo Tian Xing?” Chu Yang raised his brows as he thought. This name felt familiar; he could not help but ask, “Then what is the name of the eldest young master?”

When Chu Yang was asking these two questions, Chu Yang felt his heart pounding violently.

“Mo Tian Yun.” The man in black exhaled, “He was the second son, but is now the eldest son. He is also the one most likely to succeed as the master of the family clan.”

“And the second young master?” Chu Yang asked hastily.

“The second young master is Mo Tian Ji. In the family, eldest young master is the bravest and fiercest, and second young master is very resourceful. This is acknowledged by everyone; how could you not know?” The man in black gave Chu Yang a strange look. It seemed that he was a little surprised by Chu Yang’s questions. You knew about Mo Qing Wu, so why don’t you know about Mo Tian Yun and Mo Tian Ji?

“Mo Tian Ji? Mo Tian Ji!” Chu Yang shuddered and muttered again, “Mo... Tian... Ji...”

Good friend in the previous life, young master of the Mo family clan, and also the person who planned the ambush that sent me to my death in Upper Three Heavens... This person that caused my violent death is Qing Wu’s brother!

Chu Yang couldn’t help but sneer icily, “Someone who easily fell into the traps of others is still considered resourceful?”

“Ahem... The temptation of the remains of a Monarch level master was...”

“Little brother, what is your name?” The man in black suddenly smacked his forehead and asked, “I am sorry. I am Mo Cheng Yu.”

“I am Chu Yang.” Chu Yang’s state of mind had yet to recover; it was still in shock from the three words: Mo Tian Ji.

Why did Mo Tian Ji end up plotting against me? Chu Yang still did not understand. In the previous life, the two drank together all the time. They had many heart to hearts and used to talk late into the night.

Mo Tian Ji clearly had many chances to kill me, but he never revealed the slightest intention. Chu Yang had always felt that Mo Tian Ji enjoyed his company and truly wanted to be his friend.

Moreover, in Middle Three Heavens, Mo Tian Ji helped me in dangerous situations many times.

Therefore, Chu Yang never understood why Mo Tian Ji plotted

to kill him. Today, he finally knew the answer; this was his sister Mo Qing Wu.

Revenge!

He remembered the last time the two drank together; they were dead drunk and talked about things in heaven and earth... somehow, they ended up talking about the sad things in their lives, the regrets in their hearts.

Memories of the past came rushing back to Chu Yang...

“My biggest regret is my little sister; my favorite sister!” Mo Tian Ji’s body reeked the smell of alcohol as he talked about this; tears ran down his cheeks, “My sister met a heartless man. She threw away everything for him, but he tossed her aside afterward. In the end, she died because of him. When she was still alive, I asked her many times who he was... but she never told me...”

Mo Tian Ji’s tearful eyes were full of killing intentions. He angrily grinded his teeth together, “If I know who he is, I will chop him into ten thousand pieces! Even if he is the son of the lord of Upper Three Heavens, he must die! Even if it will lead to the fall the entire Mo family, I would do it!”

“My greatest regret is not knowing who that man is...” Mo Tian Ji’s head dropped as he cried louder.

Chu Yang was also drunk; he could not help but ask, “What is your little sister’s name?”

“My little sister’s name... I dare not speak it. Just thinking about it is already painful...” Mo Tian Ji smiled bitterly. He lay on the table and muttered, “Little sister... little sister... Why didn’t you wait for the day your big brother becomes master of the family clan...”

Mo Tian Ji awakened Chu Yang’s memory of Mo Qing Wu; his heart became grief-stricken as well... So he brought out everything about him and Mo Qing Wu... that very night.

At that time, Mo Tian Ji stared at him strangely after hearing everything. But he was too immersed in his own memory to notice...

The next day, Mo Tian Ji quietly left without a trace. All he found was the precious sword that Mo Tian Ji valued as much as his life at the doorway, broken in half...

Since then, he did not see Mo Tian Ji again. He was always worried that something unfortunate had happened to Mo Tian Ji, so he searched for him everywhere...

However, after he retrieved the fifth fragment of Nine Tribulations Sword, he ran into the fatal ambush arranged by Mo Tian Ji.

This explains it all; this was it!

He left without saying goodbye. The sword was broken in half... meaning the severing of their friendship. Afterward, he ambushed me to avenge his little sister. Even though I never mentioned the name Mo Qing Wu, but, with his intelligence, Mo Tian Ji was able to guess that I was the one responsible for his little sister's death.

Chu Yang sighed. He did not know whether to laugh or cry.

At this moment, Mo Qing Wu's body showed a little movement. She let out a painful moan and slowly opened her eyes. With sluggish movements, she tilted her head and looked around, then she focused on the two people.

Her eyes were clear like water with black glistening pupils. Chu Yang seemed to have had his spirit captured by those eyes...

Mo Qing Wu frowned as if she was in great pain. Seeing Mo Cheng Yu by her side, her lips started to quiver as her yes suddenly filled with tears. She was like a bullied little girl who just saw her family.

"Little miss, you are awake. How is your wound? Does it still hurt?" Mo Cheng Yu asked nonstop as his body slowly moved

forward blocking Chu Yang's view.

"Uncle Cheng Yu..." With eyes full of tears, Mo Qing Wu said pitifully, "It hurts a lot..."

"Good girl, don't cry, don't cry. There's Uncle Chu here, too. Don't make Uncle Chu laugh at you." Holding back his sadness, Mo Cheng Yu quickly consoled and added, "Little miss, it was all thanks to Uncle Chu Yang..."

Chu Yang stood on the side with his mouth gaping. His whole body trembled, and his face lost its color.

Uncle... Chu Yang?

That's my wife!

Chu Yang was so furious, he was almost foaming at the mouth...

Mo Qing Wu slightly nodded, and raised her hand to wipe her tears. She looked at Chu Yang... her little tiny face reddened a bit. She greeted him and said, "Thank you Uncle Chu Yang. I will never forget your saving my life..."

Chu Yang hurried waved his hand and laughed, "It's nothing. It's nothing. Cough... cough... I am not that much older than you, just call me Brother Chu... Uncle is too old..."

Mo Qing Wu was confused. She turned her little face and looked up at Mo Cheng Yu.

Mo Cheng Yu's eyes widened, "No. Seniority has to be taken seriously. You must be uncle. Why brother? Absolutely not!"

Chu Yang face looked tortured as he stared at Mo Cheng Yu with anguish. He was furious that he could not drag this guy out that moment and give him a beating. Just a moment ago, he thought this guy was a great man, but now the sight of him filled Chu Yang with anguish.

"Uncle Chu Yang..." The little miss licked her lips and said, "I want to drink water."

“Uh… oh…” With a discolored face, Chu Yang slowly carried the water over. Aaaahhhh… it seems I will have to be uncle for the next few days.

“Let me.” Mo Cheng Yu said protectively. He grabbed the water from Chu Yang’s hand and carefully held it up for Mo Qing Wu to drink.

“Uncle Cheng Yu, when is my second brother coming?” Mo Qing Wu blink a few times, her face full of grievances, “I want to tell second brother to give those bad people a beating…”

“Ah, second young master… is on his way.” Mo Cheng Yu was somewhat flustered. He did not know whether Mo Tian Ji was still down at the cliff face or perhaps he was also ambushed? He had no way of knowing when Mo Tian Ji would come.

He gently helped Mo Qing Wu lie back down. It seemed her wound was disturbed because Mo Qing Wu cringed. Both Chu Yang and Mo Cheng Yu were distressed.

Mo Cheng Yu held Mo Qing Wu’s little hand tightly. A flow of energy slowly went through her body as he carefully checked her injury… His face immediately changed color. What was tanned had now changed to pale white. His whole body trembled and then went stiff. After that, he spit out a mouthful of blood, and said painfully, “How… how… could this be?”

He discovered trouble with Mo Qing Wu’s Three Yin Meridian…

When Chu Yang was asking, he felt suspicious, but he still had a tiny ray of hope… Now that the bad news was confirmed, he suddenly felt the world was spinning.

“Uncle Cheng Yu… Uncle Cheng Yu… what’s wrong?,” Mo Qing Wu asked in panic.

“I’m fine. That was just a blood clot; I feel much better after spitting it out.” Mo Cheng Yu forced a smile and pretended to be relaxed, “You should get a good sleep; when you wake up,

everything will be much better.”

Qing Wu obediently closed her eyes. Then she immediately opened them and said shyly, “Uncle Cheng Yu... with you and Uncle Chu Yang here, I... I can’t sleep...”

Uncle Chu Yang again. Chu Yang looked up at the heavens and sighed. His anguish almost caused an internal injury.

“Why can’t you sleep?” Mo Cheng Yu asked in surprise, “You should feel reassured with your uncle here.”

“It’s because you are... men...” Mo Qing Wu’s innocent eyes opened wide, “Mother said, when a young lady goes to sleep, there must not be a man next to her. They must be sent away...”

Chapter 114: Chu Yang's impulsiveness

"Hahaha..." Mo Cheng Yu laughed, "This little girl knows that men and women should not be together... Alright, Uncle Chu Yang and I will go outside to talk. If you feel any discomfort, call me right away."

He turned toward Chu Yang, "Brother Chu, let's go outside and talk."

After he said that, he was suddenly shocked. It was as if he saw the sun rise in the west. He asked, "Brother Chu, what's wrong with your face?"

Chu Yang weakly rolled his eyes and thought: What's wrong with my face? Didn't my wife just turn into a niece? The fact that I am not killing myself right here is already something...

"Was little miss's wound treated by Du Shi Qing? What did he say?" Mo Cheng Yu's brows twisted as he sat with Chu Yang on the steps; his heart was heavily burdened.

Since he discovered that Mo Qing Wu's Three Yin Meridian had been damaged, Mo Cheng Yu felt as if there was a large mountain on top of him. He became eerily quiet like a volcano on the verge of eruption, like the sky before a storm.

"Senior Du said it can't be treated even with all nine great legendary herbs under the heavens!" Chu Yang had a really good impression of this King level master so he did not hide anything. He looked at Mo Cheng Yu and said, "Senior Mo, there is currently no way to cure Qing Wu's injury. If you bring her back to the family, I am afraid she won't be able to handle it. Just leave her with me. What do you think?"

Mo Cheng Yu's dark brows pinched together. He sighed and said, "No!"

"Why?" Chu Yang's eyes twitched angrily, "Must you bring her

home to endure endless suffering? You should remember that her Three Yin Meridian is damaged; the family's attitude toward her will change! Children with no useful values, you and I both know how they will be treated!"

"It's painful, but she is still a person of the Mo family!" Mo Cheng Yu sighed, "In the family, the benefit of the whole clan comes first; it's not something you don't already know. While you have saved her life, to the Mo family, you are still a stranger."

Mo Cheng Yu snorted, "Even if she gets treated worse than before when she goes back, it's still better than staying with a stranger. You might have saved her life, but it's all the same!"

"Not to mention that with your current strength, you cannot possibly keep her safe! If the Hei Mo find their way here, do you think your meek strength could protect her?" Mo Cheng Yu coldly said.

His last sentence made Chu Yang feel completely powerless.

This was the truth!

No matter what, the harsh reality was his strength was extremely low! If he was currently a Martial Great Master, along with Nine Tribulations Sword, he believed he could deal with Hei Mo.

But currently, he was just a ninth grade Martial Warrior, not even a Martial Master yet.

Once Hei Mo arrived, Mo Qing Wu would surely die! That would not be protecting her, but harming her instead.

However, Chu Yang was not willing to let Mo Qing Wu face the family's heartlessness if she went home.

"In any case, little miss is still the clan master's own daughter." Mo Cheng Yu said sincerely, "Even without Three Yin Meridian, her life in the family would still be very good."

"Do you believe in the things you just said?" Chu Yang looked at

him coldly, “You are a King level master; if your cultivation is gone and you become an ordinary person, even if no one looks down on you, will you be able to deal with it?”

“But everyone has to face the reality!” Mo Cheng Yu growled in a low voice, “You think I don’t feel bad? The moment little miss was born, it was determined that she has Three Yin Meridian. I was immediately assigned as her mentor and guardian! I watched her grow up, and see her has my own daughter! She got injured; I am mad that the person injured was not me! This love, how could you understand?”

“I know that once little miss returns home, once she is pulled into the fight for power, her life would not be peaceful. But only the family can keep her alive! Anywhere else... it’s not possible! I cannot do it; you definitely cannot do it!” Mo Cheng Yu’s eyes were red like blood. He fiercely looked at Chu Yang. All his suppressed emotions exploded.

“But I will not allow her to go home and get bullied!” Chu Yang did not give in.

“You won’t allow it? What can you do?” Mo Cheng Yu looked at him dismissively. His voice was full of pain and helplessness. Those were ugly words, but they were the truth, “Chu Yang, you saved us and I am grateful. That is why I am still talking to you. But you should know your own strength. The Mo family will not be changed by you, and certainly not by me!”

“If I use force?” Chu Yang’s eyes narrowed as he said in a low voice.

“I am currently seriously injured; if you force me to stay, I would have to temporarily stay. But you have to think about the consequences. Even though I believe you do not have any ill intentions, if the Hei Mo family clan finds out, they will bring you great misfortune. Likewise, if the people of the Yan family clan find out, they would flatten this place!” Mo Cheng Yu grunted and

continued, “You are a wise person; you would not do anything stupid like that!”

Chu Yang had impulsively used the word force; he knew that it was something he would not do. But he finally saw Mo Qing Wu, and under circumstances like this as well. How could he bear to see her go back home to suffer and have the past repeated?

However, if he did not let her go back, everything Mo Cheng Yu said would come to fruition. Chu Yang might not have admitted it, but at this time, he did not have the power to protect Mo Qing Wu. Keeping Mo Qing Wu would be harming her as well as himself.

The fact that Mo Cheng Yu came into Iron Cloud Citadel to find Du Shi Qing could not be hidden from people. At this very moment there could be pursuers on their way here; they could be here at any moment.

“We need to carefully discuss this.” Chu Yang thought for a while and decided to give in a bit, “Senior Mo, regardless of whether you two will stay or not, your injury must be treated quickly. On the off chance that there are enemies pursuing, you can at least fight. As for everything else, let’s wait until Mo Tian Ji gets here, and we’ll discuss them further.”

This was the best delay tactic Chu Yang could have thought of.

The mere mention of the words “Mo Tian Ji” filled Chu Yang’s heart with bitterness. He could not speak out this feeling, and could only secretly sigh.

“That will have to do. I am afraid my injuries will take about half a month to recover.” Mo Cheng Yu’s heart was filled with loss and sorrow. At the same time, he also felt guilty and remorseful. His duty was to protect the little miss, but she had now received an injury that could never be healed!

A mix of emotions weighed down on his heart to the point it almost collapsed.

He knew Chu Yang's solution was the best one. He needed to heal as well. If his injury was not completely healed and he pushed himself to leave with little miss, they would most likely get killed by enemies on the road.

"I have rare elixirs for injuries from Senior Du Shi Qing. You are a King level master, you should know what you need for your injury. If we don't have it here, just let me know!" Chu Yang said slowly.

"Good."

Chu Yang leisurely took two steps then said, "The only thing is, if you are to stay here and the enemies come, it would be troublesome. It would be better if you go down to the secret underground chamber and wait for your injuries to heal before leaving."

He smiled and continued, "Like you said, if the Hei Mo people come right now, I would have no means of stopping them. Please do not scold me for being too careful!"

The secret underground chamber was especially designed by Chu Yang. It was especially deep. He did this to prepare for obtaining the second fragment of Nine Tribulations Sword. The secret chamber was located right above the second Nine Tribulations Sword fragment. According to Chu Yang's estimate, he only needed to dig at most twenty feet more to get it.

At this time, that secret chamber had become a safe haven.

"This is best. Even I am not that careful!" Mo Cheng Yu sighed. If it were not for Mo Qing Wu by his side, he would rather die in battle than hide in a hole. But he was currently helpless...

"Let me make some arrangements."

There were no servants at Heavenly Armament Pavilion, so Chu Yang had to do everything by himself.

At the shops, basic amenities like, beds, lamps, blankets and

other necessities were quickly bought up by a hasty shopper who did not care about money. In about an hour, two rooms were prepared.

Chu Yang carefully arranged everything to be comfortable for Mo Qing Wu's room. Plus, he covered all four walls with white silk. The bed was even dabbed with oil to make the whole room filled with fragrance.

Mo Cheng Yu's room was by far inferior. He simply toss the items into the room and told Mo Cheng Yu, "You can set it up yourself. Good night..."

Mo Cheng Yu was so mad his hair stood on end.

While Chu Yang was busy preparing, Mo Cheng Yu had observed him carefully. The more he looked, the more he felt that this youth was full of mystery.

Who is he? How does he know little miss? Plus, he protected and took care of little miss even though his cultivation is not that high.

He had already met most of the talents that were coming out from Middle Three Heavens' families. And if he had not met them, he had heard others described them. There was absolutely no person like Chu Yang.

This is really strange!

What Chu yang did not want to talk about, he naturally would not ask. At least, the other person did not have any ill intentions!

Once everything was properly prepared, Chu Yang slowly carried a sleeping Mo Qing Wu down. The moment Chu Yang put his arm out to hold Mo Qing Wu, Mo Cheng Yu put out his hand in protest. But Chu Yang shot him a stare as sharp as a saber.

Mo Cheng Yu was a King level master, but that stare unexpectedly sent a chill down his spine. After that Chu Yang said, "You are injured; what would happen if you accidentally tripped?"

Mo Cheng Yu had to take a loss and awkwardly followed Chu Yang down to the secret chamber.

Looking at Mo Qing Wu sleeping soundly in the secret chamber, Chu Yang rubbed his hands and said, “Senior Mo, I want to discuss something with you.”

“What?” Mo Cheng Yu was currently annoyed. This kid just gave him a stare, and what’s more, he was actually fearful of it!Motherf*! I am a King level master! What level is this kid? Why was I fearful of him? I just ran into a demon…

Chapter 115: A glimmer of hope

“Umm... When she wakes up can we change the way she addresses me?” Chu Yang scratched his head as his face slightly reddened, “You see, I am only sixteen this year. Actually, I am not even that old yet... it’s not yet my birthday. Being an uncle is not really suitable...”

“You are only sixteen?” Mo Cheng Yu was surprised. This youth seemed to be very influential. His actions were careful and discreet. Besides the fact that he was somewhat impulsive when it came to little miss, everything else was flawlessly calculated. And yet he was only sixteen years old?!!

“Yes!” Chu Yang laughed.

“No problem!” Mo Cheng Yu immediately complied. He also felt something wrong about calling Chu Yang uncle. Mo Qing Wu was only nine, so calling Chu Yang uncle was not a big deal. But when Mo Tian Ji and Mo Tian Yun arrive, they were both older than Chu Yang by many years; should they call him uncle, too?

The two of them were brothers of little miss; they were of the same generation...

Moreover, Chu Yang treated little miss so well; calling him uncle seemed a little rude. He gave so much attention to how he is addressed, he must like little miss a lot... It’s true that little miss grew up to be smart and loveable; anyone who met her liked her, and Chu Yang is no exception...

At this moment, Mo Cheng Yu could not help but feel proud.

Of course, no matter how hard he thought, Mo Cheng Yu would never expect Chu Yang to be such a beast to develop feelings for a nine years old girl...

This was simply impossible. No one looking at a little nine years old girl would develop such a beastly state of mind...

However… Chu Yang was that kind of person…

Because this was not just anyone. This… this was Mo Qing Wu…!

*****

Chu Yang remained sleepless as he stood under the night sky. This was the first time he could not cultivate; he simply stood there and then, every now and then, smiled, frowned, and sometimes sighed.

I finally met her, but she is injured…

Plus, she is still so young…

King of Hell Chu's head was hurting. Ohhh, when will she grow up? How should I treat her? If I am too protective of her, she will see me as an elder. This is her most innocent age, if I leave an impression of an uncle in her mind that would be a problem!

If I am too distant, then it might lead to resentment. If she does not like me since she is little, then it would also be tough to solve.

And what to do about her injury?

Thinking like that, Chu Yang's mind became so tangled he almost went mad.

"Nine Tribulations Sword can heal her injury!" He was lost in thought when a voice suddenly rose in his head.

"Nine Tribulations Sword can heal her?" Chu Yang was like a drowning man who managed to grab on to a lifesaving log; he was overjoyed.

"Yes!" The sword spirit sighed. It seems that this kid's mind is really stubborn. Because of a nine year old Mo Qing Wu, he becomes lovesick like this. Plus, he even forgets about cultivation…

This is unacceptable!

"Don't forget that Nine Tribulations Sword has the ability to

purify medicine. What's more is Nine Tribulations Sword keeps all the essence; this is the lifesaving treasure." The sword spirit reluctantly told him, "Look into the sword hilt in your dantian..."

Chu Yang rejoiced and quickly concentrated his thoughts. In his dantian, at Nine Tribulations Sword's hilt, he only saw faintly half a drop of something dark inside...

"This is it?"

"Yes, that's it. Once it becomes a full drop, you can take it out and cure Mo Qing Wu." The sword spirit said, "Of course there is a condition. If it only gather essences of herbal medicines, it will never be effective. After you get the second Nine Tribulations Sword fragment and gather enough essence, then you can take it out."

"I will definitely achieve this in the shortest possible time. At all costs, I will gather enough elixirs and obtain the second Nine Tribulations fragment." Chu Yang's eyes narrowed as he said softly.

"I sure hope so. But I should remind you that it would be difficult to achieve your goals within a year." The sword spirit warned him, "If you force the Nine Tribulations Pill out when it is not ready, it will be ineffective and might even have an adverse effect!"

The sword spirt sighed and continued, "I actually would have been capable of pushing you along faster, but..."

"But what? I almost forgot that you are Nine Tribulations Sword's spirit; of course you could." Chu Yang said happily, "You can push a little faster; wouldn't that settle everything quickly?"

"You stupid...! You don't know that I exist in your consciousness? And Nine Tribulations Sword is in your dantian. While I still could not become one with it, should I just push you with nothing but faith?"

"One more thing, during this time period, your property seizures

have helped you obtain many medicinal herbs. That along with what Nine Tribulations Sword was able to accumulate at Beyond the Heavens Sect made this half a drop. Finding enough won't be easy. Then there is the fact that you were only able gather the herbs commonly found in Iron Cloud Citadel. Even if a hundred times more of these are to be absorbed, Nine Tribulations Pill would still not be created!" The sword spirit just doused Chu Yang with a bucket of icy cold water.

"As long as there is a glimmer of hope I will try my best. If these medicinal herbs are not enough, I shall find other treasures. Whether it is lying, stealing, robbing..., I will definitely get enough. Even if I have to rob every powerful family in Middle Three Heavens, I will create Nine Tribulations Pill!" Chu Yang grinded his teeth.

"You're gutsy, haha...!" With that praise, the sword spirit became silent and was gone without a trace. It seems this kid has enough motivation now. With only a cultivation level of Martial Warrior and he wants to rob every powerful family in Middle Three Heavens.He could not help but praise Chu Yang.

The sword spirit was very pleased...

Chu Yang fell into deep thought.

He had never wanted to increase his strength with such urgency as he did right now!

Qing Wu is in danger!

I must protect her!

The next morning, he carefully looked around Heavenly Armament Pavilion once and went to see Mo Cheng Yu. Seeing Mo Qing Wu was still sleeping, he quietly left.

Arriving at Bu Tian Pavilion, Chu Yang saw Cheng Zi Ang sitting with a frown on his face. Seeing Chu Yang appear with a ferocious mask on his face, he was startled and immediately stood up. It was

as if he was caught in wrongdoing.

“Last night’s mission was not successful?” Chu Yang snorted. He suddenly found this old man annoying to look at. His mood was already bad, and early in the morning he was given the bad news that the mission had failed.

Seeing Cheng Zi Ang’s funerary face, Chu Yang understood right away that they did not catch anything last night.

“Yes! Last night, we put on our disguises and advanced into Tang Manor. We discovered that Tang Xin Sheng had already left. His wife and child were still in the manor. To avoid alerting them of our action, we kept watch and did not disturb them!” Cheng Zi Ang said cautiously. Strangely, Cheng Zi Ang’s cultivation was Revered level, countless times higher than Chu Yang’s. Yet the moment Chu Yang glared at him, Cheng Zi Ang felt his whole body tremble…

“Tang Xin Sheng disappeared, but his family was still in the manor?” Chu Yang grinned, “This guy is really cruel. To test his own suspicion, he did not mind using his family as bait. We don’t even know if his family is real or fake…”

“But it was not a total loss. At the first light of dawn, I was hiding nearby and discovered an Invisible Falcon carrying communications into Tang Manor. It was captured by my net…” Cheng Zi Ang said with some pride. Like a treasure, he pulled out a small bird.

Invisible Falcon was the type of bird that came and went without a trace. Catching it would be especially difficult. Never mind Revered Martial Master, even a Martial Emperor could not chase it down. And they definitely could not see it when it wass camouflaged.

However, Cheng Zi Ang was one lucky bastard. He knew that if he did not capture Tang Xing Sheng, King of Hell Chu would give him an earful when he return. So he patiently hid and waited.

As the light was just coming up from the east, the Invisible Falcon flew toward him. It had flown more than a thousand miles, and was very tired by the time it got there. Plus, at the early hours of dawn, the Invisible Falcon was still in its night camouflage. As the morning light shined, Cheng Zi Ang saw it.

So as it turned out, Cheng Zi Ang sat back and waited, and managed to catch it with one swoop.

“Very good! I can’t believe you always have a net on you…” There was a trace of cynicism in Chu Yang’s voice.

Cheng Zi Ang’s face blushed with embarrassment.

It was because Cheng Zi Ang has quite an appetite, and he especially liked birds. From eagles to sparrows, they were all delicious to him. That was why he always carried a net with him. The more elusive the birds the more delicious they were.

Even at Bu Tian Pavilion, if a bird accidentally wandered in and Cheng Zi Ang was there, then there would be an extra bird dish on the table. He loved them so much, he would not even spare bats…

Talk about a blind cat catching a dead mouse. It was such a coincidence that the Invisible Falcon fell into his hands… This was heaven’s will!

Such an unbelievable coincidence.

Chu Yang looked at the Invisible Falcon’s leg; there was a tiny bamboo tubed tied to it. The inside was tightly sealed with sap.

Chu Yang gently squeezed, and the sap broke, revealing a tiny rolled up piece of paper. He carefully opened it and saw only two words: “Dangerous situation!”

These two words revealed many things. The hooks on the strokes were sharp and hard like a scythe. Though the writing was careless, it contained the mindset of the person who wrote it, firm and swift. There was a faintly visible inscription on the paper: “Diwu.”

“This was written by Diwu Qing Rou’s own hand!” Chu Yang’s words made Cheng Zi Ang overjoyed.

“It seems we underestimated Tang Xin Sheng’s worth; he is really the biggest fish ever!” Chu Yang’s countenance became grave, and he carefully tucked away the note.

Golden Horse Riders Department had countless people, and yet Diwu Qing Rou wrote this note to Tang Xin Sheng with his own hand. How could Chu Yang not understand the meaning behind that!

He could imagine Tang Xin Sheng’s importance from this!

Chapter 116: Diwu Qing Rou's note

The writing on this note was majestic, but also hid a meticulous edge; it was as if there was an incredible sword in this letter even though it never showed its sharp tip. This writing was filled with an unstoppable aura.

Seeing the words was like meeting the person; Chu Yang truly believed that besides Diwu Qing Rou, no one else was capable of writing those words.

This was an unexpected windfall!

"Minister, this Invisible Falcon..." Cheng Zi Ang cautiously said as he unconsciously licked his lips and revealed a hunger in his eyes.

"Invisible Falcon, this is truly a treasured courier!" Chu Yang did not notice Cheng Zi Ang's abnormal behavior and asked thoughtfully, "Can it be retrained to work for us?"

Cheng Zi Ang regretfully shook his head, "Invisible Falcons will only have one master in their lifetime. Plus, with a mature Invisible Falcon that can deliver messages, there is absolutely no hope."

Chu Yang let out an "Ah!" and said, "That's unfortunate!"

"Minister, Invisible Falcon meat is delicious..." Cheng Zi Ang saw that the Invisible Falcon no longer had any use, so he swallowed and said that with a smile.

"You are saying... eat?!" Chu Yang was shocked as he looked at the wretched old man. Then he looked at the tiny Invisible Falcon, not bigger than a sparrow. It was only about half a pound in his hand... He was speechless.

After removing the feathers, there would probably be less than a quarter pound of meat. This old man wanted to have some wine with it...

“Do you know anything else besides eating?” King of Hell Chu pounded the table; he was furious. Such a precious thing, and he wanted to make a drinking snack out of it? Chu Yang really thought that was unforgivable!

Moreover, with enemies inside and out causing all sorts of chaos, he was extremely short tempered today. And this damn old man was still thinking about food, how could he keep his composure; a storm immediately rose up...!

Cheng Zi Ang pulled his head down. Then his balding head suddenly felt heavy rain from the direction of Minister Chu Yang’s mouth!

Outside, all the members of Bu Tian Pavilion were training when they saw the storm rise up. Everyone became as quiet as clams and looked at each other with a feeling of schadenfreude. They asked themselves who the unlucky bloke was. It was still early morning, and King of Hell Chu already rained down thunder and lightning...

Ahhh... So sorry for him! Even so, they only had a gloating look in their eyes and did not dare to stop training. Everyone made a show of “must train even if they train to death.” Maybe the minister would come out and praise them!

“Go and tell Chen Yu Tong to bring all of the petitions, documents... belonging to Tang Xin Sheng to me. On another note, take care of this bird well. If it loses one feather... hehe... Hall Leader Cheng should know the consequences.”

Chu Yang grunted coldly and said, “As for Tang Xin Sheng’s whereabouts, let’s temporarily stop the search. All the spies around Tang Manor should be removed as well. Just you watching would be enough. Other people’s cultivation levels are simply too weak. On the off chance that our plans are discovered, all our efforts would be in vain...”

Cheng Zi Ang hastily nodded. He wiped the cold sweat as well as the saliva from his head and quickly backed out of the room.

Ahhh… My stupid mouth! I didn't get any credit; just a yelling. And now I am stuck with this most boring duty.

The moment Cheng Zi Ang stepped out of the room, the people outside became even more shocked. Motherf*, it's the number two man of Bu Tian Pavilion, Hall Leader Cheng!

King of Hell Chu is really cruel! He even yelled at his own deputy! Everyone felt terrified, and immediately turned their eyes elsewhere… They all thought to themselves that Hall Leader Cheng was now full of anguish; no one wanted to be the unlucky guy that fell within his gaze. They all quietly prayed: Let it not be me, let it not be me…

"Fierce Blood Hall, listen up!" Cheng Zi Ang rubbed his head as he walked out. Looking at all the guys dressed so neatly, a flame inside him suddenly burst up. He gave an earth-shattering roar, "Today, you will train three times your normal routine!"

"Motherf*…!" The assassins of Fierce Blood Hall felt as if they were just hit by lightning; they immediately fell to the ground and started foaming at the mouth! Oh mother… we're barely alive after normal training each day; now we have to do three times as much…

The people of Iron Blood Hall and Heavenly Secret Hall next to them roared with laughter.

They were holding their stomachs laughing when suddenly a great beauty gracefully walked out of Minister Chu's room… It was Wu Qian Qian.

The moment they saw the Soul Demoness appear, everyone's mouths clamped down. This elder martial sister was exceptionally beautiful, but no news that came out of her mouth was ever good news. They all became tensed.

Wu Qian Qian glanced over everyone and said with a smile, "Minister Chu just heard everyone laughing; he was very unhappy.

Minister Chu said that you are members of the same team, and yet you laughed at misery of others... He could no longer hold back... So the minister decided..."

When she got to this point, everyone's eyes were wide open. Their jaws practically dropped to the ground, and they could barely stand straight...

Sure enough, it was not good news!

"Everyone from the other two halls that are here..." Wu Qian Qian smiled beautifully and continued, "... will also train three times as much!"

"Ack!" More than ten people from the two halls coughed. Their eyes rolled and their faces turned very ugly.

Happiness just turned into sadness!

"Haha..." The assassins of Fierce Blood Hall laughed their hearts out.

Without paying attention to the crying and complaining people, Wu Qian Qian returned to the room!

"Elder Martial Sister Wu, come and look at this note... what do you think?" At some point, Chu Yang had pulled out that note, placed it in front of him and was now looking at it intently.

Wu Qian Qian thought for a moment and said, "I am afraid you have attracted Diwu Qing Rou's attention."

"Yes." Chu Yang said calmly, "Diwu Qing Rou is finally aware of the danger. Plus, he has also guessed that I would find out about Tang Xin Sheng, so he gave the order to retreat. But if you were Diwu Qing Rou, what would you do?"

"Of course I would quickly retreat and send people to help bring Tang Xin Sheng back. After that I would find an opportunity for Tang Xin Sheng to appear publicly, and, using his established fame, speak out on Iron Cloud's mistreatment of him to create

unrest with the soldiers and the public." Wu Qian Qian said without hesitation.

"Yes, and what else?" Chu Yang faintly showed approval.

"Also..." Wu Qian Qian thought hard, "Diwu Qing Rou knows that these things happened after you were instated. If you are capable of finding Tang Xin Sheng, then you will be capable of finding others. And, surely, Tang Xin Sheng is not the only spy in Iron Cloud Nation. Therefore, in order to achieve his goals, he will decide to immediately deal with you. He absolutely would not allow a great threat like you to affect his grand designs... Ah!"

When she got to this point, Wu Qian Qian was startled. He eyes widened as she looked at Chu Yang, "Chu Yang, you are currently in great danger!"

"Danger... Yes." Chu Yang smiled and said, "Elder martial sister is really good in figuring out these two points... Can you think of anything else?"

"There's more?" Wu Qian Qian frowned and concentrated for a while. Then she shook her head, "I cannot think of anything else!"

"There are at least five other points that elder martial sister did not think about." Chu Yang raised his hand with five fingers outspread.

"Five points?" Wu Qian Qian was somewhat unconvinced; how could I not have thought of so much?

"First, elder martial should note that before this note arrived, Tang Xin Sheng had already disappeared." Chu Yang said, "This proves that Tang Xin Sheng is especially vigilant; even more than that, he is incredibly intelligent. He had already sensed that he was in great danger beforehand. A character like this is extremely dangerous!"

"With the speed of Invisible Falcon, it would have taken one and a half days to get here. And Diwu Qing Rou wrote really sloppily;

this proves that he already guessed that Tang Xin Sheng was in danger before receiving the news. That was why he immediately wrote and sent this note at the very moment the news reached Great Zhao…"

"Diwu Qing Rou's reaction was extremely fast and decisive. If we are to face him in the future, we must be very mindful of this. His sloppy handwriting tells us that he was in haste. With his powerful position, that he was hasty like that tells us the importance of Tang Xin Sheng to him. Because of this point, it would be very useful for us to capture Tang Xin Sheng. This is point number two." Chu Yang said.

"Third, Diwu Qing Rou only wrote two words, dangerous situation, but he did not say what must be done. In other words, he still has some hope that I would not find out about Tang Xin Sheng. Or, that he wanted to let Tang Xin Sheng, himself, make a decision." Chu Yang smiled and raised up three fingers, "We only need to capture Tang Xin Sheng; he will be our greatest opportunity!"

Wu Qian Qian nodded in agreement, she absolutely did not think about these points. Her admiration for Chu Yang had went up a few more notches.

"No matter what Tang Xin Sheng decides, Diwu Qing Rou already knows about my existence. With Diwu Qing Rou's character, he would never allow someone like me to continue living. This was a point you already stated. But, who would he send to deal with me? In addition, to also assist Tang Xin Sheng?"

Chu Yang said casually, "Our Bu Tian Pavilion has Revered Martial Artists. Plus, there are as many martial masters in Iron Cloud as there are clouds in the sky. He would send someone he is certain would finish the job. So I would guess that he will send one of the four peak-level masters from the Golden Horse Riders Department; maybe even two to work together…"

He said each word with great gravity, “At the very least there will be one King level master! Moreover, he will be acting in secret to assassinate me! Diwu Qing Rou definitely intends to kill with one blow and not give me any chance to fight back.”

“Fifth, Tang Xin Sheng might have disappeared, but he still left his family behind. This proves that he left in haste. There are two intentions: one, he wants to paralyze our actions against him; and, two, he still hopes to return. In other words, Tang Xin Sheng, still has not been able to verify whether we are watching him. And these are just my hunches: He is not hiding very far away; he is still somewhere in Iron Cloud Citadel. Moreover, he must have his own people around him. Even if he is a famed character, going far away will increase the chance of him running into enemies. That’s why he won’t go far. Plus, he still has hope that he would be lucky!”

Chu Yang coldly smiled and said, “Therefore, we just need to carefully deploy our plans and Tang Xin Sheng would still fall into our hands.”

Chapter 117: Grave situation

“What we need to be mindful of now is not arousing his suspicion. Someone like Tang Xin Sheng has countless ways to leave Iron Cloud Citadel.” Chu Yang pondered, “Moreover, whether Tang Xin Sheng is only a scholar or is also a martial arts master, we still have not yet been able to verify. We need to notify Heavenly Secret Hall to carefully investigate it.”

“I had missed so much!” Wu Qian Qian gasped. Chu Yang had thoroughly analyzed Tang Xin Sheng and Diwu Qing Rou’s psyche all at once.

Wu Qian Qian suddenly felt that if Chu Yang managed to capture Tang Xin Sheng, then Diwu Qing Rou would suffer a great blow! Of course, that was if Chu Yang’s analysis was accurate.

But Chu Yang missed one thing in his analysis, and Wu Qian Qian was keen enough to notice it, “Chu Yang, you still have not talked about how you would deal with a King level master if the enemy does indeed send one? How would we stop him? What do we need to arrange?”

Chu Yang slightly rubbed his temples, and frowned, “This is also something I am worried about. We don’t have a King level master here, so if the enemy sends a King level master, we would have no way to deal with him.”

Chu Yang sighed, “The prince must have one next to him; otherwise, Diwu Qing Rou would have assassinated the prince right here. But if he is sent to protect me then the prince would be in danger. We cannot risk this.”

Wu Qian Qian’s countenance slightly turned pale, “Is there no way at all?”

With a serious look, Chu Yang slowly said, “I can only hope that he does not come too quickly...” Then he slightly shook his head,

“With Diwu Qing Rou’s quick and decisive personality, this person is probably already on his way here…”

Wu Qian Qian’s heart suddenly became heavy; looking at Chu Yang, her eyes were almost in tears.

She knew that Chu Yang only had the cultivation level of Martial Warrior; if he ran into a King level assassin, his ability to fight back would be virtually nonexistent! In the face of a King level assassin, Bu Tian Pavilion, in its current state, was nothing but an empty threat!

In his mind, Chu Yang laughed bitterly.

If he was right about this, then Chu Yang had absolutely no protection by his side. Gu Du Xing had gone out to recruit and who knew when he would come back. Mo Cheng Yu was currently seriously injured, and would surely be unable to recover quickly. And even if he had the ability to fight, he still had to guard against the Hei Mo clan…

As for Revered Saber Artist Cheng Zi Ang… Chu Yang guessed that he would just be an appetizer for a King level master…

On the off chance that the masters from Hei Mo clan and Golden Horse Riders Department found their way there at the same time, it would be disastrous! Fighting more than three King level masters at the same time, forget about the cultivation of a Martial Warrior, even the Chu Yang from the previous life would not be able to fight back.

Moreover, besides Diwu Qing Rou and the Hei Mo clan, there was likely to be the Yan clan as well…

This was really a big headache.

Chu Yang closed his eyes and concentrated. He wanted to find from amongst this chaos a way to avoid the danger or solve this crisis…

“These are only our guesses. It might not be a King level master

that will come…” Wu Qian Qian said weakly.

“Not possible. Even we could think of this, so could Diwu Qing Rou. With Diwu Qing Rou’s wisdom, he has planned more than what we could even think of; he would surely not leave out anything!” Chu Yang said lightly.

Comprehensive planner, Diwu Qing Rou was currently very deserving of these words. Mo Tian Ji was still a brat right now, nowhere near the ability of the “master of calculation and manipulation.” Meanwhile, Diwu Qing Rou had accumulated years of experience in this realm.

And how could he not think back to this?

Chu Yang quietly thought; his eyebrows tightly knitted together. After a long while, not one little thought was willing to jump out of his head.

In terms of intelligence and strategy, Chu Yang was not as good as Diwu Qing Rou. But he was not helpless either.

But facing an absolute force, he could not think of anything.

Hiding? Hiding is not an option.

Tie Bu Tian also did not have the ability to protect him. Chu Yang guessed that even if there were martial experts next to Tie Bu Tian, there would be at most one or two people only.

If these people went to protect him, then there would be no one next to the prince. There were probably some next to Tie Long Cheng as well… but he could not count on this. And his Bu Tian Pavilion simply did not have enough strength.

The only hope now was the Mo clan. But Chu Yang understood the Mo clan’s heartlessness too well. They would not necessarily help him just because he saved Mo Qing Wu’s life.

In addition, the Mo clan also included Mo Tian Ji. Right now, Chu Yang had mixed feelings about Mo Tian Ji; it was a tangled

mess.

However, there was one thing that he was sure of. If Mo Tian Ji wanted to protect Chu Yang because he saved his little sister, Chu Yang would flatly refuse it. This would offend his manly ego. Chu Yang would never accept help from Mo Tian Ji.

His only advantage right was the web of deception he had worked hard to create. It ensured that very few people would know his true face. In other words, this was the only thing that he could use to deal with the King level master.

“When we get to the mountain, there’ll be a way through.” Chu Yang simply could not figure it out yet. He stood up and stretched, “So what if it is a King level master? The person who will die might not be me!”

With Nine Tribulations Sword in hand, the assassin only needed to get close and Chu Yang would have a chance; it was not written in stone that he could not kill a King level master!

“Oh! Chu Yang! The ranking contest at Beyond the Heavens Sect has ended; do you want to know the results?” Wu Qian Qian tried to change the subject to help Chu Yang relax.

“Huh? How was Tan Tan?” Chu Yang’s mind just returned to reality. Now that he heard what Wu Qian Qian said, he suddenly felt those words ‘Beyond the Heavens Sect’ had become so distant… Master… Junior martial brother…

“This ranking contest was especially cruel.” Wu Qian Qian said, “Many of the martial uncles’ disciples suffered fatal wounds… Tan Tan did not participate…”

“Oh, among the dead ones, I am sure the disciples of second martial uncle, fourth martial uncle, and sixth martial uncle were the majority?” Chu Yang smiled.

“Aah, how do you know?” Wu Qian Qian’s eyes widened.

“How can I not know…” Chu Yang laughed bitterly on the inside.

The spies in Beyond the Heaven Sect were probably these three people. Li Jinsong was already verified, the other two were most suspicious.

“The incentives for winning this time is much greater than the other times.” Wu Qian Qian blinked a few times in envy, “When I heard about it, I almost ran home to participate in the ranking contest...”

Chu Yang chuckled internally. First put out a big prize, then give great status in the sect. This would make the disciples of those guys kill each other... With Wu Yun Liang’s manipulations, these things are not difficult at all.

It seems that Wu Yun Liang has started to clean up Beyond the Heavens Sect already. And Tan Tan did not participate in this probably because he wants to stay focused.

At the time Wu Yun Liang started to cleanse the sect, Chu Yang had just arrived at Iron Cloud. It was the beginning of the greatest trap, but also the most dangerous time for Beyond the Heavens Sect.

I only hope... time would pass a little more slowly.

After thinking for a while, Chu Yang realized that there was no certainty at all...

“Let’s capture Tang Xin Sheng first then!” Chu Yang sighed and casually walked out the door. Chu Yang was filled with worries, but once he let go, everything immediately went back to its uneventful state.

Only Wu Qian Qian was sitting alone in the room, worrying. She struggled to figure out how she could help Chu Yang avoid this tragedy.

Thinking about how Chu Yang could die, it suddenly became heart-wrenching for Wu Qian Qian.

She did not know why Chu Yang was expelled from the sect; she

also did not know why he came to Iron Cloud after that. However, she knew well that it would be hard to revitalize Beyond the Heavens Sect without Chu Yang! Chu Yang being able to achieve such a position in Iron Cloud was the greatest thing for Beyond the Heavens Sect!

Chu Yang cannot die!

This thought might have stemmed from other sentiments as well. Wu Qian Qian also did not know why she was so emotional. Her eyes did not stop moving as she thought hard.

In the end...

Wu Qian Qian's eyes stopped as she stared at the two things that represented King of Hell Chu: a black cloak and a ferocious mask.

Whenever Chu Yang left, he put back on his strange appearance and wandered the streets as usual.

Tang Xin Sheng lived in an official's manor that looked extremely ordinary in Iron Cloud Citadel. From the outside, it was no different from a commoner's home. No one would have known that this was the residence of a royal court official.

There was only a red plaque with two words 'Tang Manor' at the entrance to show the more than ordinary status of the people in the manor.

It was a relatively large house with three sections. The manor's entrance was on a road that ran north and south, next to a fork on the road.

Normally, officials would not choose such a location for their manors. This location was noisy and chaotic. Most officials would prefer peaceful locations, and avoid danger.

On the right of this residential area, there were a group of manors of other officials, but they were not very close. Compared to the manors of other officials, Tang Manor was essentially on its own.

Behind the manor, there was a wooded area that spread outward.

After looking at the position and location of the manor, Chu Yang could not help but sigh. This place was clearly designed for easy communication with others, and convenient escape.

But, normally, officials' lodgings were arranged by the royal court. How did Tang Xin Sheng manage to get this place?

At the fork in the road, there was a ragged old man with shaky hands and bad sight. He had a little stall with several kilograms of watermelon seeds. At a big tree not far from there, there were two old men completely absorbed in a game of chess; it was as if they did not pay the least bit of attention to the noisy surroundings.

Chu Yang slowly walked forward, and grabbed a handful of watermelon seeds and tossed them back and forth. His action and expression were really rude; his eyes shifted back and forth as he asked, "Old man, do your seeds have any kernels?"

The old man quickly bowed his head and said, "Young master, what's the point of selling them if they don't have kernels? If that was the case, wouldn't that make me a swindler?"

"Look, this one is completely empty..." Chu Yang pinched one and cracked it open.

"This one is a little small, haha..." The old man smiled embarrassingly and said, "Young master can look at another one. This one is good, you see... As for this one, it's still a little young... Kakaka..."

"Ah..." Chu Yang tried a little and tossed the old man a few coins. This old man was none other than Cheng Zi Ang in disguise. Chu Yang's questions were really about the current situation. Whether the watermelon seeds have kernels or not was a code.

"You can check the watermelon seed and see..." In other words, you could check west of the house, but chances are you will not reap anything. (TLN: Watermelon has another name with the

word west in it)

Chapter 118: Staying won't work, leaving is not okay

Since Chu Yang arrived, he still continued to think about Cheng Zi Ang's answer. He became more and more suspicious. Young watermelon seed? Is this not...

With one sweep of the chaotic surroundings, Chu Yang asked himself: If I am Tang Xin Sheng, what would I do? How would I hide?

Chu Yang started to analyze deeper from Tang Xin Sheng's perspective...

The situation is still uncertain; Bu Tian Pavilion has not started any actions against me yet. I just need to be careful. First, I will hide and watch their reactions. If there is something, then I will immediately escape. Otherwise, I will come back and tell everyone that I went to see some friends... Ummm, this is Tang Xin Sheng's mentality.

So, Tang Xin Sheng is still around here, watching for any movements at Tang Manor. Around here, the roads extend in many directions. If I want to watch the situation at Tang Manor, where would I position myself?

Chu Yang thought: Cheng Zi Ang will definitely not choose the best location to avoid people's attention. The best position would be monitored; people would be watching. The worst position would be the same! If Cheng Zi Ang didn't choose those positions, then Tang Xin Sheng, in all his wisdom, will not either!

Then he will choose something slightly less ideal. The position that Cheng Zi Ang currently occupies is such.

Chu Yang's eyes swept around, searching for the best positions to watch Tang Manor. If the first two are not okay, then it must be the third!

Chu Yang looked in the direction of the two old men playing chess under the tree.

The two both had white hair. They looked to be more than sixty; their faces were full of wrinkles. The two were concentrating on the chess board in front of them. Between the two, the one facing Chu Yang was a little relaxed and content. He fanned himself with a paper fan. The other person had his head down; his face pensive. It was as if he was trying his hardest to find a way to break his opponent's formation.

These two old men were in great spirits. They were so old, and can still sit so comfortably like that...

Chu Yang's mind was piqued. He gave Cheng Zi Ang a mysterious wink.

"Two brothers, you must be tired from playing chess. Have some watermelon seeds! Haha!" Cheng Zi Ang staggered over. With a humble smile, he placed a handful of watermelon seeds on the table. He said with an envious voice, "You two are really lucky; you have been playing chess for two consecutive days and don't have to worry about a thing. Not like me, at this age and I still have to work hard all day to make a living..."

The man with the content face smiled and said, "You are also very lucky! Is not having a healthy body the greatest blessing of all?" His voice was old but exceedingly graceful.

Cheng Zi Ang nodded repeatedly in agreement, and returned to his old spot.

Played chess for two consecutive days... Chu Yang had an epiphany. He immediately came to a conclusion. Looking at the tree trunk, he leisurely walked over to the two old men playing chess. Then he bent down and looked at the chess board.

"This setup is not easily to break out of..." Chu Yang clicked his tongue over and over again, "Good! This is really good..."

The old man contemplating immediately turned and glared, “What nonsense are you talking about? Do you even know how to play chess?” It seemed as if all the suppressed anger just spilled out on this nosy brat.

“Uh. Look at this position; staying won’t work, and leaving is not okay. The middle is even worse. The opponent’s setup is quite sharp. Here as well; at first glance, it looks like a good position, but it’s filled with hidden danger. You truly cannot break out…” Chu Yang opened his fan, and fanned. Then he folded it up again, and pointed to a spot on the chess board.

Chu Yang’s words made Cheng Zi Ang jump! He clearly was clueless about chess, but those words of Chu Yang were implying something else… Motherf*… Isn’t he talking about Tang Xin Sheng’s current situation?

Could it be that I have been sitting here for two days and the target was just behind me? Thinking of this, Hall Leader Cheng just wanted to stuff his head into his crotch…

He had vowed that he would capture Tang Xin Sheng no matter what, but he could not even discover the target sitting right behind him… This… this… is truly embarrassing.

“Huh? In your opinion… youngster, what should be done?” That content old man smiled and asked Chu Yang.

“In my humble opinion, this game… you should let it fly!” The paper fan on Chu Yang’s hand opened once again, and he fanned it a few times. He said eloquently, “Even a little delay would not be good. Don’t you think that’s right? Official Tang!”

The moment Chu Yang finished the atmosphere suddenly became tense. The other old man next to Chu Yang suddenly stiffened his back.

Cheng Zi Ang immediately stood up, and quickly turned to look at the old man behind him in disbelief; his face became red as

blood.

This is too shameful! I should just die!

I can't believe I made such a mistake...

The countenance of the old man facing Chu Yang did not change. He calmly said, "Fly how? There is a method? Your words are too enigmatic for me to understand..."

"I also find it hard to understand... there is also some disbelief as well." Chu Yang chuckled, "I didn't understand the phrase 'Finding by sheer luck after searching far and wide' until now. Official Tang, don't you think my words made a lot of sense?"

The white haired old man flashed a smile in his eyes and said, "I still don't understand; why do you keep insisting that I am Official Tang?"

"Looking up, the country spreads for thousands of miles, the blue sky is endless... Looking down, there's not much fame and glory, only a handful of sand..." Chu Yang said casually.

These two sentences were written by Tang Xin Sheng when a big general of Iron Cloud, an Iron Soul, died in battle. When Chu Yang read it, it seemed to have a different added meaning.

It also completely dispelled any denial on Tang Xin Sheng's part.

His cover had been seen through, any denial would just be a laughing matter.

Tang Xin Sheng stood up and smiled, "Your memory is truly good."

"I am flattered." Cupping his hands together, Chu Yang smiled. (TLN: You guys have read enough to know the cupping hands thingright?)

"Surely you must be the legendary Minister of Bu Tian Pavilion, King of Hell Chu, right?" Tang Xin Sheng remained calm as before, without the least bit of anxiety. But as he said this, he immediately

showed a trace of despair.

It's King of Hell Chu, again!

He is the most ferocious man in Iron Cloud!

"I do not dare; that vulgar nickname has soiled Official Tang's ears." Chu Yang said humbly.

"I never thought such a fierce name amongst the people, one sword that sheds blood in Iron Cloud, King of Hell Chu would turn out to be so young and handsome like this!" Tang Xin Sheng said spiritedly; his voice was cool and clear, "But I still don't understand how you found me. How did you determine that I would be here?"

"I dared not determine; I was only hoping." Chu Yang said frankly, "If I tried this method with idiots, it would be useless. But with one of incredible intelligence like Official Tang, I had to test my fortune. I originally only came to look around, but when I got here, I was sure that you are Tang Xin Sheng!"

"Huh?" Tang Xin Sheng felt really curious, and looked at him with a suspicious gaze.

"You can easily watch Tang Manor from here. Other places are also good, but they would bring more attention. And there is a great tree to provide shade here; there have always been people playing chess under it. Clearly, Official Tang had planned this early on. Once you are in disguise, sitting here would not bring any attention..." Chu Yang smiled.

"Yes." Tang Xin Sheng showed a trace of admiration as his gaze gradually sharpened.

"And Official Tang was still not sure if I would make a move on you or not. So this is a good position to watch for any movements. It might be a little dangerous, but you can also wait for the support of your people here. Plus, if anything was to happen inside your home, you can easily glance over and see."

“Official Tang is calm and resourceful. The most dangerous place is also the safest place. Official Tang must know this. The truth is, if Official Tang goes straight to Bu Tian Pavilion that would be the safest!” Chu Yang smiled gently, “So, I would like to invite Official Tang to the safest hiding place!”

Tang Xin Sheng shook his head and chuckled with amusement, “Not bad. You are worthy of the name King of Hell Chu.” He paused a little, and his eyes narrowed, “But why didn’t you make a move right away, instead of talking nonsense with me?”

“You should know that loose lips sink ships. You are the famed King of Hell Chu, how could you not know this?” Tang Xin Sheng’s pupils constricted and shot a radiance as sharp as a needle.

“Because there was something unexpected!” Chu Yang calmly smiled and said, “Because I did not anticipate that a scholarly official like you would be a top level martial master! I had some uncertainties.”

“And Official Tang did not make a move probably because of anger.” Chu Yang laughed, “Your perfect plans were foiled by another. Plus, your cover was carefully cultivated, and it was still discovered. This is insulting to an intelligent person like you! I am sure Official Tang would rather die than suffer a humiliation like this!”

“So Official Tang toyed with me.” Chu Yang mocked, “Official Tang wanted to wait until after I revealed everything. And at my most triumphant moment, you would humiliate me. After which, you would use your incredible martial skill to escape!”

“Or directly kill me right on the spot!” Chu Yang said casually, “Official Tang, did I get anything wrong?”

“Well said!” Tang Xin Sheng slowly stood up and said, “I have painstakingly planned for thirteen years, and you destroyed everything in just a moment. And you even come here yourself. For this humiliation, how could I not kill you?”

He grunted coldly, “Bu Tian Pavilion is only a toy in my eyes. If you don’t have the ability to capture me, then you might as well prepare to be humiliated!”

Chu Yang’s guess was correct. It was really Tang Xin Sheng’s plan if the worst was to happen. Tang Xin Sheng was a martial expert. Moreover, he did not even care about Cheng Zi Ang. His plan was aimed at killing Chu Yang!

Chu Yang wanted to capture him, and he wanted to kill Chu Yang.

This was the only oversight in Chu Yang’s plan.

Chapter 119: Calculating to death

“That’s why I waited. Plus, I wanted to have a relaxing conversation with Official Tang.” Chu Yang smiled as his folding fan gently moved. From beginning to end, he maintained his composure and did not cease to fan himself, “This is not a delay tactic; I truly want to have a heart to heart with Official Tang.”

While Chu Yang said it was not a delay tactic, at this moment, people in black appeared out of nowhere in all four directions. They were the Fierce Blood assassins of Bu Tian Pavilion, flanking from all sides. Their coordinated action was completely contrary to Chu Yang’s words; everyone watching saw right through his ridiculous lie.

“You think you can stop me with these people?” Tang Xin Sheng chuckled and said, “Minister Chu, you dared bring your precious body so close to me like this?”

“Yes, I couldn’t help it.” Chu Yang did not know what else to do besides swing his fan, “And yet being close is not necessarily a bad thing. There is Crisp Bone Rapture Powder in this fan. Surely Official Tang has heard of this, right?”

“Crisp Bone Rapture Powder?” Tang Xin Sheng’s countenance changed, “This… This is one of the top poisons?”

Since his identity was exposed, Tang Xin Sheng had not shown any fear until now.

“What did you say about Crisp Bone Rapture Powder? It’s just a small gift I have for Official Tang to commemorate our first meeting. It’s not much; just a token of my sincerity. I hope Official Tang does not take offense.”

“Perhaps Official Tang did not notice that since I arrived, I remained upwind.” Chu Yang smiled, and patiently explained, “And every time I moved, I only gently fanned at the moment

when the wind was gentle. If the wind was too strong, the powder would be dispersed in the wind."

Chu Yang smiled happily; his eyes almost closed, "Official Tang is knowledgeable; of course, you know that the wind is unpredictable and water is impermanent. Regardless of the wind, this poison does not differentiate between big and small or old and young."

"So I took the liberties of standing on the side to enjoy the summer breeze and have a good chat with Official Tang; the longer the better. With more time, Official Tang could enjoy more Crisp Bone Rapture powder."

Chu Yang gently continued, "I hope Official Tang doesn't blame me for talking too much. In fact, I am usually a man of few words..."

Tang Xin Sheng's eyes flashed an icy gaze as he raised his two hands. Only a swoosh was heard; it did not come from his throat but his body. His robe flew up as if there was a strong wind. Dust flew and fell back to the ground.

Tang Xin Sheng felt the energy in his body start to dissipate; not only that, it was dissipating at an increasingly fast rate!

"Crisp Bone Rapture Powder is colorless and odorless, a wonderful powder." Chu Yang continued to gently fan, "Whoever inhales it would lose all bodily strength; all of their energy would dissipate; the more they try to activate their martial energy to fight back, the quicker this dissipation will be. Of course, a little bit of this powder does not have a great effect on Official Tang, but what about this brother right in front of me? It can cause death like this..."

Chu Yang smiled and slowly reached out his left arm. He gently grabbed the hair of the man with his back towards him. Then he slowly pulled him up. His right arm reached down to his waist and pulled a glistening small saber out. With his eyes watching Tang Xin Sheng, he smiled and said, "Death is the end. Dying in a state

of unconsciousness is gentle like a passing cloud and truly serene."

After that, his right hand pulled the saber hard across the man's throat. Fresh blood sprayed out in Tang Xin Sheng's direction. Chu Yang looked at a stunned Tang Xin Sheng. He swung the small saber one full circle as he kicked the headless corpse far away. At this time, the gray haired head of Tang Xin Sheng's underling was swinging back and forth from Chu Yang's hand. His eyes were still opened in hopelessness, and seemed to be filled with disbelief as well.

"Yuck..., this is really bloody." Chu Yang conveniently tossed the head forward and smiled, "Official Tang, look at that. Your bodyguard was a Martial Great Master, right? His face still looks so good even after he died..."

This man was grabbed by Chu Yang, and died willingly. From beginning to end, he did not give the slightest resistance. He was killed as easily as a chicken. No, even chickens could not be easily captured and killed like that.

"How did you do it?" Tang Xin Sheng caught his bodyguard's head, and looked at Chu Yang with hatred. He still could not believe that his best man would die so easily. He had heard that Crisp Bone Rapture Powder was powerful, but it could not be so powerful to make a Martial Great Master willingly get his head chopped off.

"When I was standing on the side, I intentionally stood behind his back. Haha..." Chu Yang continued, "At that time you two were on guard and did not want to make any rash moves. I kept shaking out Crisp Bone Rapture Powder, and he inhaled most of it... And when I exposed your identity, he immediately activated his martial energy. Haha, Official Tang, like I already said, whoever inhaled this power, the more they try to activate their martial energy, the more quickly it will dissipate."

"He... Why didn't he resist?" Tang Xin Sheng suddenly realized

the answer; he was only mad that he could not slap himself. At that time, he and Chu Yang was busy insulting each other. He thought he had King of Hell Chu in the palm of his hand, and was slowly taunting him. How could his bodyguard have dared to interrupt him?

“Then, I waited until he could barely fight, and I just let out a little killing aura...” Chu Yang said shamefully, “My cultivation is actually not high at all, and my killing aura is not that strong. I just tried hard to put him on high guard; plus, I was standing behind him... He did not dare turn around because he was worried that the moment he turned, I would make my move first. So the only thing he could do was activate his martial energy and be on high guard... The result is, hahaha...”

Of course, the truth was not like that. Chu Yang actually waited for the moment the bodyguard could barely hold on and brought Nine Tribulations Sword’s tip to his finger. From the back, he gently pushed that sharp sword tip into that man’s heart. The man became a ghost on the spot, but his body did not collapse because Chu Yang supported it with his knee.

“King of Hell Chu! Even though my martial energy is currently dissipating, I will still kill a lowlife like you!” Tang Xin Sheng shouted and immediately leapt into the air.

Cheng Zi Ang was surprised and immediately jumped, ready to face the enemy. His eyes were staring intensely at the figure in the air.

But the next moment, the most unbelievable thing happened. Tang Xin Sheng was still in the air when his body started to shake. There was a tortured look on his face. He turned purple as he yelled painfully, “This... How could this be?”

Before he even finished, he plopped on the chess board like a broken winged bird. The board immediately broke apart, and countless black and white pieces flew in all directions...

Just a little earlier, Official Tang was majestic and full of confidence, a martial master. Now he had fallen in a disheveled state, filled with indescribable pain.

“Oh, Official Tang, I am really sorry. I forgot to tell you; a person poisoned with Crisp Bone Rapture Powder should not be near blood. Because once you inhale the smell of blood, as long as you have not reached King level and formed a stable master state... Then no matter how powerful your martial energy is, the smell of blood will immediately cause you to completely lose your martial cultivation.”

“I was worried that Official Tang did not inhale enough so I tossed the bloody head your way. And Official Tang is definitely someone with loyalty; you immediately held the head in your chest. Thanks to that, the smell of blood continued to be with you...” Chu Yang mocked, “This is my fault! I really cannot compare myself to someone with understanding and wisdom like you.” He smiled and said, “I had no choice but to use this ‘pain and suffering’ tactic! Didn’t Official Tang use this before??? Hahaha...”

(TLN: Basically, this kind of tactic is one that use mainly pain and suffering to touch people’s emotions. In case you don’t remember. Killed a whole village, and became poor orphaned lone survivor.)

“I discovered Official Tang because of Crisp Bone Rapture Powder as well. Ordinary people would immediately collapse after inhaling this powder. Only you two were as lucid as ever; even to the point where you did not even show any symptoms. You are truly skilled... The only thing was, why would such skilled people come here just to play chess? Moreover, Official Tang’s voice was especially calm; so I suspected that you were waiting for me here...”

Chu Yang said these words to answer the questions in Tang Xin Sheng’s mind, and, at the same time, help clear out any doubts Cheng Zi Ang had: So that’s it!

Lying on the ground, Tang Xin Sheng lifted his head with great efforts and stared hatefully at Chu Yang. If a gaze could kill, then Chu Yang would have been dead long ago, and his bones would have already turned to dust...

After a long while, Tang Xin Sheng struggled to stand up. He sighed and said quietly, “You are definitely skilled! I can’t believe as a ninth grade Revered Martial Artist, I lost to you without being able to make one move! Haha, fair game, fair game...! Hahaha...” When he finished, his whole body went limp and he plopped to the ground.

At this time, he clearly was disheartened. He thought of everything, and yet, his opponent planned one better...

If before... When I discovered the possibility of danger, if I left, then I would be thousands of miles from here. If I trusted my intuition when I saw Cheng Zi Ang... If I did not have the desire to kill Chu Yang and left right away, then I would be free right now.

Even at the moment I saw Chu Yang and I made a quick decision to leave immediately, then I would still be safe.

In the worst case scenario, if I did not leave right away but made my move immediately, this King of Hell Chu could have died by my hands.

However, time and time again, I did not act as I should have. Instead, I wanted to have a battle of wits and compare strategies with my opponent. I just wanted to repay my opponent with a thousand times the humiliation he dealt me...

I can’t believe the outcome was reversed, and my plan, so close to fruition, has failed. Even my own life is now in the hands of another!

The enemy has calculated with extreme precision. He secretly made his move while still acting nonchalant!

Tang Xin Sheng had to admit defeat in front of Chu Yang and

accept his situation. But in his heart, there was a strong frustration from this utter defeat. He was exceedingly resourceful, and a meticulous tactician. Everything was in the palm of his hand. He alone entered Iron Cloud. With his intelligence and the support of the spy network, he advanced quickly in rank. All the Iron Cloud officials were pawns in his hands. He was a spy who was hailed as a living saint in Iron Cloud Nation.

If he was not exposed so early, then when Diwu Qing Rou starts a war after Tie Bu Tian is killed, Iron Cloud would be in a state of chaos like a snake without a head. At the moment, this living saint only needs to stir the people to topple Iron Cloud.

Ten thousand things were already prepared; they were just waiting for the right moment. But now, the world had slipped from his grasp.

Moreover, the person that defeated him was a boy this young! How could Tang Xin Sheng have admitted defeat? It was this stubbornness that made him abandon thoughts of escaping and determined to seek revenge.

Chapter 120: King of Hell Chu's Fury

Tang Xin Sheng was a proud man! When people like him faced an opponent, they would find hundreds of ways to win back their strategizing reputation.

So Tang Xin Sheng vowed to give Chu Yang the greatest humiliation... a humiliation when he is at the height of his satisfaction. He thought his plans were perfect; the moment Chu Yang discovered him would also be the moment of Chu Yang's downfall... plus, he, himself, would also kill Chu Yang afterward.

For an intelligent man, a failed strategy had the greatest impact.

Down to the very core of his being, Tang Xin Sheng hated Chu Yang! More than ten years of planning and manipulation... but Chu Yang just appeared, and everything was suddenly gone...

Chu Yang had used his indignation and blind thirst for revenge to set up a trap for him to crawl into. And by the time he opened his eyes, there was nowhere to turn to.

Before Tang Xin Sheng even thought about a battle of wits with Chu Yang, Chu Yang had already made his move, carefully calculating every little detail to expose his true identity. And when he wanted to have a battle of wits, his opponent had used force. Finally, when he wanted to use his martial arts, he no longer could...

Unscrupulous? Clearly his methods were unscrupulous... But Chu Yang's strategies had left Tang Xin Sheng in awe. The moment he admitted his true identity to Chu Yang, Chu Yang had led him by the nose! He was supposed to be the one in control of the situation, but somehow, in a blink of an eye that control was completely in Chu Yang's hands.

In the end, Tang Xin Sheng asked himself: If I was in his position, would I be able to do the same thing? Could I use the cultivation of

a Martial Warrior to defeat and capture a ninth grade Revered Martial Artist? Furthermore, without the aid of anyone else...

The answer was of course: I would not be able to.

I was not defeated in martial arts, but in tactics! With my wisdom and I still got calculated to death by someone else without even noticing... what is there to say?

So Tang Xing Sheng sighed and simply gave up! He did not even curse at Chu Yang; he just closed his eyes and let go of any resistance.

There was one thing that Tang Xin Sheng did not know... It was his desire for revenge along with his arrogance that made him leave his manor before receiving word from Diwu Qing Rou. This had led to Diwu Qing Rou's note falling into Chu Yang's hands.

This was his biggest mistake...

When Chu Yang saw Tang Xin Sheng had gone from feeling extreme hatred to a sudden calmness, he felt a slight chill.

This Tang Xin Sheng had fallen into a state of utter despair and yet he could still remain calm. He was able to instantly quell his anger... this was indeed a powerful person!

No wonder Diwu Qing Rou had placed so much hope on him.

"People! Take this old man away! Lock him in Bu Tian Pavilion, and use the heaviest shackles!" The person giving orders was Cheng Zi Ang. As for Chu Yang, he had quietly moved away from the center of attention, and left without a trace. By the time the black outfitted assassins of Bu Tian Pavilion converged, they could only catch a glimpse of the back of a mysterious figure...

Besides Cheng Zi Ang, no one knew that young man was none other than the famed King of Hell Chu...

Cheng Zi Ang's eyes showed a trace of respect as he looked at Chu Yang's silhouette. Minister Chu is definitely Minister Chu! Just by

laughing and talking, he made his enemies powerless. Without any commotion, he captured the mastermind! With just the cultivation of Martial Warrior, and he accomplished this much; who would dare to compare?

Cheng Zi Ang suddenly shuddered. Cold sweat poured out; it was not until now that he felt terrified. Ninth grade Revered Martial Artist! This weak looking scholar, Tang Xin Sheng, is a ninth grade Revered Martial Artist! A high-level master!

Oh god! I am only a third grade Revered Saber Artist, and Chen Yu Tong is only a first grade Revered Martial Artist. If we got into a fight with Tang Xin Sheng... all of our people here would probably die! And after that, Tang Xin Sheng will merrily walk away! Ninth grade Revered Martial Artist... If he wanted to run, how many people in Iron Cloud Citadel could stop him? Moreover, Tang Xin Sheng is an extremely cunning person...

No wonder he was so confident and proud like that. He had the guts to actually set up a trap in front of his own home and used himself as bait to humiliate and kill King of Hell Chu.

As his thoughts reached this point, Cheng Zi Ang felt a chill from his head to his toes. He recalled the spot Chu Yang was standing at earlier. On the off chance that Tang Xin Sheng immediately took a shot at Chu Yang, he would be obliterated... there was no chance of survival!

However, at that time, Chu Yang's demeanor remained at ease as he happily talked, and did not show the least bit of stress. Chu Yang's psyche is truly... tough beyond measure...

Cheng Zi Ang did not know... Chu Yang was currently soaked in cold sweat as well...

The moment the order was given, the people in black outfits immediately grabbed that "old man," and carefully brought him back to Bu Tian Pavilion as if he was their own father.

Ah! An old man... is an old man! Tang Xin Sheng did not tell people who he was; so Cheng Zi Ang also did not reveal it since it would only cause problems.

As for Tang Xin Sheng's family, Minister Chu had told him, "Don't touch them! Leave them there!"

With these words of Chu Yang, Cheng Zi Ang was sure that not only he, but even Prince Bu Tian and General Tie Long Cheng would probably not dare to touch them...

Chu Yang returned to Bu Tian Pavilion.

The back of his shirt was drenched in cold sweat; he was scared almost to the point that his spirit would leave his body... The first thing Chu Yang did was call in all the people of Heavenly Secret Hall and yell at them. Chen Yu Tong's people were unlucky; their heads were covered in saliva, but they did not dare to say a word back!

Chu Yang's voice boomed and seemed to almost break open the roof. He angrily enlightened them, "Are you all pigs? No, pigs are more intelligent than you! Pigs do their duties well! Damn it... What should I compare you to? Grass? Or what?"

"What are you gathering information for? Just die. Telling you people to go back home and work on the farm is insulting for the hoe! You eat rice every day, but have you become grass eating cows? The whole group, damn, damn! You're so dumb even the sun and moon can't shine! Sh*t..."

King of Hell Chu's fury made all of Bu Tian's pavilion tremble in fear! The ones taking the full blow in the room had paled faces and did not dare look up. The ones standing outside were not much better either. They trembled nonstop, and their faces were ashen and anxious...

Standing in front, Chen Yu Tong suffered the worst. His whole body was soaked, but he did not dare open his mouth to say one

word.

Before, Heavenly Secret Hall had brought back the following information: Tang Xin Sheng, frail scholar, superior intelligence, first-rate tactician. Though without martial art skill, he is good at scheming and manipulation. Meticulous planner…

This information, per Chu Yang's request, was verified three times and was written by Chen Yu Tong's own hand. And this had almost caused King of Hell Chu to go see the real King of Hell.

A frail scholar was suddenly transformed into a ninth grade Revered Martial Artist! This was a difference of heaven and earth! Such an error was unforgivable. If something unfortunate had happened to King of Hell Chu, then Tie Bu Tian would probably kill all of Heavenly Secret Hall and their families…

If only it was something like "cultivation unclear" or "no one had ever witnessed him use martial power" or something of that sort… If it was like that, it would have greatly reduced the shock that Chu Yang was in today.

If it was not for Chu Yang being through countless life-threatening situations in his previous life, he would not have developed a habit of being careful and always having an exit strategy. Plus, if it was not for Chu Yang always following the mantra 'A lion should use full force even if attacking just a rabbit,' then today would have been tantamount to Chu Yang bringing a meal to Tang Xin Sheng's mouth…

Chu Yang was still startled. This is an outrage! Even though I managed to achieve my goal and return safely in the end, this mistake cannot be tolerated!

If I just let them off easily, when we face one insidious Diwu Qing Rou, the whole army could be wiped out…

As Chu Yang's roar shook the entire Bu Tian Pavilion, the savior of Chen Yu Tong's people finally arrived. Cheng Zi Ang had

triumphantly escorted Tang Xin Sheng, dressed as an old man, back to Bu Tian Pavilion.

The moment he returned, he immediately diverted King of Hell Chu's attention.

"Minister! I was fortunate to complete my task and brought back this old man to be arrested! I have come to let you know myself!" Cheng Zi Ang cockily looked at Chen Yu Tong drenched in saliva. The more he looked, the more happy he felt at another's suffering. On one hand, he was showing off his valiance; on the other hand, he was glaring at Chen Yu Tong and smiling to the point that his eyes were completely closed and exposing his full set of yellow teeth.

Nice! Really nice! Watching someone else get scolded is great.

Chen Yu Tong's mouth twitched. He glared back in anger, and quietly cursed all eight generations of Cheng Zi Ang's ancestors... Motherf*, this creep is gloating!

When Chang Zi Ang entered, Chu Yang was feeling a little thirsty from all the yelling, he picked up a cup of tea and took a gulp. Upon hearing Cheng Zi Ang reported with self-satisfaction, he immediately spit the entire thing on Cheng Zi Ang's face... after that, he fell into a coughing fit...

Cheng Zi Ang's countenance suddenly looked very interesting. He was originally elated and smiling, but in the blink of an eye, the heavens sent a torrential downpour... It was like taking a stroll in spring and getting caught by sudden rain. But why was this rain so warm??? He wiped down his face with his hand, catching a few leaves of tea with it as well. His face had become crestfallen...

He took a sneak peek at King of Hell Chu, and thought: King of Hell Chu, you are...?

"Ha ha..." Having witnessed Cheng Zi Ang's embarrassment, Chen Yu Tong suddenly felt great and unwittingly laughed. But,

after two sounds, he realized his mistake and shut his mouth. I have done a great sin, how can I be so happy? So he quickly became quiet, and glanced up to find King of Hell Chu still busy coughing. At that time he settled back to his old expression and properly put his head back down...

“Koff koff...” Chu Yang coughed for a long time before looking up with his reddened face and yelled, “You still have the nerve to stand in front of me with self-satisfaction? Let me ask you; what did I send you to do? Huh? Huh?”

Cheng Zi Ang choked as he stared in surprise. Before he had a chance to take back his elated expression, his face now had a look of surprise. His countenance was odd looking; his mouth was gaping, but it could not say a word...

“You tell me!” Chu Yang yelled angrily, “Did you do well... huh? I sent you to watch and what happened in the end? Ah! You put yourself in front of them so they could watch you? To call you a pig is too much of an insult to pigs!”

“Koff.. koff..” Chen Yu Tong coughed nonstop. This is too good; I can’t hold it down any more...

Cheng Zi Ang was red from ear to ear. His hands and feet no longer knew what to do with themselves.

“They sat behind your ass for two days! Motherf*... when you farted, they had to cover their nose. And you dare to cheerfully talk to me about watermelon seeds...?” Chu Yang was so angry, smoke almost came out of his ears.

Chapter 121: Reminder

Chu Yang almost went crazy with anger. He grinded his teeth and pointed straight at Cheng Zi Ang's face. He screamed, "You... you... you... I told you to go spy on them. I told you to deal with the enemies, and you got spied on instead. You even caused me to walk into their trap! And you still dare to stand here looking so smug!"

"You... you... you..." Chu Yang's finger trembled, and he looked as if he had trouble breathing, "Do you know how the pig's grandmother died?"

Cheng Zi Ang was scolded to the point his head was dizzy. When he suddenly heard a question, he unconsciously responded without thinking, "How did it die?"

"From stupidity!!!" Unable to contain his anger, Chu Yang screamed, "With barely any intelligence, you have the gall to come and take credit? And with that smug look on your face, too. Do you feel intelligent? And you were even arrogant enough to laugh at others? Plus... how could you... have such thick skin?!!"

"Hahahaha..." Chen Yu Tong was no longer able to contain himself. He held his stomach and fell to the floor, laughing. Tears and snot were everywhere. He smacked the floor, barely able to breathe; his whole body was convulsing.

I can't control myself anymore... Even if I were to lose my head, I must laugh.

After his burst of thunderous rage and venting everything, Chu Yang said coldly, "Do you people have anything more to say?"

Chen Yu Tong and Cheng Zi Ang answered dejectedly, "No!"

Chen Yu Tong was a little bit better off. But Cheng Zi Ang was like a cat with its ears chopped off, so shameful, he just wanted to crawl into a hole.

"If there is nothing else why the heck are you people still here?

Do you feel like you're really handsome and want me to find wives for you?!!" Chu Yang slammed into the table and made a sound like thunder. Then he roared, "Hurry and invite the prince here! Do I need to teach you this as well? Did my scolding make you feel really relaxed? Huh?!!"

They suddenly hated their fathers and mothers for giving them only two legs. With a swoosh they disappeared from the main hall without a trace.

In the small room, Wu Qian Qian had a brush in one hand, and the other held onto her stomach as she laughed uncontrollably. Straining to mute herself, she was barely able to breathe, and her shoulders shook.

It was the first time she witnessed Chu Yang so angry. If nothing else, Chu Yang's anger could cause people to laugh to death.

Of course, the victim of said anger could not laugh.

A little later, Chu Yang came in with a cup of tea. Wu Qian Qian was still dying from laughter with her whole body in a spasm. Chu Yang asked in surprise, "Is it that funny?"

Wu Qian Qian let out the word, "Mother!" Her stomach almost burst from laughter upon hearing this question. A long while after, she finally managed to control her laughter, but her shoulders still shook from time to time.

"Chu Yang... Phew..." Wu Qian Qian tried hard to hold down her laughter, "By scolding at them like that, won't it create hostility?"

"Absolutely not!" Chu Yang said confidently, "Scolding has to be artfully balanced. They both got scolded; since they are on the same boat, neither one will feel too bad. Plus, they made unforgivable mistakes. If I don't reprimand them now, they will cause bigger problems in the future."

Then Chu Yang sighed, somewhat discouraged.

Wu Qian Qian laughed, and said, "Still, you were a little hot-

tempered.”

“I had to let it out!” Chu Yang sighed, “Bu Tian Pavilion is currently not in shape to truly fight. To go against Diwu Qing Rou, they are still very lacking. Every little mistake must be immediately corrected. Over time, they will gradually grow strong for it!”

“If I am always gentle with them, I am afraid they will have the same irresponsible attitude when Diwu Qing Rou attacks...” Chu Yang took a deep breath and said, “If I scold them now, they will suffer less losses in the future...”

“You should remember that strong minds and fortified morale of soldiers do not occur naturally. They are a result of fighting and scolding!” Chu Yang said slowly.

With an ‘uh’, Wu Qian Qian became pensive about what Chu Yang had said.

Not long after, the sound of many horse hooves became louder and louder; it stopped in front of Bu Tian Pavilion. Tie Bu Tian strode in, wearing a white cloak. In his white royal attire, he was radiant, but his face was icy and his gaze was electrifying!

Behind him were two men.

Chu Yang smiled and walked out to greet him. Suddenly, his eyes perked up. He felt that those two people were not ordinary...

They were walking behind Tie Bu Tian in broad daylight but Chu Yang still got a hazy feeling. It was as if they were two shadows rather than two living beings.

When the two men walked, one would step forward with his left leg and the other one with his right; it was chaotic at first glance, but it was in perfect harmony. One would complement the other. Moreover, when the two stood in place, it gave people the feeling that the two people were one!

Their walking seemed very slow. But upon careful observation,

each step was a few yards, equivalent to seven or eight steps of an ordinary person.

They were not walking, but drifting?

And like that, the two stayed close to Tie Bu Tian. Chu Yang suddenly felt as if there was a fortified metal wall around Tie Bu Tian, a needle could not sneak through nor could water penetrate!

While Chu Yang was observing them, they were quietly judging him. At this moment, Chu Yang felt a chill over his entire body; he suddenly became anxious and the hair on his back stood on end. This kind of feeling... was like being haunted by demons, countless demons!

Chu Yang finally had to move his gaze, but he thought to himself: Those two people... geez... not simple at all! Really not simple at all!

Could it be they are the last card up Tie Bu Tian's sleeve? Are they the greatest obstacle in Diwu Qing Rou's plan to assassinate Tie Bu Tian?

He was still deep in thought when Tie Bu Tian came up to him and asked hastily, "Minister Chu, you captured that guy?"

In excitement, Tie Bu Tian had come up right next to him, almost leaning on him. Chu Yang instinctively sensed a sweet fragrance, and could not help but frown. His face showed a strange expression.

Tie Bu Tian seemed to realize this and quietly took half a step back.

"Got him!" Chu Yang rolled his eyes, "I almost lost my life today! This guy did not reveal his true self. He is actually a ninth grade Revered Martial Artist... Truly powerful!"

Tie Bu Tian's countenance became composed for a while, then he asked, "What is the death count for Bu Tian Pavilion?"

When he heard that the enemy was so powerful, he immediately assumed that Bu Tian Pavilion suffered serious damage.

“No casualties. Koff koff... I used poison!” Chu Yang coughed dryly twice and added in a low voice.

The moment these words left Chu Yang’s mouth, those two abnormal shadows watching Chu Yang suddenly viewed him with contempt. Such disdainful looks could have been easily perceived by anyone.

Chu Yang was bothered; he looked up at those two people and said, “Do you two seniors think that treating a high level master like that... using poison is desecrating the way of martial arts?”

The two did not answer; there were only four eyes icily glaring at Chu Yang.

“Amongst us, no one was his opponent. And yet, we carried on our shoulders six hundred million people of Iron Cloud. To fight fairly would have been putting food in a lion’s mouth. We were definitely not his opponent! If I did not use poison then there would be total unrest in Iron Cloud Citadel! Not using poison... do I have that luxury?” Chu Yang spoke slowly.

Their eyes showed a look of pensiveness, and their contempt gradually reduced to less than half of what it was before.

“I said these words not to explain myself to you two, but I want you to understand...” Chu Yang’s gaze was sharp as a saber as he slowly continued, “You two are guarding the prince. And the enemies have layer upon layers of tactics. If you two still hold on to that lofty martial arts ideal, the enemies will definitely succeed using unscrupulous means. Then in the future you will be sinners who caused the prince’s death!”

“You two will have to take responsibility! Complete responsibility!”

Chu Yang’s words carried clear implications. His cultivation was

not high, but his mind was extremely powerful. He carried with him his past life's mentality, and there was Nine Tribulations Transcending the Nine Heavens Technique to boot. His mind was at the level of a fourth or fifth grade Revered Martial Artist, but in front of these two, he was completely suppressed!

Mind and aura were suppressed in all aspects!

Then these two must be King level masters! High grade ones at that!

With these two next to him plus other martial masters to assist, Tie Bu Tian was as solid as Mount Tai! In all of Lower Three Heavens, anyone who tried to assassinate Tie Bu Tian would not have the power to cause him any injuries!

If Diwu Qing Rou's underlings, the four King level masters of Golden Horse Riders Department, were to try to kill Tie Bu Tian all at once, he could still be unharmed! These two might not be able to fight, but they could easily take Tie Bu Tian and run!

However, Tie Bu Tian was assassinated in the previous life! So the most likely explanation was that the enemies tricked these two people. From the contemptuous look they gave him, Chu Yang knew that they were very traditional martial artists! This was their greatest weakness, and also the greatest weakness in Tie Bu Tian's circle of protection!

These kind of people will, of course, never be able to deal with the enemies' complex schemes! If I can see this, then how could Diwu Qing Rou not see this? Moreover, that person is famous for using any means necessary to achieve his goals!

Chu Yang felt that he needed to remind them of this. Because events from the past had been changed, so who knew if Diwu Qing Rou would act even earlier than before?

"You did not do too badly!" The master on the left suddenly said. The voice was dry, as if in his entire life he normally did not talk,

“But we will never do that!”

After he finished, he closed his mouth; he closed his mouth really tightly!

Tie Bu Tian was really surprised and turned around to look. Ever since he could remember, he never saw these two shadow people say so many words to other people. They did not even bother with Second Uncle Tie Long Cheng. He certainly did not expect them to talk to Chu Yang today, much less praise him.

Even odder was that they showed a hint of apologizing and admitting their mistake.

This was really strange!

Chu Yang nodded, but thought to himself: With the mentality of you two, inverting fate will not be easy. I have to do a little more myself...

“Where is that person? Bring me to him! I want to talk to him myself!” Tie Bu Tian’s face was frosty. The entirety of Iron Cloud Citadel was deceived by this fraud for a decade! And even Tie Bu Tian was one of them!

For Tie Bu Tian, this was one of the greatest insults!

Chapter 122: Would you dare to make a bet?

“Over here.” Chu Yang led Tie Bu Tian’s group to the prison. After Cheng Zi Ang opened the door, Chu Yang, Tie Bu Tian and two other people, all four in total walked in. Everyone else remained outside.

It was completely different from the normal dark and damp cells that one would imagine. This place was dry and clean. In a corner, a steel pole as large as a person’s waist stood vertically. Tang Xin Sheng, in heavy chains, was hung there. When he saw Chu Yang, he unexpectedly smiled…

Being tied up like this was not any less comfortable than lying in bed at home. Tie Bu Tian’s appearance at this moment had helped him recover his original colors, a handsome thirty years old scholar.

Tie Bu Tian clasped his hands behind his back and slowly walked up. His eyes coldly glared at Tang Xin Sheng without even blinking.

Tang Xin Sheng smiled calmly as if it was just another gathering at the royal court with Tie Bu Tian.

“Official Tang, what is your relationship with Diwu Qing Rou?” Tie Bu Tian slowly walked to a table in the back, and slowly sat down on one of the chairs.

Without ever asking whether the man was a spy, he went directly to asking about the relationship between Tang Xin Sheng and Diwu Qing Rou. This gave the impression that he already had fully grasped Tang Xin Sheng’s situation, and there was no need for denial!

“Your majesty’s question is a little presumptuous.” Tang Xin Sheng laughed, “I, Tang Xin Sheng, might be a prisoner, but I am not the type that could be coerced to confess!”

“So you are really Great Zhao’s spy?” Tie Bu Tian closed his eyes.

“I do not want to admit it, but since your first bluff, I thought about playing a little dirty trick... hahaha... I have cultivated a strong state of mind, but I still hate to lose...” Tang Xin Sheng smiled comfortably, “But at this point, can I still deny it?”

Tie Bu Tian sighed and said, “Official Tang, you are a capable person and also a great tactician. I have always thought highly of you. I even thought about making you prime minister of Iron Cloud once the country is at peace... Hahaha, I had placed my hope in you. I can’t believe you fooled me for a decade...”

Tie Bu Tian’s words were very sincere... They made Tang Xin Sheng pensive for a moment as he reminisced about the cheerful days of the past between emperor and servant and said, “It’s true that your majesty treated me very well. But with two countries at war, to each his own master. I am also saddened by the whole thing.”

Tang Xin Sheng paused a little, then smiled and said, “The truth is, when I joined Iron Cloud, your majesty was still young; you were not able to see through my cover. As you grew older, I have already created a deep impression with you; that is why I was able to live peacefully for a decade. If I joined just now, I am afraid your majesty would have discovered me immediately.”

Then he laughed painfully, “Your majesty is clever and has a worldly state of mind... You would make a great king. Unfortunately, you were born at the wrong time, and have to go head to head with Diwu Qing Rou. No matter how good you are, you will definitely be reduced to ashes in the end.”

“Diwu Qing Rou?” Tie Bu Tian took a deep breath. His voice was sentimental, but his eyes were sharp as he spoke, “It’s true that Diwu Qing Rou is worthy of his fame. It is because of this that I need to know everything Official Tang knows. Is that clear?”

“I will never tell. Your majesty already knows my answer

beforehand.” Tang Xin Sheng smiled warmly and continued, “Your majesty, I hope you will take into account that I have not done any great damage to Iron Cloud, and let me have some dignity in my last moments.”

“Dignity?” Tie Bu Tian’s countenance changed. With mixed emotions, he sighed, stood up and walked out. He paused at the door and said casually, “Make him talk!”

Then he waved for Chu Yang and walked out without looking back. Tie Bu Tian had finally shown his fierce Iron blood side.

Chu Yang followed Tie Bu Tian out... When they were shoulder to shoulder, he could feel that this prince’s heart was also weighed down...

Inside, a series of strange sounds rang out. It was then followed by the tragic scream of Tang Xin Sheng, “Kill me!”

“Ah... ah...” After that, there was a series of painful cries, mixed with Tang Xin Sheng’s cursing, “Tie Bu Tian, you use base means to torture a powerful person; don’t you feel embarrassed? I just want to die peacefully, and you won’t even allow it?”

Tie Bu Tian stood still there; his jade face did not show any emotion.

“Senior Chu, I am really angry at this person.” Tie Bu Tian clasped his hands and quietly said, “I truly admired his ability...”

Chu Yang rolled his eyes and said, “That is only natural; an enemy that we feel sorry for is the most dangerous enemy of all! If we just look down on him, how could he create such big waves...”

“Yes.” Tie Bu Tian slightly nodded, and said, “Torturing a powerful man, a genius, like this is something I really don’t want. But I must know the information in his head. If that was not the case, I would happily give him an easy death.”

Chu Yang was silent for a moment, then he said, “There are some things in life that cannot be forced. And there some people that

would never open their mouths even if you removed their bones. Tang Xin Sheng is that kind of person. The moment I caught him, I already did not have any hope of getting anything from him. I am afraid your majesty will be disappointed."

Tie Bu Tian was silent for a long while. Then he suddenly said, "It's not certain just yet. It could be said that my two bodyguards came straight out from hell... I have absolute faith in their methods. Only, with Tang Xin Sheng, they have to be a little more cruel."

Chu Yang smiled and said, "Your majesty, just wait and see."

Tie Bu Tian laughed slightly, "Would Minister Chu like to make a bet with me?"

Chu Yang smiled, "Could it be that the prince is a gambler? What would your majesty like to bet?"

"We will bet only whether Tang Xin Sheng will talk." Tie Bu Tian said, "I bet that he will talk; if I win, Minister Chu will have to remain at Iron Cloud. I want to work with you to bring prosperity to Iron Cloud!"

Then, Tie Bu Tian turned around and looked at Chu Yang with total sincerity. After the last time he talked to Chu Yang, Tie Bu Tian had always thought that such a talent not staying in Iron Cloud was truly regrettable.

And Chu Yang's recent actions had left Tie Bu Tian even more restless!

Now, Tie Bu Tian was making another effort at it.

"I am afraid your majesty will have to be disappointed." Chu Yang smiled and slightly moved his gaze, "Good. I agree. But if I win, I want to enter the palace's medical repository and treasury to pick a few things."

Chu Yang never forgot that Mo Qing Wu's injury needed another half of a Nine Tribulations Pill.

Chu Yang's condition seemed incomparable to that of Tie Bu Tian... but they both knew well that these things were most important to each respective person.

"Good! It's a deal!" Tie Bu Tian was elated. He raised his hand to seal the deal with Chu Yang. But Chu Yang was startled when he saw Tie Bu Tian's hand. Besides the fact that it was white and extremely small and slender, it was probably just half the size of his hand.

This is a man's hand?

When Tie Bu Tian saw that Chu Yang was staring at his hand, his countenance slightly changed. And with that emotion, he said, "Do you want to make the bet or not? What are you waiting for?"

Chu Yang immediately came to, and smiled in embarrassment. At the same time, he raised his hand and clapped against Tie Bu Tian's hand.

Bam... The two hands clapped against each other.

The moment they touched, Chu Yang only felt that Tie Bu Tian's hand was extremely soft, even very tender. He could not help but smile and said, "Your majesty is really well-maintained."

Tie Bu Tian was a little startled, and pulled back his hand at the speed of lightning. He grunted coldly, "This clap is our oath. Even in death, there are no regrets. Minister Chu, you must keep your promise."

Chu Yang laughed loudly, and said with certainty, "I definitely won't lose!"

The two looked at each other; Tie Bu Tian looked at Chu Yang's fierce mask and smiled, "Your mysterious pretense, how is that working out?"

Chu Yang smiled; instead of answering he asked, "What does your majesty think? I never shoot an arrow without a target!"

Tie Bu Tian laughed.

After a long time, the cries in the prison cell became softer and softer; but it turned into more of a trembling sound...

After a while longer, a shadow gently walked out. His face was pensive, and his eyes had a hint of anger.

“How is it?” Tie Bu Tian did not look back but asked confidently.

“Mouth of steel, cannot be opened.” That shadow said shamefully.

“Huh?” Tie Bu Tian turned in surprise, “Nothing worked?”

The shadow nodded. With anger and admiration in his eyes, he said, “Such stubbornness is rare.”

Tie Bu Tian said quietly, “Let’s go in and see.”

When they reached the entrance and got a glimpse inside... Even with Chu Yang’s fortified mind, he was a little nauseated. These two shadows really did come from hell... Tang Xin Sheng no longer had a human form.

His whole body was raw with his skin peeled off. His veins popped out like a snake wrapping around Tang Xin Sheng’s body. A few tendons even came loose and wiggled back and forth as if they had a mind of their own... If the chains were slightly tightened, they would have broke his body into pieces...

The sound of chains pulling continued. Tang Xin Sheng’s eyes were crazed, and his moans were barely heard. But every now and then there was an arrogant look in his eyes.

Lightning Body-Severing and Bone-Moving Method! Chu Yang was startled. This was the most horrible punishment in the world. Those suffering from this torture would rather die a thousand times. A person under this punishment would go crazy and kill himself!

And yet, Tang Xin Sheng could hang on until now!

At this moment, Chu Yang had heartfelt admiration for this spy. He might have been an enemy, but such a good man was rare!

Tie Bu Tian's face reddened. He was clearly disturbed as he bit his teeth and asked, "Are there... any other methods?"

The two shadows silently shook their heads.

Tie Bu Tian sighed hopelessly... he blurted out, "Good man!"

Chapter 123: The mind of a powerful person

“There is another method; it’s just a little… inhumane, a way to humiliate him… but I am not sure if it would yield any results…” One of the shadows softly suggested.

“If it’s inhumane and you’re not even sure if it would yield any results, then why must you humiliate a good man still?” Chu Yang coldly cut him off.

“Don’t say anymore…” Tie Bu Tian also frowned and said definitively. His words seemed to have come out the same time Chu Yang spoke.

The two shadows stepped back without any protests.

“Blurghhhhh…” Looking at the horror in the cell, Tie Bu Tian could not control his disgust and made a retching sound. He waved his hand and said, “Minister Chu is right; let him die with some dignity. We still have many ways to deal with Diwu Qing Rou… torturing and forcing a confession is not what we want to do anyway; we don’t need to insult a good man like that…”

“Kill him? It’s such a waste!” Chu Yang said in disagreement. Even just keeping him as bait, Tang Xin Sheng would still be very valuable.

“Just kill him…” Tie Bu Tian sighed, “Should a man like this be forced to suffer humiliation? There are things we can still accomplish even after his death. The key is how we plan everything; we have no need to torture him anymore…”

“If that is Your Majesty’s decision, I will give him mercy…” Chu Yang nodded. He pulled out a dagger and slowly approached Tang Xin Sheng… He had wanted to free Tang Xin Sheng from his suffering as well, but kept him alive until now for his plan… Now that Tie Bu Tian had given the word, Chu Yang no longer insisted…

Looking at Tang Xin Sheng, Chu Yang asked softly, “Why didn’t you kill yourself?”

Even though Tang Xin Sheng could not talk, his eyes never lost their proud look.

Without an answer, Chu Yang already understood. A person who was proud to the bones would rather suffer the tortures of the enemies than killing himself.

No matter what, they would never end their lives with their own hands!

Chu Yang nodded. He raised his hand and stabbed cleanly through the heart. Then he said in a low voice, “Goodbye! Let’s be opponents in the next life!”

Tang Xin Sheng’s eyes showed a look of gratitude. Then he let out a calm smile, and for some strange reason, he was able to speak, “Diwu… finally has a rival… I only regret that… I am no longer able to see this…”

His head tilted to the side, and he died. As his body laid on the ground, tortured and disfigured, it unexpectedly recovered its normal look. There was even a hint of warmth and calmness.

Chu Yang sighed; even though he did not want to humiliate a hero, but killing Tang Xin Sheng like this, he was not sure if it was good or bad… Keeping him alive was more beneficial.

“Good man. Official Tang, I should not use you as a pawn…” Tie Bu Tian looked at Tang Xin Sheng’s body and said with a heavy heart, “If there is a next life, I hope we can become emperor and subject!”

Chu Yang was shocked; he could recognize that these words were from the bottom of Tie Bu Tian’s heart.

A good man like that was worthy of everyone’s respect… but Tie Bu Tian’s words were extraordinary. That one phrase had shown that Tie Bu Tian was still a little weaker than Diwu Qing Rou.

He was still not a powerful, cold-hearted tactician! First, he allowed Tang Xin Sheng to die freely; now, he was even showing regrets… Even though killing people was cruel, for Tang Xin Sheng's situation, it was a good thing. To admire talent was a good thing, but carrying that same mentality for the enemy was equivalent to digging your own grave!

Such a mindset was fine for an ordinary person… but for a ruler of a weak country in a time of war to carry this mentality was truly worrisome.

"Don't worry, our enemies, no matter how great or heroic, will be killed if they must be killed…" Tie Bu Tian smiled; sensing Chu Yang's thought, he explained, "There is no mercy in my heart, but with a respectable enemy, we should show our respect!"

Chu Yang smiled and said, "Yes, and I thought Your Majesty did not want to pay out on our bet…" Chu Yang thought that perhaps this was Tie Bu Tian's personal appeal; he and Diwu Qing Rou were different people after all.

"Ah… hahaha…" Of course, Tie Bu Tian knew that Chu Yang wanted to help him unwind a little. He smiled and said, "Don't worry Minister Chu, I will keep my word."

He spoke as he walked out, "Secretly bury Tang Xin Sheng; do not reveal this to anyone…"

Waiting outside were Cheng Zi Ang and Chen Yu Tong who immediately followed his order.

Tie Bu Tian remained silent as they walked over some distance. Then he suddenly turned and asked Chu Yang, "Now that Tang Xin Sheng is dead, his family…?"

Chu Yang remained silent for a while before answering, "I am guessing that Tang Xin Sheng's current family might not be his real family. People like him would not do something as stupid as leaving his family like that. If there are still people in his home,

they are not his real family…”

Tie Bu Tian nodded and said, “Yes, investigate!”

Not long after, spies came back with information that Tang Xin Sheng’s family was still at home.

“Minister Chu, what do you think?” With a searching gaze, Tie Bu Tian consulted Chu Yang.

Chu Yang sighed and said, “They can’t die yet. We must keep a tight lid on Tang Xin Sheng’s death… Regardless of whether they are fake or real, we must keep them there. If Diwu Qing Rou sends people to get them, we must keep them there at all costs. If that cannot be done, then we must kill them. And if no one comes, then they are definitely fake… At that time, I will see them.

Tie Bu Tian walked a few more steps, and deeply breathed in the cool air… The brutal scene inside the cell was difficult to deal with for a prince who had been living a sheltered life. It had been very good that he was able to hold it together like this.

A little while later, he turned to look at Chu Yang, “Minister Chu, if we reveal that Tang Xin Sheng is in our hands, would Diwu Qing Rou send people to rescue him?”

Chu Yang laughed loudly. Tie Bu Tian had finally returned to normal; he was not weak like earlier anymore. And the first thing he thought about after recovering was using this situation to attack his opponent.

“We need to release this news; whether Diwu Qing Rou would rescue him is uncertain… But there is no doubt that Tang Xin Sheng is a key character in Diwu Qing Rou’s plans…” Chu Yang smiled, and immediately sighed, “Unfortunately, he is already dead…”

Tie Bu Tian leisurely took two steps and said, “There is news from the border; Diwu Qing Rou had given orders for five military corps in northern Great Zhao to advance by a hundred miles. They

are now in the position to confront our soldiers…”

“Because of this, Uncle Long Cheng will ride to the front line tomorrow afternoon…” Tie Bu Tian said pensively, “Diwu Qing Rou had remained inactive until now. And he suddenly mobilized five military corps… Does this have anything to do with Tang Xin Sheng…?”

Chu Yang was stunned; he suddenly remembered the note Diwu Qing Rou sent to Tang Xin Sheng.

That rushed handwriting… Could Diwu Qing Rou have mobilized the corps because of Tang Xin Sheng?

Chu Yang’s mind was in shock; if this is the case, my plans have great hopes for success.

Even Tie Bu Tian does not know that I intercepted Diwu Qing Rou’s secret note. And yet he brought this up; while there was a doubt in his tone, he seemed almost sure.

So Tie Bu Tian is also able to see through this!

Looking at Chu Yang, Tie Bu Tian asked as if he had already thought about it beforehand, “Minister Chu seems to have some trouble? Do you want me to send two people to protect you? The enemies have countless martial masters; we cannot afford to be careless…”

“No need.” Chu Yang protested immediately; a conflicting look appeared in his eyes.

He really wanted to comply, but when Tie Bu Tian said two people, he already knew who they were. In this current chaos, if he had Tie Bu Tian’s kind of protection, he would easily survive any danger; at least, things would not be as dangerous as before.

However, Chu Yang knew well that Tie Bu Tian’s safety was even more important than his own! If the person Diwu Qing Rou sent discovered that Tie Bu Tian’s bodyguards were with him, then Tie Bu Tian would run into immediate danger.

There was another important reason: the mind of a powerful person!

If he accepted protection, then he would have the mindset of a person under protection and lose his fearless spirit! This would lead to having inner demons when reaching the peak of cultivation!

No matter how powerful the enemies were, he must continue to advance forward! If he did not have the courage to face danger... then there was no hope left!

The mind of a powerful person: never be afraid!

Chu Yang slightly smiled conceitedly. The life and death situation in front of him was of no consequence! The road to becoming powerful was filled with life and death situations at every step. Should he depend on Tie Bu Tian every time?

Tie Bu Tian looked at Chu Yang as he was glowing with the desire to test his sword on the entire world... He discovered a ray of splendor, and lightly sighed without saying anything else.

Tie Bu Tian did not leave long before Wu Qian Qian brought a piece of paper out from King of Hell Chu's room. Everyone who saw trembled in terror.

Who is he dealing with this time?

"There are names of some families written here..." Wu Qian Qian handed the paper to Cheng Zi Ang and said, "The minister ordered that no matter what tactics you use or how much force, you must overpower all of them. But don't rush and don't alert them beforehand."

The moment Cheng Zi Ang looked, his face wrinkled like a bitter melon.

There were a dozen names on the paper as well as a few clans. It made Cheng Zi Ang dizzy... Was the power of more than forty people of Fierce Blood Hall capable of completing this mission?

“In this mission, Heavenly Secret Hall will work in conjunction with Fierce Blood Hall.” Wu Qian Qian continued… this immediately made a smiling Chen Yu Tong who was sitting on the side pale.

Cheng Zi Ang and Chen Yu Tong looked at each other and simultaneously sighed. People on the same boat really have the same mind…

These names were of all the people who provided references for Tang Xin Sheng’s identity. More precisely, they were his people. They were all neatly gathered on one piece of paper by Chu Yang.

“In addition, Minister Chu wants Hall Leader Chen to give him the things he asked for…” After she finished talking, Wu Qian Qian left.

Chen Yu Tong froze for a second. Immediately after, he ran straight into Heavenly Secrets Hall as if he was on fire. He breathlessly said, “Hey hey! Did you gather everything I told you? Quickly bring them all out…”

A moment later, Chen Yu Tong brought out a thick stack of documents and smiled as he knocked on Chu Yang’s door.

“Minister, haha…, Minister, haha…” Chen Yu Tong smiled nervously.

Looking at him, Wu Qian Qian could not help but laugh.

“How many…?” Chu Yang asked without bothering to look up.

“Thirty-seven total… haha…” Chen Yu Tong forced a smile as he wiped the sweat off his forehead.

“Tang Xin Sheng was an official for a decade and there were only this many petitions and everyday notes in the house…?” Even though the mask had completely covered Chu Yang’s expressions, his voice suddenly became cold.

Chapter 124: Strategy! Would Diwu Qing Rou fall for it?

“This… koff koff koff…” Chen Yu Tong was soaking in sweat. Such a quantity was truly too little… It was because Heavenly Secrets Hall had been very busy lately. When Chu Yang gave him this assignment, Chen Yu Tong had thought that this was not an important thing, and that he only needed to put a few things together. So he currently did not know what to say right now…

“This time, before Heavenly Secrets Hall and Fierce Blood Hall start your mission, I want your report on everyone’s skill level.” Chu Yang said casually, “Once your mission is over, I want everyone in Heavenly Secrets Hall to advance by one grade. If there is one person who does not advance… hmm… Hall Leader Chen, I will gather the entire Bu Tian Pavilion to watch you dance naked on top of the celebratory table…”

“Aaah!!” Suddenly blindsided, Chen Yu Tong screamed in terror, “Minister, no… Minister…”

“It’s decided; you can go.” Chu Yang did not give him a chance to talk and just decided immediately. Then he turned to Wu Qian Qian and said, “Put the news out, we will watch Hall Leader Chen dance in half a month!”

Wu Qian Qian held back her laughter and obediently walked out.

“Hey, Miss Wu, Great Aunt Wu…” Chen Yu Tong anxiously sweated, “Minister Chu, Grandfather Chu… You can’t be that cruel… I… I… How can I control this?”

“Go now!” Chu Yang’s eyes remained on the pile of documents in front of him as he said calmly… Wu Qian Qian quickly ran out.

“Minister Chu… oh… oh…” Chen Yu Tong really cried. How could he decide when the others would advance?

“I believe in you; you can do it!” Chu Yang said confidently; then

he glared, “If you say one more word, I will watch you dance now!”

“...” Chen Yu Tong had to swallow down the begging that was about to leave his mouth. His eyes were full of lamentation like a long widowed woman who just fell for a eunuch. He looked at Chu Yang with a gaping mouth and finally hung his head in submission...

A little later, there was a thud in the yard. Of course, everyone had heard the news.

When Chen Yu Tong walked out with his sullen face, everyone in Heavenly Secrets Hall shuddered with the anticipation of an upcoming storm...

“From now on, everyone in Heavenly Secrets Hall must train ten times harder! In half a month, if anyone does not breakthrough... I will lose face and all of you, no matter who, can never hope to live in peace!” Chen Yu Tong grinded his teeth as if he was going mad.

“Ah... How can this be...” At that time, there was wailing amongst Heavenly Secrets Hall; everyone acted as is their parents were dying. Cheng Zi Ang, the leader of Fierce Blood Hall, had his arms folded across his chest laughing at the scene.

Cheng Zi Ang looked at his underlings, and worked hard to show a look of curiosity, “Um, you guys tell me, is Hall Leader Chen’s butt white?”

“Is that a question? It’s definitely white...”

“Not necessarily; Hall Leader Chen’s face is really dark...”

“Wait... doesn’t Hall Leader understand? A face is a face... A butt is a butt... These two are not the same...”

“So you’re saying that Hall Leader Chen is not a butt?” Cheng Zi Ang mimicked a look of deep thought...

“Hall Leader is truly talented, you came up with such a profound question...”

“No, no, hahaha…”

“I wonder if Hall Leader Chen’s butt has hemorrhoids…” Cheng Zi Ang rubbed his chin dreamily…

“Haha…” The Fierce Blood assassins next to him held onto their bellies laughing.

Chen Yu Tong was boiling with anger; he brought a group of spies from Heavenly Secrets Hall and left like he heard his mother just died… Almost immediately after, there was howling and wailing from the training yard of Heavenly Secrets Hall…

The door to the great hall suddenly opened, a cold hideous mask appeared.

All the laughter immediately went silent.

“You are really enjoying yourself, Hall Leader Cheng.” The especially deep voice of King of Hell Chu rang out.

“A… No… We’re not enjoying ourselves…” Cheng Zi Ang was tongue-tied and hastily denied it. He was regretting it; I was too happy, and, now King of Hell Chu has suddenly come out here. I should be on guard from now on.

“Umm, if you don’t do this mission well, hmm, before I give the order to pull in the net, and you guys get exposed or leak information…” King of Hell Chu said darkly, “I also want to see Hall Leader Cheng fart on stage for everyone to watch… At that time, I will definitely invite the prince to enjoy it as well!”

After he finished, King of Hell Chu grunted icily, swung his sleeves, and arrogantly walked back in.

Cheng Zi Ang was temporarily stunned; he was so miserable, he could not even cry out any tears…

People said too much happiness would become sadness; but it could not be this bad…

Very soon after, Cheng Zi Ang’s ferocious roar was hear in the

yard, “You all heard, right? Are you satisfied? Aaah!! You bastards brought me such a big calamity! Well, if you don’t do your jobs well, I will skin each one of you!”

The assassins, with their heads down, cursed silently. Motherf*, we brought it? Some bastard was laughing the loudest earlier…

Chu Yang entered the room and carefully looked at Tang Xin Sheng’s handwriting. Wu Qian Qian also ran over to analyze it with him.

“Such a handwriting is hard to imitate!” Chu Yang frowned. Tang Xin Sheng’s brushstrokes were especially disciplined. While they were not in the ranks of anything famous, they were quite good. But they were not easy to imitate. Plus, within his brushstrokes, there was an elegant air. This was a style that was unique to Tang Xin Sheng only.

“You want to imitate Tang Xin Sheng’s brushstrokes to write a letter to Diwu Qing Rou?” Wu Qian Qian asked in shock. She found Chu Yang’s unimaginable plan hard to believe.

“Yes!” Chu Yang looked carefully. The more he looked the harder it became for him to imitate. Not that it was very hard, but there was simply no hope in imitating it. He could try to imitate enough to fool ordinary people. But with a famed character like Diwu Qing Rou, it was impossible.

Because Diwu Qing Rou did not just look at the words, but also the character behind them!

“Can you cut them?” Wu Qian Qian said weakly.

“Cut?” Chu Yang’s eyes suddenly brightened. Cutting was not possible but he had another way.

Under Chu Yang’s leadership, the two went through all the documents with Tang Xin Sheng’s brushstrokes and laid them all over the floor. After that, Chu Yang took a piece of paper as thin as a cicada’s wing and placed it on the table.

Looking at the writings on the ground, he smiled. In this letter, there were five words ‘many years ago until now’; in another letter, there were three words ‘could not bear’; and also anther with two words ‘painstaking effort’…

Chu Yang took the thin sheet of paper and placed it on the two words ‘painstaking efforts’, and carefully adjusted it. Then he took a gulp of water, and activated his internal energy to spray out a mist… The mist was carefully controlled to exactly cover only these two words. When the mist disappeared completely, Chu Yang lifted the thin sheet of paper; the two words ‘painstaking effort’ appeared on it.

Wu Qian Qian’s eyes shined. Clapping and smiling, she said, “Wonderful!”

Chu Yang smiled and continued.

“Painstaking efforts of many years try my best!” These words appeared on the thin sheet of paper. After that, Chu Yang took his brush and added…

It looked as if after writing the words ‘painstaking effors of years’ there was a long hesitation of a troubled mind. Then they… were unconsciously written down, showing that troubled mind. It was then followed by ‘try my best’!

“Immediately free the Invisible Falcon so it could bring this note to Diwu Qing Rou.” Looking relieved, Chu Yang carefully analyzed the note many times, then carefully folded it and handed it over to Wu Qian Qian.

Wu Qian Qian watched him do this from beginning to end. With some confusion, she said, “You did not write any explanations; how could you fool Diwu Qing Rou?”

“The less, the better; once Diwu Qing Rou receives this note, then whatever he does will give us some clues. At that time, we can analyze his actions in response to these words to guess what he

plans to do. So we can easily make our own plans to deal with him." Chu Yang continued, "Moreover, someone like Tang Xin Sheng would never send a note that could be easily understood."

"Anyone looking at a note like this would feel like they have fallen into a fog, but Diwu Qing Rou might not necessarily feel the same way." Chu Yang smiled mysteriously, "Diwu Qing Rou would definitely feel very sad!"

This is full of mystery... Chu Yang thought proudly.

"Umm... have you found what I need?" Chu Yang asked.

"I found it; what do you want to do? The stench could kill a person..." Wu Qian Qian pinched her nose.

"Of course I will have use for it." Chu Yang laughed, "Where?"

"Outside the wall. You can get it yourself; that smell... not something you want to run into..." Wu Qian Qian said in disgust. What Chu Yang wanted her to find was a medicine pot. Plus, it had to be the kind from the home of lazy bums who did not wash it...

Wu Qian Qian had to go through great lengths to find it. She even used the power of Heavenly Secrets Hall to obtain one from the home of a slacker...

She found what he asked for, but she still did not understand why Chu Yang made her look for such a disgusting thing like that...

With great effort, he finished the rest of the work in Bu Tian Pavilion. Watching the Invisible Falcon become one with the sky, Chu Yang immediately took the medicine jar that was carefully wrapped, and ran at the greatest speed back to Emerald Flow Lake. During the whole work day, his mind constantly thought about this place.

Mo Qing Wu was there.

Chu Yang sighed. His little loli... His head almost exploded when

he remembered how Mo Qing Wu sweetly called him ‘Uncle Chu’… Chu Yang hated that he could not curse that old bastard…(TLN: loli was really used)

God, what is this…

With a jumbled mentality, he went back to Emerald Flow Lake. Chu Yang carefully looked in four directions before climbing down to the secret chamber.

The moment he entered, he immediately saw a small figure slowly moving around. Lively eyes, small cute mouth, round face, soft black hair…

Chu Yang was momentarily excited.

“Uncle Chu… You’re here!” When Mo Qing Wu saw Chu Yang, she rushed toward him.

Chu Yang’s mind became dark. His lips twitched as he watched Mo Qing Wu jump toward him. His countenance became pale, and he almost dropped the sticks of candied fruits in his hands.

“Uncle Chu, what’s wrong? Your face looks weird!” Mo Qing Wu looked at him with concern.

“I am fine; has your injury improved?” There was no other choice. Chu Yang had to act like a kind uncle as he knelt down and asked her.

Chapter 125: Flirting with girls is too difficult...

“I am much better already. Look, uncle.” Mo Qing Wu blinked her eyes, waved her hands, and kicked her legs. She put on her martial moves and happily said, “See, I am much better!”

“Very good, very good.” Chu Yang kindly smiled and spoke. After that coughed dryly and started his coercion, “Hey, Qing Wu...”

“Call me Mo Xiao Wu.” (TLN: Xiao means little) Mo Qing Wu puffed her cheeks and rolled her eyes, “Uncle Chu is really bad; you can’t even get my name right!”

“...Xiao Wu?” Chu Yang was surprised, “Is Qing Wu your older sister?” Chu Yang was a little confused as he wondered if he was mistaken.

“Hmm, I don’t have an older sister!” Mo Qing Wu rolled her eyes, “Qing Wu is my official name. My parents said I can’t be called Qing Wu until after I turn fifteen. Right now, I am Xiao Wu... Do you understand?”

“This is the same for all girls from great families; don’t you know?” The little loli was being a smarty-pants as she looked cockily at Chu Yang. She was looking down on him a little... he is definitely not too knowledgeable.

“Well, uh... uh...” Chu Yang started to sweat. He was too nervous and forgot all about it. All the daughters of great families are given wonderful names at birth, those names are not used until they become mature.

It was the idea that outsiders would not know of these ladies until they reached maturity. Or when they were old enough to go into Jiang Hu, and were also old enough for the family to find suitable husbands for them.

Of course, this applied only to the special ones. In addition, their

husbands would all choose to go over to the brides' families. As for the lesser females, they already had arranged marriages at birth... and were used as means to strengthen the clans...

Now that Mo Qing Wu's Three Yin Meridian was damaged, if she returned to the clan... and they verified that she was no longer of value... she would probably become a tool for the clan as well!

Chu Yang looked at the little loli in front of him, just nine and a half years old... his head hurt, and his heart hurt even more.

The current Qing Wu was still naïve and innocent; how could she know about the pain of being born a girl in a great family? If she returned and faced that cruelty... she might just break!

He remembered in the previous life... there was always a slight trace of melancholy on Mo Qing Wu's face... Chu Yang's heart suddenly wrenched, and he told himself that he would never let Mo Qing Wu suffer like that again!

"Xiao Wu, will you remain here?" Chu Yang held Mo Qing Wu's little hand and gently said, "Here we have rivers and mountains; we also have fun people. Whenever I am free, I will bring you out to watch acrobats and magicians. You can eat candied fruits; and I will find a lot of sisters to hang out with you..."

"No!" Mo Qing Wu pouted, "I miss my father; I miss my mother. I want to be with them... There's also grandpa and grandma as well. Uncle Chu... do you want me to part with my parents?" Little Loli angrily muttered, "Uncle Chu, you are really bad!"

"Oh..." Chu Yang sighed. He thought and thought, but he forgot about the little girl's love for her parents...

Currently, her mother still saw her as a jewel... this was her happiest time; how could he separate them? Before then, she had such a great qualifications, of course everyone in the clan cared for her a lot...

Qing Wu was still unable to understand that the injury from this

outing had caused her to lose that heavenly talent!

“Ok, let’s talk about how we address each other first!” Chu Yang asked, “Xiao Wu, how old is your second elder brother?”

“Twenty-one years old… my second elder brother is very good!” Mo Qing Wu smiled sweetly.

“I am only sixteen, not even seventeen yet; your second elder brother is much older than me!” Chu Yang said, “So you can’t call me uncle. Should your second elder brother call me uncle once he gets here? Wouldn’t that just be a mess? Don’t you think I’m right? Don’t tell me you call your second elder brother uncle. Is there such a thing?”

Chu Yang bit his lower lips; while he could not possibly let Mo Qing Wu call him uncle, if Mo Tian Ji wants to call him uncle… Motherf*! He can call me great ancestor, I would totally agree!

The little girl’s eyes opened wide, “That’s right. You are younger than my second elder brother; how can I call you uncle!”

“Yes!” Chu Yang quickly took advantage of his progress, “So, you shouldn’t call me Uncle Chu, you should call me Brother Chu!”

Mo Qing Wu bit her finger and stared at Chu Yang suspiciously, “But… I still feel as if you have some bad intentions… You surely must have some ulterior motive!”

Chu Yang sweated; how could she see through my dark thoughts? Is this little loli just over nine years old? People have always said that ‘a female’s intuition is powerful’… and yet this little loli’s intuition is not any less powerful!

“How could I have bad intentions?” Chu Yang quickly defended himself. If he allowed this little loli to associate him with ‘bad intentions’ then it would be difficult to change that impression later, “You see, when you and your Uncle Cheng Yu came here, I saved you two immediately, right? Isn’t it true that I brought you to be treated? Plus, I even bought you candied fruits; here!”

Chu Yang quickly handed her the candied fruits; he felt a little ashamed. An act of kindness does not need repayment; an act of kindness does not need repayment, but I am too despicable in asking for repayment like this. And worst of all, from a little loli…

The truth was, the moment he appeared in front of Mo Qing Wu's eyes, she already honed in on the candied fruits. She was still shy so she did not ask for it. When she heard him say this, she immediately took one and her eyes almost closed like crescent moons, "Brother Chu Yang is so nice!"

Chu Yang's heart was elated!

The first step was essentially successful. If Mo Qing Wu kept call him Uncle Chu, there would have been no hope… Was there ever a young lady who would choose to marry her uncle?

A big boulder in Chu Yang's heart was finally lifted. From uncle to brother… Hmm, the sound was very satisfying. Chu Yang had thought that he would have to do a lot more talking. Never did he imagine that one stick of candied fruits could buy success. Aaah… What to say about this?

Hmmm… from now on, any guy who wants to give candied fruits to her, they must go through me. Don't any other guy even bother dreaming… If it's a woman, then I will think about it. If it's a man… forget it…

This loli was too simple and could be fool too easily… this pervert has to… guard against… other perverts…

Within moments, Chu Yang's mind changed as quickly as lightning… It changed to the extreme. His countenance went from calm, to longing, to cautious, to murderous…

On the side, Mo Qing Wu was eating candied fruits while watching this Brother Chu. Why does Uncle Chu insist on being Brother Chu? This is really strange. Plus, his face is really cute… it could even change color, sometimes white, sometimes black,

sometimes pink... When Uncle Cheng Yu is done cultivating, I must let him see. It's fantastic...

Since Chu Yang was reborn until now, he had always took care of everything calmly. Today was the first time his emotions changed so drastically like this.

The moment the little loli finished one stick of candied fruits, she attacked another. The edge of her mouth was covered with dried sugar, and her face was joyful. Chu Yang's emotions went wild. He thought to himself if he could wipe off the sugar with his own mouth then...

After a little struggle, he did not dare...

When she was done with the candied fruits, Mo Qing Wu was very well-behaved and went to wash her hands. After a little thought, she stepped in front of the bowl of medicine Chu Yang just brought. Her face became torturous as she looked at Chu Yang with eyes on the verge of tears, "Brother Chu Yang, can I not drink this? It's really bitter..."

"No!" Chu Yang said seriously, but then he smiled, "If you drink it, I will tell you a fairy tale..."

"You must keep your word!" Mo Qing Wu picked up the bowl of medicine and drank it in on gulp. After that she sat up right on a small chair in front of Chu Yang, with her hands holding up her chin. Her large eyes looked expectantly at Chu Yang, expecting a story.

There was even a little smile on her face.

Chu Yang smacked his forehead; he was fooled... This little loli was born in a great family; even at nine years old, she could definite differentiate medicines. Chu Yang was worried that this bowl of medicine would be difficult to drink so he added honey... It had become no different from a dessert. How could Mo Qing Wu not smell it? She had found this out already. She was only

pretending to get a story... If Chu Yang had not promise to tell a story, and said something else, she would have happily drunk it anyway...

“Okay, little monster!” Chu Yang muttered; he thought... at such a young age and she already managed to fool people; I don’t know how she will be when she is older! He search his head for a story... He said it at the moment to cajole Mo Qing Wu; where was he going to find a fairy tale?

Chu Yang thought for a long time...

But did not think of anything...

Mo Qing Wu’s little face gradually grew ugly. After a while, she frowned and looked at Chu Yang suspiciously. She said disappointingly, “Brother Chu Yang has deceived me?”

Her voice was full of distrust.

“How could I deceive you? Even if I deceive the whole world, I would never deceive you!” Chu Yang quickly defended.

“A long time ago...” Chu Yang began...

After a long time...

Mo Qing wu’s voice rang out, “This story is not good! Tell another story!”

Chu Yang wiped sweat off his forehead, “Then I will tell another story... Sometime ago at...”

“This is also not good... Next story!”

Chu Yang’s whole body was soaked in sweat; his face was tortured, “It was said that at...”

“Still not good! Tell another...”

Chu Yang’s gaze became sluggish, “In a country...”

“Not good! Tell another...”

Chu Yang felt dizzy, “In the past...”

“Even worse!” The little loli glared, on the verge of anger…

Chu Yang immediately tumbled to the ground and cried, but no tears came out.

Oh god… these days… flirting with girls is too difficult… Can I live anymore… This life cannot possibly get any worse…

“Hahaha…” Mo Cheng Yu had awaken at some point, and could not help but laugh when he saw Chu Yang’s look. He was extremely happy with the other’s suffering.

Help… Chu Yang looked at Mo Cheng Yu, unable to speak.

(TLN: Loli is such an awkward word. Also Chu Yang is such a pedo >_<)

Chapter 126: Asking for a betting debt

Mo Cheng Yu showed a helpless expression, then shrugged his shoulders and added more fuel to the fire, “Ahhh… little miss, Uncle Chu Yang is already very nice to you… how about you let him continue telling his story for you…”

“It’s Brother Chu Yang!” The little loli shook her behind and bared her fangs and claws, “Brother Chu Yang is a liar; his fairy tales are boring me to death…”

Mo Cheng Yu started to sweat and said, “Okay, okay… Brother Chu Yang is Brother Chu Yang. He has many other stories; he’ll tell them now…”

“Really Brother Chu Yang?” Little loli looked at Chu Yang with great expectation.

“Koff koff…” Chu Yang looked at Mo Cheng Yu with indignation; I depended on you… how could you be so shameless…

Mo Cheng Yu pretended not to notice Chu Yang’s gaze and smiled piously, “Umm, I have internal injuries; I will have to sit down and meditate for a while. Little miss, just go ahead and listen to Brother Chu Yang’s stories.” Then he immediately slipped away…

Chu Yang waved his arm, powerless and unable to speak…

“Brother Chu Yang, tell your stories!” Mo Qing Wu yanked on Chu Yang’s sleeve and blinked her lovable eyes, “Tell me a really good story!”

Chu Yang, “…”

After a long, long time, Chu Yang staggered out of the secret chamber; his countenance was pale, his eyes seemed hollow, and his lips were dry. He plopped on the floor and moaned, “Pleasing girls is exhausting…”

With the thought that his ‘flirt plan’ had to be carried on for

another eight to ten years, Chu became pale with distraught.

After she matured, Mo Qing Wu was not like this! She was normally smiling calmly; she just did her work quietly and gracefully...

And yet, how could this girl be so rambunctious?

Chu Yang sighed, then dipped his head into a vat of water and started drinking. He was dying of thirst... could anyone tell stories nonstop for hours...

Oh god! People could die from it...

But, well, Chu Yang was still very pleased... Mo Qing Wu really enjoyed herself so he was willing to put in the time and effort... even if it would be for a few more years...

Youth could go away, but he would never allow this joyfulness to disappear!

Starting tomorrow, I will have to read more books; specifically to learn more fairy tales... Chu Yang fiercely vowed to himself! For the sake of 'flirting', he was willing to pay any price!

Late that afternoon, Chu Yang made dinner for the three people; after they finished their food, he immediately hid part of the mess in the kitchen and only left one part... He also put away two thirds of the bowls... The entire scene looked like one person made food, ate, and left the mess in the kitchen...

After saying a few words to Mo Cheng Yu, Chu Yang left.

Mo Cheng Yu was a King level master so he was experienced; naturally, he knew the severity of things and would not act rashly... Chu Yang was not worried about this. Furthermore, the secret chamber was related to Nine Tribulations Sword so it was very well hidden; anyone who was not a top grade master would never be able to discover it.

Chu Yang went out to find Tie Bu Tian... Tie Bu Tian made a bet

with him and he was absolutely not going to be shy about collecting.

While the bet was made for fun, it was serious to Chu Yang. It was related to Mo Qing Wu's lifetime of happiness. How could he not take it seriously?

About two hours after Chu Yang left, a few black shadows quietly snuck into Heavenly Armament Pavilion. They gave the whole place a once-over without making a sound. After that, they immediately gathered around the main rooms that was in the center of the rest of the other rooms...

One of them went in like a ghost and disappeared. He did a round of inspection and quietly came back out after discovering nothing.

"Well?" The other veiled people in black stood outside, eyes glowing with ill intention in the night.

"No one, very clean." The person said, "According to our investigation, there are only two people currently living here. One of them left more than twenty days ago and has not come back. There is only one person here now. The evidence here also verified that there is only one person here."

"Go check the pots and pans in the kitchen; see if medicine was cooked."

"Yes, sir."

Three or four people went in.

The leader stood outside for a while, then he walked into Chu Yang's room.

"We discovered nothing extraordinary in the kitchen except for the fact that this guy is really messy. The ground was covered with vegetable soup, and he did not bother to wash anything. Judging from the smell, the food must have been from yesterday night. There is definitely just one person here."

“Huh?” That leader suspiciously walked into the kitchen. The moment he entered, he almost gagged from the heavy stench of spoiled food. He struggled to look around with hawk’s eyes and searched carefully before nodding and said, “It seems that there is only one person cooking here.”

“Sir, we found the medicine storeroom.”

“Let’s take a look.”

The so-called medicine storeroom was a tiny sealed room stacked with medical supplies that Chu Yang did not use. In that mess, Chu Yang purposely kept some rare items as well.

“This guy is really lazy, but he does have some valuable things…” That leader stood at the door and slightly frowned as he looked at the mess inside.

“There are two medicine pots here.” One black outfitted man yelled out.

That leader took one sniff, and said, “This one is clearly brand new and has never been used… but this one… mother* must have been from more than a month ago. The herbal dregs in it are completely covered in white mold!”

Chu Yang had wasted a lot of effort to obtain this stinky old medicine pot; it had now shown its usefulness…

One person pushed out the moldy pieces. He held his breath and looked inside, “This is medicine for a cold…”

“Get lost! Who asked you? Are you highly educated and talented? You even have the gall to say it’s for treating a cold…!” The leader grimaced and slapped hard on the man’s face.

“It’s herbal dregs from more than a month ago; even if it is for treating injuries, it’s still not related to the Mo clan. A month ago, Mo Cheng Yu was still lying around at the Mo Clan!”

Because that guy picked at the herbal dregs, the stinky smell

exploded in the entire room. Suddenly, the entire storeroom was much smellier than a public toilet...

“Yes, yes... I deserve to die.” That guy did admit his fault nonstop, and tossed the medicine pot outside. With a bam, the medicine pot fell on the ground and broke into five or six pieces.

The stench became even fiercer.

That leader became even more livid; his face was turning purple as successively slapped the idiot... Then, unable to hold on any longer, he held his nose and ran out of there as if his life depended on it. His speed was definitely impressive!

The moment he escaped that area, he started to gasp for air. With fierce and cruel eyes, intermingled with rage, he looked at that underling and scolded nonstop, “Motherf*, you can be stupid but save some for the rest of the world... I have met many idiots, but none were even half as stupid as you... Motherf*...!”

The rest of the group also ran out in a chaotic state while covering their noses.

“Damn! What is that horrible smell?”

“This stench is going to kill me!”

The leader still covered his nose as he asked in a serious tone, “Did you discover anything? Did you see any secret passages?” His tone was filled with anger.

“Speak!”

“We did not find anything.”

“Nothing, and you are still lingering here? Leave quickly; or are you enjoying this smell?” The leader roared in anger and disappeared into the night.

It seemed he suffered a great wrong.

An important and powerful leader of the Hei Mo clan, he was a King level master... He only needed to stomp his foot and all four

directions would tremble. Until now, he had never been in any place that was so stinky!

Too humiliating...!

Everyone looked at each other and quickly scrambled out to escape that lovely bouquet. Finally, that highly educated and talented guy could not control himself any longer and threw up his dinner before dragging his useless body out of there.

The leader's slaps were not for nothing... he lost two teeth as well as a few mouthfuls of blood.

Of course, Official Chu Yang knew nothing of this. He was currently walking into the palace's vault.

Prince Bu Tian was extremely puzzled and annoyed with Chu Yang coming to his door to ask for the gambling debt.

It has only been a few hours, and he is already asking for payment? Does he even trust me? Why do you have so little faith in me?

While gambling was a normal, everyday thing in Iron Cloud Citadel... every hour, there would be some sort confrontation that broke out because of it, but... collecting debt from a prince, the ruling prince of a country...

This was too unusual.

Therefore, Tie Bu Tian was greatly troubled when he saw one red-faced King of Hell Chu standing in front of him... His body language seemed to indicate that payment must be made immediately...

"Your Majesty, koff koff... hack hack... You lost earlier but you have not fulfilled your promise yet!"

Hearing Chu Yang's words, Tie Bu Tian almost choked on his own blood. He grinded his teeth and said, "Minister Chu, you're something! Would I skip out on a debt to you?"

“Haha, koff koff… I was just worried that Your Majesty is so busy with thousands of things, you would forget…” Chu Yang knew that he was being impolite, but he continued. Thick skinned? Despicable? No problem! Pay your debt and you can despise me as much as you want.

There is a saying that goes, the thick skinned eats everything, and the thin skinned gnaw on dirt… Such wisdom… Haha…

Now, the prince was annoyed at being ‘escorted’ by King of Hell Chu to the palace’s vault.

Chapter 127: Minister Chu is as bright as a full moon

“In there!” Tie Bu Tian coldly said with an expressionless face, “Minister Chu, I will wait out here. You can go in and choose yourself… You can take everything if you want; I absolutely won’t complain!”

Being a victim of debt collection was definitely uncomfortable… Throughout history, this was probably the first time someone came to directly collect gambling debts from a prince. An unprecedented event indeed…

Tie Bu Tian was feeling very bitter right now, so all of his words were aimed at mocking Chu Yang.

Look at me! This is what class is! This is what grace is! This is my virtue! Look at you! A rogue from the street collecting debts?

Moreover, with just you, how much could you carry? Thinking so, Tie Bu Tian decided to speak magnanimously…

“Good… really good… Hahaha…” Chu Yang’s eyes brightened. He rubbed his hands together as if he got a big score. All the while, he seemed to not notice Tie Bu Tian’s resentment, “Haha, Your Majesty is a really good person… I will go in then!”

Before he even finished… he disappeared with a ‘swoosh’.

Before Tie Bu Tian had a chance to answer with a few humble words, Chu Yang was gone from his sight… He laughed dryly, and said with a darkened face, “This Chu Yang must have been dirt poor in his previous life. He robbed from dozens of rich households after arriving in Iron Cloud, and now he is ogling the palace’s vault. Like bandits entering a village… this type of excitement is disparaging!”

Thinking to this point, he called someone to bring a chair; then he sat in front of the vault to see how much Chu Yang would

manage to carry out. With that miserly look of yours... hmmm...

The moment Chu Yang stepped into the vault, his eyes widened... Oh god, so much good stuff...

Nine Tribulations Sword in his dantian immediately became animated.

“Don’t rush, let’s slowly look around.” Chu Yang looked at the entire vault in excitement. This was definitely worthy of the palace; so much treasure had accumulated over the years...

First thing in front of him was exotic metals. Plus, to help Chu Yang out, each shelf was clearly labeled.

“Truly orderly.” Chu Yang praised, “This saves me a lot of work...!”

His hand shook and Nine Tribulations Sword’s tip appeared, glowing.

“Absorb! No need to restrain; absorb everything you can!” Chu Yang’s eyes brightened, “Anything not too rare, leave some behind. Absorb the rest. These are all hard to find!”

Nine Tribulations Sword was like a wolf that was hungry for a long time. It swallowed everything per Chu Yang’s instruction...

Tie Bu Tian waited outside for a long time and still did not see Chu Yang come out. Somewhat puzzled, he stood up.

Is this King of Hell Chu going to stay in there and chew all the herbal medicine raw? The vault is so large, could he have gotten lost?

He wanted to walk in and see, but after his magnanimous gesture earlier, going in now would be monitoring... It would give King of Hell Chu an excuse to say that he was a sore loser...

After thinking for a long time, Tie Bu Tian finally sat back down on his chair. He thought maliciously: King of Hell Chu, I want to see how long you can remain in there! Let’s see who can last

longer!

A long time passed. And when Tie Bu Tian almost lost his patience...

Finally...

King of Hell Chu came out with a look of annoyance on his face. It was as if he was not happy with what he found... as if this palace's vault had disappointed him...

In Chu Yang's left hand was a few herbal medicines, and in his right hand was a few pieces of shiny precious metals...

"Huhhhh..." After coming out, Chu Yang sighed with great dissatisfaction.

"You were in there for so long and you could only choose so little?" Tie Bu Tian's eyes widened.

"Huhhh..." Chu Yang sighed again and looked at Tie Bu Tian, "Your Majesty, your palace's vault is very large, but it's a little shabby..."

"Oh? How?" Tie Bu Tian frowned.

"There was nothing valuable." Chu Yang complained, "I ran around and searched everywhere, but could only pick out a few things." Then he held up two Snow Ginseng and waved them back and forth. He also rubbed the pieces of precious metals against each other creating a clear ringing sound. This was a quiet place, so the sound spread far.

For such a huge treasure trove, finding just a few things was too pitiful...

"Only that much?" Tie Bu Tian asked in surprise, "How high is your standard? Those things in your hands are not too valuable?"

"That is not what I meant to say..." Chu Yang said gloomily, "Let's just go..."

"Wait a minute!" Tie Bu Tian waved his arm, "I will go in and

see.”

Then he strode into the vault, looking very determined.

However, he was immediately in shock then moment he walked in!

This is the palace’s vault? On each shelf was just a few pitiful chunks of precious metals. And some shelves were completely empty…

Orderly placed labels lined both sides; as he walked deeper and deeper into the vault, Tie Bu Tian’s steps started to falter… They seemed to scream out endless grievances…

On each shelf was a thick layer of dust.

Tie Bu Tian was unable to believe any of it; his mouth was constantly muttering, “What happened? What’s going on here…?”

Our pitiful prince was currently in a slight state of disarray…

Chu Yang came up to him and quietly consoled, “Your Majesty, you don’t have to be like this! I am very satisfied with finding these two five hundred year Snow Ginseng!”

Tie Bu Tian remained deaf to his words. His two legs walked quickly into the area containing medicinal herbs. As he remembered it, it was filled with heavenly treasures…

But with one glance, he staggered and almost fell to the floor.

There was supposed to be many medicinal items, not just pink ginseng fungus, but much more… even the rare items almost impossible to see in life were numerous… And yet, not a straw was to be seen now…

Even the precious jade box used for storage was gone…

Tie Bu Tian became dizzy and staggered a few times.

Chu Yang kind-heartedly caught him and said, “Your Majesty, are you alright?” The moment Chu Yang held his frail shoulder, he

got a queer feeling...

Tie Bu Tian quietly took one step forward, escaping Chu Yang's support. He said, "I cannot believe the palace's vault has fallen into this condition already..."

"Your Majesty rarely comes here?" Chu Yang asked.

"Of course, if there is no need for it, why would I come? I am not a miser." Tie Bu Tian said casually.

Chu Yang pretended not to notice the fact that Tie Bu Tian was implying he was a miser, and sighed, "No wonder. This country has been at war for years, even with a wealth of treasures, it would not last for long. Every day, every hour, there are wounded soldiers... No matter how valuable the treasures, how can they compare to the precious lives of heroic soldiers who fight for their country?"

These words of Chu Yang directly aimed the blame on Tie Long Cheng. Moreover, he implied that all the medicines were used up, and for a just cause, no less.

Tie Bu Tian remained silent for a while. Then he slowly said, "It must be so... It can be considered that these things were used for their rightful purpose." He saw the vault himself... and with Chu Yang consoling him, he did not give it further thought.

In the whole world, only Second Uncle Tie Long Cheng could come here. And second uncle was a general, leading the entire army, so he must have great need for medicinal herbs and rare metals... Tie Bu Tian knew this well!

As for the possibility of theft, he cast that idea aside immediately. Theft of medicinal herbs was possible, but the rare metal chunks weighted a few hundred pounds each. Some were even a few thousand pounds. How could they be snuck out of the heavily guarded palace?

Even if they could steal one block, who was capable of cleaning

out the entire vault? Even a Supreme level master could not take everything without anyone noticing...

Of course Tie Bu Tian did not know that the thief was this King of Hell Chu standing right next to him, sighing with a sense of loss and full of empathy...

It has been too hard on this King of Hell Chu... He just obtained a great fortune and he had to pretend to be sad... How powerful a mind must be? How accomplished...?

When he finally turned to look at Chu Yang, Tie Bu Tian was really embarrassed. He had promised to let Minister Chu get whatever he wanted. In the end, he just went in to get some air. And it seemed that Chu Yang just took those things to save him the embarrassment...

The more he thought about it, the more embarrassed he became.

Minister Chu was truly an ethical and honest person, always thinking of others...

“Minister Chu, let’s just say that I have yet to pay my debt to you!” Tie Bu Tian smiled and said, “I guarantee that you shall be fully compensated.”

“What is Your Majesty saying?” Minister Chu said gallantly, “I just wanted to get these things to make a few weapons to equip the military. Plus, I wanted to see if I could find the appropriate herbal ingredients to make a saintly elixir for Your Majesty’s health. What’s all this talk about debt?”

Minister Chu sincerely and ceremoniously said, “Your Majesty is too serious.”

Tie Bu Tian was touched; he now looked at Chu Yang in a whole new light. Tried as he might to control his own thoughts, Tie Bu Tian could not control himself, and patted Chu Yang on the shoulder, saying, “Minister Chu is truly good. Good! Good!”

Minister Chu is truly kind, and thoughtful; he is a true hero with

thoughts as bright as a full moon. (TLN: Righteous mind.) If I keep talking about compensation, how could he say that he wants it? Not only I should not say so, but my saying so would be insulting to Minister Chu's moral character.

I should just write it all down in my heart. Tie Bu Tian was not an ungrateful person!

Chapter 128: Glib tongue

The two walked out of the vault shoulder to shoulder, and discovered that it had become dark.

In front of the palace was person holding two horses, waiting; it was Wu Qian Qian. When she saw Chu Yang come out, she was overjoyed. She said hastily, “Minister Chu, please make time to come back to Bu Tian Pavilion; something has happened!”

“Bu Tian Pavilion is in trouble? What happened?” Chu Yang frowned.

“A group of powerful people in black asked us to hand over the person from the other day.” Wu Qian Qian said worriedly, “We spent a long time explaining, but they still did not believe us... we’re on the verge of a physical confrontation... If you were still out and we couldn’t find you, then this would not end well.”

Chu Yang was greatly surprised; he immediately jumped on the horse and said to the prince, “Your Majesty, this is an urgent matter; I will take my leave.” Then he added, “Please let the guards escort you back to your manor; don’t go to Bu Tian Pavilion. I am afraid it might be dangerous.”

Then he immediately took the mask and cloak from Wu Qian Qian. With one leap in the air, everything was on neatly; he dropped back onto the horse’s back, and whipped the horse to go forth.

Wu Qian Qian followed close behind. The two quickly disappeared from Tie Bu Tian’s sight.

Tie Bu Tian’s eyes widened as he yelled, “Back to the manor immediately; I have something important to do.” At this moment, Tie Bu Tian decided that, no matter what, he had to let the two shadows go to Bu Tian Pavilion to see what was going on.

Inside Bu Tian Pavilion was currently chaotic, like chicken and

dogs running amok!

In the great hall, there were fourteen seats, all taken up by the people in black. Chu Yang's main seat was also taken by an arrogant veiled man with heinous eyes... Of course these people did not put any weight on this establishment of the prince...

In front of each of them was a cup of tea with steam rising from it. This scene was made possible by Wu Qian Qian; before she went to find Chu Yang she had put a lot of effort into appeasing them.

Next to the great hall, was a small courtyard belonging to Fierce Blood Hall. Here, there were currently intermittent moans; probably belonging to the ones trying to stop the people in black earlier...

These people in black were Chu Yang's most hated enemies; they were the culprits responsible for Mo Qing Wu's injury...

The people of Hei Mo clan.

They had finally arrived at his door!

On that day, Chu Yang had given orders for Mo Cheng Yu to be brought to Bu Tian Pavilion in front of many people. It would be strange if these people did not find out about it.

The sound of hooves was heard outside.

The eyes of the people in black brightened: The legendary King of Hell Chu has finally decided to show himself?

The sound of hooves stopped at the gate... then, there was the sound of rapid footsteps... finally, a person wearing a black cloak and a ferocious mask quickly and calmly walked in...

Two eyes shined under the night light with icy brightness... persistent and calm...

King of Hell Chu stood at the entrance of the great hall, slowly and coldly surveying the situation. Then he said gently, "You came to find me?"

King of Hell Chu's words were very warm with every intention to avoid a confrontation. His voice was very calm with a touch of surprise, as if he had no idea what the motives of these people were.

"You are King of Hell Chu? The minister of Bu Tian Pavilion?" The man in black sitting at the leader's seat asked, and laughed, "Such a big authority; seems a little arrogant, too!"

Chu Yang's legs felt weak... It was not because he was scared, but because he had used too much energy to help Nine Tribulations Sword absorb the contents inside the vault. By the time the absorption was done, his internal energy was completely gone; not a little bit was left.

After that, there was the matter of him quickly returning and not having any time to recover. But given the current situation, Chu Yang expressly wanted this to happen.

The timing was coincidental; Chu Yang also wanted to use these people to spread the rumor that he did not know any martial arts...

"In front of you seniors, why would this lowly official dare to be arrogant?" Even though Chu Yang was wearing a mask, his voice made everyone feel cool as if they just drank spring rain water. Much like the voice of a good friend that they have not seen for many years.

He called himself a lowly official, hinting that he was an official of the royal court, not a person from Jiang Hu! Since you people are talking to me, you should use less of your Jiang Hu etiquettes.

"Huh?" The sight of a King level master was really powerful! The leader had some suspicions as he looked at Chu Yang's situation.

This minister is supposed to be the leader of the greatest spy organization in Iron Cloud Nation. How could he have not a little bit of strength? Plus, how is his spiritual energy downright pitiful like this?

He is an ordinary person who does not know any martial arts!

When he was walking in, his legs were weak and his eyes were glazed. He had no muscles and his skin did not have the color a person who practices martial arts should have.

Could the rumors be wrong?

“You have all traveled a great distance to get here, and I still have not had the chance to get your names!” Chu Yang cupped his hands.

“You don’t need to know who we are!” The black outfits glared at him, “Today, we came to bother the minister so we could ask about a few things, to clarify some things…”

“Haha, I know exactly why you are here!” Chu Yang casually walked into the great hall, to be surrounded by twelve Revered Martial Artists. Then he went to the side and quietly sat down.

“You know?” The leader looked at Chu Yang with a cruel gaze. Now that Chu Yang was sitting very close to him, he was sure that Chu Yang was just an ordinary person.

“Two days ago, at the citadel’s gate, this lowly official discovered two people that were severely injured. I felt sorry for them and brought them to Bu Tian Pavilion for treatment.” Chu Yang’s voice was full of sadness, but not the least bit of regret…

“Where are these two now?” The leader’s eyes fixed firmly on Chu Yang; under the power of my gaze, forget about ordinary people, even a Revered Martial Artist’s lie will be caught immediately!

“Haha, I am sure this senior already knows that our Iron Cloud Nation has always valued talent.” Chu Yang sighed, “Many years of war has left the nation weakened, and lacking in talent. On top of that, talents are becoming harder and harder to find; it is currently the nation’s greatest concern. Since the prince has entrusted me with Bu Tian Pavilion, I have had many sleepless nights. This

lowly official has been helpless in changing the situation…”

Chu Yang gently recounted.

There was a slight hint of impatience in the leader’s eyes, but he still did not interrupt…

“That day, when I suddenly discovered a master in trouble right here in Iron Cloud…” Chu Yang smiled bitterly, “This lowly official immediately had the thought to welcome them…”

The moment he said these words, all fourteen people in black sneered. Welcome? You think he is an ordinary person? This is a person of the Mo clan; moreover, a King level master!

Even if he suffered a serious injury, you Lower Three Heavens people can’t even get him to adopt you, let alone welcome him. But once Chu Yang said this, everyone knew what happened next…

So that’s why he saved those two! Right! If it was me in the position of Bu Tian Pavilion’s minister, I would most likely have done the same…

Iron Cloud’s current situation is dire.

“The truth is, I have taken too much liberty…” Chu Yang sighed in failure.

“What happened to those two after that?” The leader asked after his eyes flashed from behind the thin veil. Even he did not realize that his own voice had become much calmer than before.

He was just someone working diligently for his country and did not know the situation, how could he be blamed?

“That great man was fine; while he did have some major internal injuries, he recovered after a short amount of time. However, the young lady was not so well off. She was so young and was terrified. Plus, she suffered a serious injury; we were almost unable to save her…”

Chu Yang said in a respectful tone, “Luckily, the prince greatly

valued talents, and brought those two to Senior Du Shi Qing…”

“However, her injury was too serious. Even Du Shi Qing was only able to temporarily keep her alive and could not completely heal it…”

The leader contemplated and then nodded. He knew that with his single sword strike, while slightly blocked by Mo Cheng Yu, was not something a little nine year old girl could handle… This guy spoke the truth.

Chu Yang’s words were ninety percent true. Besides his motivation, everything else he said was the truth. Naturally, this made it easier for others to trust in those words…

“And after that?”

“Then that man… ahhh… he was really loyal and courageous. He was truly a good man.” Chu Yang generously praised Mo Cheng Yu, “Seeing the situation, he only took half a day to recover and immediately took the little girl to find another physician…”

“I tried to keep him here, but it was useless. I even offered him my minister position, but he remained unmoved.” Chu Yang said in admiration, “His only condition was that we heal that little miss’s injury. Then he would do us one favor. Only… regretfully, we were unable to do that.”

“Unable… Haha…” That leader laughed loftily. He thought to himself: You people wanted to heal an injury caused by my Hei Mo sword’s dark aura? You don’t know your own limits.

“Hmmm… There are some errors in your words. You are lying to me!” The leader felt that while Chu Yang sincerely told the truth, there were some things he was still covering up…

“Alright… Your eyes are definitely skilled!” Chu said with admiration, and helplessly admitted, “That man said that while we were not able to heal his little miss, he still owes our Bu Tian Pavilion a favor. In the future he would definitely repay our

kindness.”

Chapter 129: King of Hell Chu is loyal until death

Chu Yang sincerely looked at the leader and said, “Senior, I have complete faith in the promise of a martial arts master from Jiang Hu. Therefore, I have great expectations… In fact, my future plans will be changed because of this. However… this is Bu Tian Pavilion’s secret, and it has to do with the conflict between two countries; I hope you will keep this a secret.”

The leader slowly turned to another person and nodded, looking somewhat satisfied…

Yes, this is consistent with Mo Cheng Yu’s character, always pay it back whether it is kindness or revenge; an annoying characteristic…

“King of Hell Chu, you seem honest…” The leader said somberly, “But, I am afraid that martial arts master will not be able to do anything for you…”

“Why?” Chu Yang smiled, “That person seemed like an upstanding person who would definitely keep his promise; for a person like that, his promise is most important to him…”

“Haha… Why?” All fourteen people in black broke out in laughter; one of them mocked, “Because the person you are talking about will soon die at the hands of our leader! How will a dead person show gratitude?”

“Huh?” There was a look of shock in Chu Yang’s eyes; he stammered, “This… this…”

“Where did they go?” The leader growled icily.

“This, this lowly official doesn’t know…” King of Hell Chu seemed to be immersed in his great loss, and pleaded, “Senior, with that man… can you be lenient? Such a good person… it would be a waste if he dies.” King of Hell Chu sighed.

“This is not up to a lowly official like you!” The leader glared at him coldly; his gaze was icy. Chu Yang perfectly timed his reaction and shuddered. Then he made a show of trying to regain his composure...

The King level masters in black looked at each other; there was a faint hint of lip movements as they seemed to be discussing something.

While they were people of the Hei Mo clan from Middle Three Heavens, they did not need to make trouble with a lower kingdom. Now that no results could be found here, they would just simply leave...

Chu Yang looked anxious; he wanted to say something but did not dare...

“Do you have something else to say?” The leader noticed Chu Yang’s reaction.

“It is... This lowly official dare not say it...” Chu Yang stammered, “All of you seniors are very powerful... Our Iron Cloud is currently in a great crisis... It’s bold, but I want to ask...!”

King of Hell Chu’s eyes became filled with righteousness and heroism; with a willingness to risk everything, he stood up and bowed as he said loudly, “If I may boldly ask... Can you help our Iron Cloud? The six hundred million people in it will forever be grateful to you!”

“Bold? You are really bold!” The leader in black almost laughed, “You saved our enemy and helped him escape. The fact that we haven’t killed you is already merciful enough. You want to recruit us as well? Huh?”

The leader’s words made all of the Hei Mo masters burst into laughter.

They looked at King of Hell Chu with mockery; it was incredible.

Chu Yang remained silent for a moment and then said seriously,

“Your words are wrong... When this lowly official saved these people, I did not know about the grudge between you. Plus, even if I knew...”

“What would you do if you knew?” The leader asked coldly.

Chu Yang took a deep breath and said loudly, “If I knew, for the hope of being able to recruit him to help our Iron Cloud, I would still save him! Even if it is just for a promise!”

True words with a powerful air! Chu Yang looked straight at this leader, surprisingly uncompromising!

Suddenly, all of the people in black were stunned by these words! While this Minister Chu was just an ordinary person, without even a little martial arts ability... but he had now, unexpectedly, shown himself to be noble and righteous!

At this moment, Chu Yang had shown his courage, earning the admiration of others!

The leader icily stared at Chu Yang for a long time; finally, he sighed and said, “Good for Minister Chu! Good for King of Hell Chu!”

His voice even carried a tone of accolade.

He immediately shook his sleeves and stood up. He said casually, “When I came here today, I had planned to level Bu Tian Pavilion if I did not find the person I wanted! And yet... haha, you are worthy of being King of Hell Chu!”

“I will spare your life today!”

“Let’s go!” He ordered. Thirteen people in black simultaneously stood up and went outside. No one said anything else; they were given an order so, of course, no one dared to protest. Plus, the courage and fortitude that Chu Yang just demonstrated made these ruthless killers greatly impressed!

A scholar who could not even tie up a chicken, managed to

remain calm and speak with their leader bearing down on him. Such calmness was enough to touch people's emotion.

Moreover, Minister Chu had shown himself to be chivalrous and loyal to his country and his people. Such an admirable, manly characteristic was valued anywhere!

Even evil people respected a hero!

What's more, ignorance was not a crime; it was just a simple misunderstanding!

The leader of the group was the last one to leave. He walked lightly to the door, and turned his head; the cruel gaze had an unexpected hint of warmth as he looked at Chu Yang, "It's too bad that you don't know martial arts; but... if Iron Cloud Nation falls... would you be willing to follow us back to our clan?"

Chu Yang hesitated; he could not believe that his performance had made him favored by Mo Qing Wu's greatest enemy?!

"This lowly official is of Iron Cloud; even in death, I will be a ghost of Iron Cloud. If this nation falls, I am sure that I would have turned into ashes and dust before then! Your kindness, this lowly official will just have to write it down in my heart..." Chu Yang said heroically.

His words were not lies... if Iron Cloud falls, it was equivalent to Chu Yang's mission in inverting fate failing. And his master, brother, and Qing Wu would not be lucky enough to survive...

If that was the case, there was no point in Chu Yang living any longer...

"Good man! Pity! Pity!" The leader repeated the phrase pity twice and gently flew away; his figure flashed in the night sky and disappeared.

A faint voice was heard, "Carefully search other locations in Iron Cloud; with his serious injuries, he could not have gotten far..."

After they left, another shadow on the roof of the great hall flashed and disappeared...

Even the two Hei Mo clan King level masters did not notice when this person had come...

They finally left! It was not until now that Chu Yang finally relaxed and plopped on the floor; his whole body was devoid of strength...After today, the danger that the Hei Mo clan poses to Qing Wu is perhaps reduced partly?

When he was answering questions earlier, he used all of his strength. Now that he was finally able to relax, his whole body felt extremely tired!

The aura of that leader was not exactly easy to handle.

Chu Yang took a deep breath and tried to regulate what little energy that was left in his dantian. After a long time, he was able to feel energy from his dantian slowly move...

He controlled his consciousness, and moved the energy for three cycles when there was a sudden bang. An influx of energy from his meridians went into his dantian and joined with Nine Tribulations Sword. After that, the Seven Shades cold energy that Nine Tribulations Sword absorbed from before gushed out and wrapped around all of the other energy...

Pure energy flooded his meridians; the massive force broke through his bottleneck, like a thousand-mile wide twister attacking. That bottleneck was an old dam that could no longer hold against such a force... almost immediately, pure energy broke through the blockade! After that, it surged and swept through the meridians in his entire body!

Chu Yang had been stuck at a bottleneck for a long time and was not able to breakthrough, but now that blockade was directly broken without any difficulties!

He could not help but rejoice internally. He closed his eyes and

directed the flow of energy in his body through the barriers. At the same time, he let his mind sink into the sea of consciousness, and combined the Gentle Force of Water that he finally comprehended with this surging energy...

Within moments, Chu Yang immediately entered the enlightened state.

Earlier he had already used up all of his energy and mental strength to fight the pressure bored down by the two King level masters and twelve Revered Martial warriors. Plus, he had to control his mind to fool his opponents...

This type of tremendous pressure bearing down made his mind taut like a guitar string. Even at his best state, with his mind at its peak, he would not necessarily be able to handle it! But Chu Yang used his pure will power and bodily strength to bear it!

While he did not show any signs, he was actually at the point where his mind was about to collapse! And at that moment, his opponents suddenly departed.

Under a pressure that was many times beyond his own threshold, the bottleneck suddenly became nothing! Once he had regained his composure, he did not need to put any effort into advancing to the realm of Martial Artist!

Chu Yang had been stuck at this bottleneck for a few days. So to be able to breakthrough like that made him indescribably happy.

Since the moment Chu Yang went into the great hall, he did not bother to lower his voice. Therefore, Wu Qian Qian, as well as Cheng Zi Ang and Chen Yu Tong, on the other side heard everything he said clearly.

The feelings of the three, however, were not the same.

Cheng Zi Ang and Chen Yu Tong were similar in general. They both knew well how terrifying those people were! The weakest one was probably not any less powerful than the two of them!

Those people would probably just have to give a forceful cough and Minister Chu would die from shock!

However, Chu Yang did not act arrogant or meek. He spoke calmly without compromising in any way!

Who else could have done this? Others would have probably peed and pooped in their pants already!

And finally, the words: “This lowly official is of Iron Cloud; even in death, I will be a ghost of Iron Cloud. If this nation falls, I am sure that I would have turned into ashes and dust before then! Your kindness, this lowly official will just have to write it down in my heart...”

They were filled with righteousness, courage, and loyalty... Even an idiot would have understood this!

In the end, even the enemies who wanted to cause trouble were conquered by Minister Chu’s righteousness! Let alone Cheng Zi Ang and Chen Yu Tong who were listening on the side.

At this moment, the two were on the verge of tears!

Chapter 130: Breakthrough to Martial Artist

Chen Yu Tong and Cheng Zi Ang looked at each other; the little annoyance that they had before disappeared from their hearts. Each saw in the eyes of the other the look of “fanatical worship”!

Minister Chu was the most loyal citizen of Iron Cloud! Being able to work under this person was something to be proud of.

Only Wu Qian Qian had some suspicions.

Chu Yang’s performance today was extraordinary. If Wu Qian Qian did not know Chu Yang from before, she would probably believe him without question. She thought to herself: Chu Yang, he... when did he become such a person? An ethical person who upholds justice? Dedicated to the country and its people? Doesn’t seem like him...!!!”

In the prince’s manor, Tie Bu Tian frowned. A shadow stood quietly in front of him.

“Minister Chu! Haha! Good for Minister Chu!” His brows relaxed, and Tie Bu Tian calmly smiled, “These things that Minister Chu said, none of them are the truth!”

After the hearing the shadow in front of him report back, he thought about it before coming to this conclusion.

The shadow was not one to talk a lot; for him, fewer words held greater value. If the prince had asked him to give all the details about everything that happened, he would have gone mad...

Tie Bu Tian considered for a long time and finally sighed, “If these words that Minister Chu said were from his heart that would be wonderful! Unfortunate... Really unfortunate...!!!”

Being able to come to such a conclusion was not exactly difficult; it was just that Tie Bu Tian continued to hold on to the hope of

being able to recruit Chu Yang. But now, Chu Yang's words of loyalty and courage had made Tie Bu Tian relinquish such an impossible hope...

****

Chu Yang stood up and comfortably stretched his body. Every joint made cracking sounds. He immediately opened his eyes; two electrifying rays shot out.

He finally had a breakthrough!

He was currently a grade one Martial Artist!

A grade one Martial Artist was nothing in Jiang Hu. However, the basic level in sects of Lower Three Heavens were Martial Artists, and most of them were Martial Masters above fifth grade. And first grade Martial Artists in Lower Three Heavens were not even worth mentioning when it came to those of great clans because even the lowest ranking members were capable of that much.

Normally, Martial Artists were not sent out for any tasks because it would just mean death. Even a ninth grade Martial Artist would have to stay home and work hard on cultivation.

Chu Yang will be seventeen in a few months. Most descendants of clans would be third or fourth grade Martial Artists. And super geniuses like Gu Du Xing would be Martial Great Masters already!

It was nothing to be proud of!

However, Chu Yang's cultivation conditions could not be compared to those talents! While Lower Three Heavens had many treasures, compared to the wealth of clans in Middle Three Heavens, they were insignificant.

Besides, compared to Lower Three Heavens, Middle Three Heavens was a place with much greater density of spiritual energy. Rare herbs grew there in greater quantity, and they had better quality. The talents of Middle Three Heavens essentially grew

from eating them.

Chu Yang had never been able to eat any of those things. Another thing was these talents started cultivation very early in life and gradually advanced. A Martial Great Master of twenty already was already nurtured for cultivation in the womb; this was no different from him having twenty-one years of cultivation!

Chu Yang had an incredibly weak foundation before, and it was not even half a year since his rebirth!

Half a year... From a third grade Martial Warrior to a first grade Martial Artist! He went through eight grades!

Even though his rank was still low and advancing was not too difficult... But that speed was truly unprecedented! In all of history, it had never happened!

“Chu Yang, how are you? Are you tired?” Wu Qian Qian waited next to him with a piping hot bowl of soup and a bowl of white rice. She said gently, “You have not eaten anything since last night.”

It was not until she said this that Chu Yang felt his stomach rumbled. Without any hesitation, he took the soup and rice, and ate like a hungry beast.

Wu Qian Qian watched Chu Yang eat, and could not help but smile happily.

“Ah!” After a few bites, Chu Yang suddenly looked up and asked, “What time is it?”

“It’s morning; you were meditating so I ordered them not to disturb you.” Wu Qian Qian said softly.

“This is bad!! This is bad!!” A piece of white rice was still on his lip. He dropped the bowl of rice and immediately jumped out.

“What’s wrong? You... You should finish your food first!!” Wu Qian Qian stomped angrily.

But Chu Yang only ran faster and was gone; only his voice echoed back, “I am in a hurry… The rice and soup was very good! Thank you!”

Watching Chu Yang disappear, Wu Qian Qian stomped her foot and bit her lip as she muttered, “What’s more urgent than your health? You are really…!!!”

Clearing the bowls, Wu Qian Qian looked at more than half a bowl of leftover soup and remembered Chu Yang had said “The rice and soup was very good!”

“As long as you think it’s good, I will cook more for you tomorrow.” Wu Qian Qian whispered. Then she suddenly worried that someone might have heard and quickly turned and looked all around. Her face reddened as she smiled.

Chu Yang had completely forgotten about the two people who did not have any food since he left.

If they felt hungry and went out to find food, then that would be disastrous!

He hurried back to Emerald Flow Lake. The moment he entered Heavenly Armament Pavilion, Chu Yang was immediately hit with an odor so strong he almost stumbled. He wailed loudly, “Motherf*! Why is it so foul???”

While it was deadly stinky, Chu Yang was actually elated. This showed that the Hei Mo people had been here! Moreover, they searched especially carefully; otherwise, there would not be such a special scent from these medicine pot shards.

Thinking about how these Hei Mo people searched through the medicine pots and not finding anything then making a mess out of anger, Chu Yang could not hold back his laughter. He quickly stepped inside, but, after only two steps, he hear a rustling sound.

There are still people here?

Chu Yang crept closer. He only saw Mo Qing Wu’s small figure

going about busily with a silk handkerchief covering her nose. She was clumsily putting things back in the room.

His eyes became hot and he could not help but feel a little hazy. It was as if Chu Yang was looking back at his previous life when each time Mo Qing Wu came to his place, she was always busy cleaning. In front of his eyes, that gentle and graceful figure once again appeared. It quietly looked at him and called to him, “Chu Yang...!!!”

“Qing Wu...!!!” Chu Yang murmured. There was a pain in his heart like piercing needles or a flooding tide.

“Chu Yang! Brother Chu Yang! You are home. But why did you call my name?” Mo Qing Wu’s innocent voice rang out and interrupted Chu Yang’s trip down memory lane.

“Oh, nothing! Xiao Wu, why are you out here?” Chu Yang shook his head. Then he walked forward and held Mo Qing Wu’s little hand tightly; he rebuked, “You are so little; what would you do if you get injured? Don’t do this again!”

Mo Qing Wu complied; while she was still young, she was still able to understand Chu Yang’s concern. She tilted her head and smiled, “Uncle Cheng Yu spat out blood again; he is currently recovering. I... I am a little hungry so I immediately went out to find some food.”

Then she covered her nose with here little hand and fanned a few times, “I can’t believe Brother Chu Yang’s place is this messy. This stench can kill people. Brother Chu Yang, you’re so dirty...”

“Ahhh...!!!” Chu Yang was silent, then he hurriedly explained himself, “I set up these things as a trap for those people that caused your injury... You were unlucky to come out at this moment. Normally, I am not too messy...”

“Ah! I see.” Mo Qing Wu’s eyes turned red as she said guiltily, “So Brother Chu Yang did it for me, and I misunderstood you. Brother

Chu Yang, I am really sorry!”

“It’s fine! It’s fine!!! Now that this place has become like this, I am sure that those people already came.” Chu Yang said, “Be good and sit here for a little. I will clean up and cook food for you to eat. You haven’t eaten anything for a long time; you must be hungry, right?”

“Yes...!!!” Mo Qing Wu sniffed and rubbed her little stomach, “My stomach has become so thin... Look!!!” Then she lifted her shirt to reveal a snow white stomach. She pointed her finger at it and said, full of grievance, “You see? Isn’t it flat? But once I eat, it will become round again.”

Chu Yang felt dizzy, and when she let her shirt back down, he said, “Xiao Wu! A lady should not show her stomach for people to see. Remember this!”

“But my mother never said this!” Mo Qing Wu shook her head.

Chu Yang smacked his forehead. He realized he was being too serious. Mo Qing Wu was currently nine years old. There was no problem with her showing her stomach. But while he thought that way, his subconscious still did not want anyone to see...

Chu Yang quickly cleaned up. First, he placed all the medicine jars back on the shelves and tossed the stinky things into Emerald Flow Lake; the stench was slightly diffused. Then he burned forty to fifty aromatic incense sticks.

After a while, Mo Qing Wu sniffed. She went around with her nose up smelling the air like a puppy searching for a smell. At that time, she announced with satisfaction, “The smell is gone!”

Chu Yang sweated profusely. He could not believe that a little girl could have this type of personality. He went out to make a few dishes and cook a pot of rice. He turned down Mo Qing Wu’s offer to help and did everything before bringing the food into the secret underground chamber.

At this time, Mo Cheng Yu finally came to.

The moment he opened his eyes, Mo Cheng Yu was greeted by one of Chu Yang's ferocious scolding, "How could you allow this to happen? Didn't I already told you not to let Xiao Wu go outside? Hei Mo people are currently everywhere. What would you do if you get discovered? Your age is already great, and you are also a King level master. How is it that you can't even handle such a small task?"

Mo Cheng Yu's old face reddened. He knew that he was at fault and could not refute; he could only bow his head and receive the scolding.

"Brother Chu Yang, Uncle Cheng Yu did tell me not to go outside, but I was hungry so I snuck out. Can you not yell at Uncle Cheng Yu anymore?" Mo Qing Wu gently tugged Chu Yang's sleeve as she pleaded for Mo Cheng Yu.

"Xiao Wu, don't be bothered... No one can convince me to let this go!" Chu Yang was livid. With a King level master protecting Mo Qing Wu and she was almost in danger again. This was extreme negligence! Because you suffered seriously internal injuries, I had been lenient to you for more than a day. But I can't believe you continued to screw up again.

Plus, looking at your injuries, when Diwu Qing Rou's people come in a few weeks, what can you do?? Not scolding you would be too good for you!

Chapter 131: Cursing and flattering

Chu Yang was truly in great anger... When he saw Mo Qing Wu out there by herself earlier, he was startled... But he was not angry at this nine year old Mo Qing Wu, nor was he willing to be... So, naturally, all of it was poured on Mo Cheng Yu's head the moment he saw him. Minister Chu's eyes widened, and spit flew.

Mo Cheng Yu was straining to contain his anger, but his neck was bulging and his eyes were just about to pop... A King level master was getting scolded and cursed at by some Martial Artist... This feeling was too new to him...

Moreover, this Martial Artist punk did not bother with manners and reprimanded him nonstop for half an hour...

While Mo Cheng Yu looked like he would explode with his red face and his teeth grinding, he did not dare to say a word. A faint, odd idea came to his head: This Chu Yang cares more about little miss than I do; the way he is acting right now is like someone who lost his wife to another guy...

Chu Yang was finally done with his scolding, "In short, you have been negligent in your duties this time... I am very unhappy... If this happens again, then there is no reason for a King level master like you to take up space in this world; just quickly dig a hole and jump in..."

After not eating for a day, Mo Cheng Yu's stomach was rumbling. And yet, after eating all of Chu Yang's reprimands, he had completely lost his appetite...

This guy is too ill-mannered. It's not bad enough that he pointed at my face and scolded me, he even jumped right on top and criticized me. Motherf*! I am still a King level master... Since when have I suffered like this?

Even our clan leader doesn't treat me like this...

Mo Cheng Yu was fuming!

On the other hand, Mo Qing Wu felt nothing; she only saw that Brother Chu Yang was being very good to her.

Chu Yang might have cursed at the person but he did not forget to pat the horse's ass (TLN: flatter). After some scolding, he would insert something like these: "Xiao Wu is so cute; can you handle it if something was to happen to her?", "Xiao Wu is so intelligent; if something happens... don't you feel guilty?", "Xiao Wu is so adorable; if..."...

Therefore, while Mo Cheng Yu was scolded to the point he could barely lift his head and almost wanted to kill himself to atone for his for his sins, the little loli standing on the side was somewhat elated... although she found the overall scolding a little unbearable...

The moment she heard Chu Yang say "Let's eat!" the little girl quickly grabbed a pair of chopsticks and ate ferociously... After those encouraging praises, the chopsticks moved like rainfall... It was not until she was almost full that she squinted those adorable eyes and asked, "Brother Chu Yang, is Xiao Wu really great like you what you said?"

"Of course!" Chu Yang was also hungry and ate at a not so slow speed, but when he heard these words, he immediately halted his eating and said sincerely, "Xiao Wu, you must remember..."

"What?" The little loli was somewhat confused...

"You must remember that, in this world, you are the most beautiful! You are the smartest! You are the most adorable! You are the best, best, the best of the best!" Chu Yang said seriously. His tone was solemn as if he was making a vow.

"Wow..." The little loli jumped up high in joy. The she became a little embarrassed and asked further, "I am really that great?" Her twinkling eyes showed clear expectation of Chu Yang's

confirmation.

Chu Yang would of course never let such an adorable little loli be disappointed. He seriously nodded and said with great certainty, “Of course! Compared to what I said, Xiao Wu is even better than that… by a hundred times… by a thousand times, by ten thousand times!”

Little loli was elated; she was at a loss for words and, all of a sudden, she pounced and grabbed Chu Yang’s neck… with a “smack”, she kissed Chu Yang’s cheek with her greasy lips. After leaving a clear trace of oil, she released Chu Yang and exclaimed, “Brother Chu Yang, in my heart, you are also the best, the best of the very best…”

Chu Yang touched his cheek as if still feeling a lingering gentle touch. Then he unconsciously smiled like an idiot. Oh heaven and earth… I have succeeded with the first step… I got a kiss…

These were Mo Qing Wu’s lips… even if she was still just a little loli who did not know anything with a greasy mouth…

After that, the atmosphere became even more intimate… Mo Qing Wu ate a few bites, then she would squint her eyes and tilt her head in Chu Yang’s direction smiling. After a few more bite, she would snicker… Naturally, Chu Yang reciprocated. Every now and then he would laugh in encouragement or smile dotingly… sometimes, he would even giggle idiotically…

“Eat, eat this piece of rib… And this piece of meat, too…”

“Xiao Wu, here… eat this…” Chu Yang attentively persuaded little Loli to eat the vegetable stir-fry dish.

“This… Uncle Cheng Yu has not eaten yet, and there is not much vegetable left…” Mo Qing Wu looked and realized that there were very little left over on each dish; she was a little concerned. Earlier, she was in a great state of mind so she ate twice as much as normal…

“He’s not hungry; don’t pay any attention… Here, eat more of this…” Chu Yang said as if he did not care if Mo Cheng Yu lived or died.

“Who says I am not hungry?” Mo Cheng Yu controlled his tone as he was riled up with anger… Chu Yang’s scolding from earlier made him lose his appetite. Then he had to witness one old and one young inflating each other’s ego; from the exaggerated words, to the warm tones, to the flattering expressions… They truly made people feel nauseated!

Little miss is little so it’s understandable… but Chu Yang, mother*, he is a grown-up… how could he be like this? He is even worse than little miss…

The moment he regained his appetite, he had to witness Chu Yang making faces with little Loli… His hunger instantly flew away. On top of that, he felt as if something was coming up to his throat and he was about to puke…

At that point, Chu Yang became increasing rude; he even showed no intentions of saving any food at all… Mo Cheng Yu was utterly livid.

He’s bullying people too much!

I only ate a few bites, and the plates are already wiped clean. Mo Cheng Yu lifted his chopsticks, and he was astonished by the empty plates. He became extremely glum. Not only did he get a scolding today, he was also not able to eat…

Since he just started eating, his appetite was piqued…

Nearby, Mo Qing Wu was holding her little stomach and rolled back and forth on her bed, “Wow, wow, I am so full…”

Then she sneakily lifted up her shirt and pouted, “This is bad; this is bad. My stomach is inflated like a drum…”

Chu Yang burped, and happily picked his teeth on the side. He said to Mo Qing Wu, “Was it good? I will make more for you

tomorrow…”

“Great!” Mo Qing Wu patted her stomach happily… In fact, it was not because the food was very good, but because Chu Yang’s praises really made people comfortable and gave them good appetites…

“But I haven’t eaten anything…” Mo Cheng Yu said angrily.

“Xiao Wu, come on… let’s move around a bit… move around with me to help your body digest quickly. Otherwise, eating all that food, you could turn into a very ugly fat pig…” Chu Yang did not even give Mo Cheng Yu half a glance.

The words “very ugly” had great implications so Mo Qing Wu immediately rolled off the bed and helped Chu Yang clear the dining table…

They cleaned and talked nonstop…

“Brother Chu Yang, do you think I will be beautiful when I grow up?”

“Beautiful! Certainly beautiful! You will be a top beauty!”

“Really?”

“Really! You cannot find another girl in the world who is prettier than Xiao Wu…”

“Really? Hehehe…! Brother Chu Yang, when you grow up, I am certain you will be most handsome as well…”

“Really? Hahaha…”

“Ack ack… This is…” Mo Cheng Yu sighed and lamented. He wanted to cry but no tears came… Living in the same house with this combo is inhumane torture. I don’t know if I can survive in the days to come…

It was not until morning when Chu Yang went out and came back with a large basket of fruits, vegetables, dried meat, etc. He tossed it in front Mo Cheng Yu’s face, “Well, are you hungry yet?”

“Get...!” Mo Cheng Yu’s eyes welled up and he roared like thunder.

****

The next morning.

The prime minister’s manor, Great Zhao Nation.

Diwu Qing Rou frowned as he looked at a piece of paper laying in front of him.

There were only a few words written on this paper.

“Painstaking efforts of many years... try my best.”

“What do you think?” Diwu Qing Rou stood up and posted this paper on the wall. Then he back up three steps and continued to look at it carefully.

There were currently three people next to him. One of them was the thin person from the other day.

“This is definitely Number One’s handwriting.” After the thin person pondered as he analyzed carefully, he confirmed it.

All of these three men were Diwu Qing Rou’s trusted counselors. Each one was resourceful, and had the ability to rule their own regions...

This thin person was Han Bu Chu... The middle-aged scholar was Cheng Yun He... The young master with a righteous face was Gao Sheng!

Han Bu Chu and Cheng Yun He had had clear origins... but Gao Sheng’s origin was mysterious. Furthermore, he had only been at Great Zhao for a few years. Because of Diwu Qing Rou’s favor, he had risen high in rank. Normally, he was extremely arrogant and looked down on everyone else...

While Gao Sheng’s face looked righteous, he head was filled with schemes. There were many occasions where his thoughts would coincide with Diwu Qing Rou’s... He was Diwu Qing Rou’s right-

hand man.

“There is something odd in these words.” Gao Sheng looked carefully and said, “It’s definitely Number One’s writing, but there seems to be something abnormal…”

“Yes, there is something strange…” Cheng Yun He clasped his hands behind his back and mused.

“What’s strange about it?” Diwu Qing Rou smile; there was a trace of worry behind it. This was Diwu Qing Rou’s way of doing things… He knew that he was in a position of great power and would not be able to do everything in one lifetime with only his effort. Therefore, with these planning sessions, he used many tactics to train these people. Then someday, they could work independently.

At each session, even if Diwu Qing Rou already came to his own conclusions, he would not say it and, instead, allow everyone to discuss it. It was by this process that those next to him could grow.

“The handwriting definitely belongs to Number One. The tone also matches with his normal tone. Moreover, given Number One’s character, this is extremely normal.” Han Bu Chu said, “We all know that Number One is an arrogant person. Whether it is planning or analyzing, he is not any less than us… He would absolutely not accept a loss. I think that there are no issues with this note.”

“This note also shows that Number One’s position of power in Iron Cloud Nation is still as solid as a mountain, unshakable. Even if that King of Hell Chu suspects something, he would not dare to make a move against a person who is considered the living saint of Iron Cloud…” Han Bu Chu smiled and said, “The prime minister can put his mind at ease!”

“No! This note is abnormal. At a glance, the first set of words and the second set of words have a normal distance from each other. And this space here shows that Number One might have written

the first set, and thought for a long time before concluding with the second set... But this very space is the issue." Cheng Yun He said, "This space should not exist at all. How could Number One not know that he was in a precarious state? What does he need to think about? Did he need to spend a sleepless night and decided to not let go? These were obvious things; a decisive person like his really should not leave an empty space like that."

Chapter 132: Archenemy

“Ah, Gao Sheng, tell us about your views!” Diwu Qing Rou smiled.

“Brother Cheng was just talking about the overall layout. I am thinking about the feeling in each word and the way they are written!” Gao Sheng frowned as he looked at the paper and said, “In my humble opinion, these words are mechanical and incoherent.”

“Let’s look at the words ‘many years’, these two words were written with one feeling. However, compared to the two words ‘painstaking efforts’, they are not the same. And the word ‘effort’ in ‘painstaking effort’ seems to have a weaker brushstroke even though the two would have been written at the same time… This is not normal at all. Plus, the words ‘try my best’, while written in one go, seems very dry. They lack a certain solemn air that should be there.”

“If this was indeed written by Number One, then, at the moment these words were written, Number One should have been ready to fight to the death. We all know that when a person falls into this state, his thoughts and feelings would definitely be shown in his brushstrokes. And with these thoughts, there should be Number One’s arrogance as well. This note should show a mentality that he would ‘rather be crushed jade than a piece of intact tile’. Yet, these words do not show any trace of such mentality; on the contrary, they are very bland!”

Gao Sheng continued, “Therefore, prime minister, from this note, I deduced that Number One probably ran into trouble. Perhaps he has already fallen in the hands of King of Hell Chu, and this note is a trap!”

“Oh?” Diwu Qing Rou’s eyes revealed a trace of a smile, “If this is a trap, then how are they hoping to trap us? What does that King

of Hell Chu want to achieve?”

“If we were fooled by this note, then we would come to the conclusion that Number One is still safe, and still in power as before.” Gao Sheng glanced at Han Bu Chu; his eyes were full of mockery, as if he was having a discussion with a fool.

Han Bu Chu snorted and turned away.

“If we hold on to this belief and maintain contact with Number One, then that King of Hell Chu would just have to sit and wait to catch all of our people. While we can trust that Number One will never talk, we can’t say the same for other people. Once King of Hell Chu manages to pry open their mouths, any little tidbit of information could lead the whole Iron Cloud spy network under Number One’s control to be uprooted! That would be extremely detrimental!”

“This is King of Hell Chu’s sinister trap!”

“Really? Then, in your opinion... is Number One still alive?” Diwu Qing Rou seemed partly interested in this discussion.

“It is not certain! But the probability of him still living is high!” Gao Sheng thought for a long while, and finally answered with uncertainty.

“Why?” Diwu Qing Rou looked at him.

“If Number One falls into King of Hell Chu’s hands then he would absolutely not reveal anything.” Gao Sheng mused, “But with such an important player, the enemies would naturally not release him, and killing him would be too much of a waste. If I am King of Hell Chu... I would lock him up; if he does not speak after one day, then two days, three days... I would even hold him a few months to see if I can make him talk.”

Gao Sheng continued, “According to my guess, Number One is still alive. Of course, he is not in good condition. He has been tortured; that’s for sure!”

Han Bu Chu snapped back, “Gao Sheng, there are some issues with your logic! You said that there was the possibility he had fallen into the hands of the enemy; that’s a possibility in any case. But you went on to talk about torture as if he has indeed fallen into King of Hell Chu’s hands. You’re being too presumptuous!”

Gao Sheng looked him disdainfully, and mockingly smiled without bothering to reply.

Han Bu Chu boiled with anger. He wanted to retort, but Cheng Yun He pinched his thigh, making him seethe in pain. Diwu Qing Rou waved his arm, signaling them to stop the discussion.

“What is the possibility that Number One is already dead?” Diwu Qing Rou asked.

“This possibility… is very small.” Gao Sheng hesitated then replied, “No matter how they torture him, Number One would not say anything. Someone like this, you can’t depend on getting a lucky break through torture. In other words, his being alive is just for torture’s sake…”

“If King of Hell Chu is righteous, he would be likely to give Number One a merciful end. Since he is not stupid, he would know that keeping Number One alive is useless!” Gao Sheng continued, “However, if he is not righteous, Number One is definitely being kept alive just to be tortured!”

Gao Sheng thought for a moment then said, “According to the information we gathered on King of Hell Chu, his way of doing things in Iron Cloud and his temper, I believe that he would use any means to achieve his goals. He is no honorable hero. Moreover, he has been able to trace everything back to its roots given just one piece of information; so Number One is an important card in his hand. Therefore he would probably continue using unscrupulous means and brutal methods in an attempt to pry open Number One’s mouth. He absolutely would not kill Number One!”

Diwu Qing Rou became sullen as he slowly nodded his head.

Gao Sheng had talked a lot and his mouth was becoming a little dry. He picked up the tea cup in front of him and drank the whole thing in one gulp.

“If the situation is really as Brother Gao said, then King of Hell Chu already has Number One in his hands!” Cheng Yun He asked, “Do we rescue him or not?”

“Rescue or not?” These words raised Gao Sheng’s interest. The three tacticians looked at each other; each one filled with apprehension.

“Brother Cheng, you’re overstepping your boundary!” Gao Sheng replied, “Rescue or not, the prime minister will have his own plans! This has great implications, how could you ask for an immediate answer?”

The positions of the three were like that of Number One. If Diwu Qing Rou chose to rescue Number One, then these three would feel a little warmth in their hearts.

Because that would imply that if any of these three ever fell into a similar situation, Diwu Qing Rou would surely rescue them as well.

If he decided on not rescuing, these three would have an explanation for that as well. Number One was far away in Iron Cloud, and the security would be strict. Rescuing an important figure from prison was as difficult as climbing to heaven.

To rescue Number One, they would need to mobilize a great force. Moreover, if Number One was still alive, he would be full of injuries and have limited mobility. One little slip up and the rescue force would be decimated.

There were reasons for rescuing. There were reasons for not rescuing as well. But in their minds, these two were not the same!

Diwu Qing Rou looked out the window with a calm countenance. With his hands clasped behind his back, he seemed extremely

relaxed.

Gao Sheng's words were what he currently thought about. The issue of rescue the three brought up was something Diwu Qing Rou was still thinking about. But compared to them, he thought one layer deeper. Is this another trap that King of Hell Chu has set up?

Is King of Hell Chu using Number One as bait and hanging a hook on top of my head?

To rescue Number One, he would have plan every detail very carefully. Plus, the rescuers would have to be powerful. If he was to lose these people, it would be a great loss on his part.

"Rescue... or not?" For the first time in his life, Diwu Qing Rou felt that there was something he could not reach a decision on. Rescuing would be risky; not rescuing would be cold-hearted.

Diwu Qing Rou knew well that if he decided not to rescue Number One, these three would understand. At most, they would just feel slightly disappointed.

However, he could not belittle this slight disappointment. At critical moments, this could sway people's hearts. Moreover, if he chose to not rescue him, would Number One be disappointed?

If he made Number One feel disappointed then... there was the matter of the entire spy network in Iron Cloud under Number One's control!

"Rescue! We must rescue him!" Diwu Qing Rou finally decided even though his heart was currently bitter. If this is a strategy by King of Hell Chu, then I have lost one round in this long distance battle.

...Because I could not avoid going with my opponent's plan.

'I want you to come to the rescue! You have to come even if you don't want to!'

This was a first in Diwu Qing Rou's life. It had always been the

case that he would lead others by the nose. Even the greatest general on the continent, Tie Long Cheng, was led by him for ten years! A battle with millions of soldiers, all controlled single-handedly by Diwu Qing Rou!

'If I want you to go there, you must go there! If I want a hundred thousand of your people dead; fifty thousand would not be acceptable. Whatever I want, you must cooperate with me! Even if I am your enemy, even if you hate me to the bones, you still have to cooperate. If not, you and your nation will end.'

'I never threatened you, but you have no other choice but to obey my commands, and obediently let me lead you!'

With one hand, he controlled the people; with the other, he controlled two nations; and these were two nations at war. He made it so others would have nowhere to turn but follow his path even if they were angry and full of hatred! Not following was not an option!

This was a kind of pleasure! Diwu Qing Rou greatly enjoyed this pleasure!

However, at this moment, he finally had to give someone else this pleasure.

"Prime minister!" The three people simultaneously intervened. While they naturally hoped that Diwu Qing Rou would come to such a decision, they also knew well how risky such an action would be!

"Even knowing that this is King of Hell Chu's trap, we still have to rescue him!" Once Diwu Qing Rou had made a decision, it could not be changed. He looked at the three and replied, "Not only Number One, if any of you fall into a situation like that... I would do the same..."

All three were touched; they felt ashamed with their previous thoughts.

“Trap…” The three responded, “You are saying this is King of Hell Chu’s trap?”

“Yes! This is a trap! That extraordinary King of Hell Chu is my archenemy!” Diwu Qing Rou’s eyes glimmered with happiness, “It’s unimaginable that on my first confrontation with him, I have taken a loss!”

The three paled in uneasiness.

To be considered Diwu Qing Rou’s archenemy was a great honor! To be able to humble Diwu Qing Rou was inconceivable.

[TLN: I just wanted to say that lately pedo-Chu is kind of cringy for me >_<. Ah, also the handwriting analysis thing, while it seems kind of crazy, is actually possible. I’m totally not an expert, but… Try writing in cursive with watercolor. Things like pauses, change in tempo, thickness of the ink… you might be able to see it.]

Chapter 133: Hotshot

“Look at this. This is clearly Number One’s handwriting. And King of Hell Chu even used our Invisible Falcon to send this note here...!” Diwu Qing Rou said, “If it was anyone else, they would assume that Number One is still safe and there is nothing wrong. But King of Hell Chu’s opponent is me, Diwu Qing Rou! King of Hell Chu would absolutely not be so optimistic as to think that I would believe in this note!”

“With this piece of paper and a few fragmented phrases, he thinks he could fool me? If that is the case, I would have been dead countless times.” Diwu Qing Rou continued, “Therefore, King of Hell Chu would not dare think this way. But why did he still go through with it? There is no doubt; he did it to insult us!”

At this moment, the bitterness in Diwu Qing Rou’s eyes disappeared; it was replaced with a fighting spirit. He had finally met a worthy opponent!

“This is a challenge! A challenge from King of Hell Chu to me!” Diwu Qing Rou emphasized, “And he was sure that I would accept it! In that, he has the upper hand.”

“But prime minister, you could just ignore it. Let him miss!” Han Bu Chu spoke up.

At this time, Gao Sheng no longer looked down on Han Bu Chu. In fact, there was a look of admiration on his face.

Han Bu Chu was an impulsive person. Plus, he never thought deeply on issues. That was why Gao Sheng always looked down on him. Gao Sheng never understood why Diwu Qing Rou allowed Han Bu Chu to participate in every meeting. In Gao Sheng’s eyes, Han Bu Chu was not fit to take part in these high-level meetings. Moreover, if he was Diwu Qing Rou, he would have kicked this punk out a long time ago.

But now he finally understood. Amongst the three of them, Han Bu Chu was the terrifying person! If Han Bu Chu did not say it in such an obvious manner like this, Gao Sheng would never have realized it…

Han Bu Chu always presented an opposing view. And that opposing view would be something that people could easily think of. And each time Diwu Qing Rou explained the reasons behind Han Bu Chu's opposing views it made people feel: Ah… So that's why! The prime minister is truly wise!

This was an excellent tactic!

Lowering one's self to raise Diwu Qing Rou's legendary fame. Someone like that was not dumb! He was definitely no fool!

While I was thinking that he is foolish, he was also thinking that I am foolish!

Sure enough…

Diwu Qing Rou replied, "I cannot ignore this because it involves my reputation. It involves the hearts of all of Great Zhao's people, especially those working for the ministry!" Diwu Qing Rou continued speaking profoundly, "You should know that Number One has a lot resources for King of Hell Chu to mine. If Number One doubts us or become disappointed of us… What do you think would happen?"

The other three had a cold sweat right after hearing this. Han Bu Chu shuddered and could barely stand. He bowed down and said deeply, "The prime minister is truly wise! I am ashamed for my small-mindedness! The prime minister's teaching was extremely sobering; I feel as if I just came out of a daze… Please forgive me!"

Oh god! You are clever…! You are talented…!

Gao Sheng internally praised him nonstop. If it was before, he would have haughtily called him: "Butt kisser!"

But today, he finally understood. Diwu Qing Rou was teaching

them, and these silly and foolish statements of Han Bu Chu kept the rest of them from feeling distant from Diwu Qing Rou.

“Therefore, I cannot ignore this one move of King of Hell Chu!” Diwu Qing Rou continued, “Moreover, I must rescue Number One! But that would mean cooperating with King of Hell Chu’s plans! I am afraid King of Hell Chu has already set up a dragnet, waiting for our people to crawl in. And right now, we have no choice but to crawl in! This is why King of Hell Chu is powerful. This is why he managed to seize the opportunity first!”

“Besides, if we don’t rescue Number One, King of Hell Chu would definitely use this to say that I, Diwu Qing Rou, am a cold-blooded person who has forsaken his hardworking subordinate, who can easily toss aside someone who did so much for him... Once these words spread around the world... the impact would not be small on the people as well as the military and court officials...!”

Diwu Qing Rou spoke calmly.

“So we must rescue him! But the issue is... how do we rescue him?” Han Bu Chu, the best wingman stood out and asked. He made a show of contemplation and asked a question everyone wanted to know the answer for.

This guy is really amazing!

Gao Sheng was in awe!

With such a line of questioning, he directed everyone’s attention to that issue... This lightened Diwu Qing Rou’s work load... Plus, it also made them think that Diwu Qing Rou had planned things exhaustively. Even those who were against Han Bu Chu became unwittingly persuaded by him...

“Yin King master has already arrived at Iron Cloud. The main task of Yin King master is to kill King of Hell Chu, then support Number One.” Gao Sheng said, “Looking at the current situation, I am sure that Yin King master would not be able to rescue Number

One, but the opportunity to kill King of Hell Chu is still there. I believe we should patiently wait two more days for news from Yin King master. At that time, regardless of whether we were able to kill King of Hell Chu or not, we will continue discussing the matter of rescuing Number One."

He smiled and continued, "Haste makes waste. If we continue to rush like this, I am afraid that not only won't we be able to rescue Number One, but we will suffer a great loss as well; it will do more harm than good."

When he said these words, Diwu Qing Rou thoughtfully looked at him.

Diwu Qing Rou had already thought of these things, but he would never say them himself. If he were to say them, it would make him cold-blooded... There was the matter of a great general suffering under the enemy's clutch... Therefore, it must be said by his tacticians."

However, he did not expect that the first one to say these words would be young master Gao Sheng, youthful and lacking in restraint!

"This is a possible solution... but there are some issues!" Diwu Qing Rou replied, "Number One is suffering right now... The longer we wait, the more he will suffer as if he was in hell... How can I bear..."

"Prime minister, this issue cannot be rushed... We know how you feel about Number One, but... this is the most prudent approach." That wingman made his appearance once again, acting as if he was afraid Diwu Qing Rou would put out some irrational decision.

"Alright! Give orders for one Command Horse Rider and eight high level Black Horse Riders to be on standby. Once we receive news from Yin King master, they will have to move immediately! Using the most powerful method to quickly bring Number One home and kill King of Hell Chu; do not be concerned with anything

else!” Diwu Qing said definitively, “I want you to prepare two strategies. If King of Hell Chu dies, what should we do? If he doesn’t die, how could we salvage the situation?”

The three complied.

“One more thing… Place King of Hell Chu on the list of most dangerous characters in Iron Cloud; place him at the same level with Tie Bu Tian and Tie Long Cheng. Hang it on the “kill list” in Golden Horse Riders Department.”

Diwu Qing Rou slowly continued, “We cannot allow this person to grow any further. If he grows, I am afraid he would truly be King of Hell for our Great Zhao…”

Diwu Qing Rou’s countenance remained calm and at ease, but internally, he cruelly thought to himself: King of Hell Chu, you might be smarter than other people, but there are some things that cannot be done with intelligence alone. Your trap might be able to hold a tiger, but I am sending two dragons!

No matter how smart you are, your foundation in Iron Cloud is still too weak.

Kill list in Golden Horse Riders Department! The three people were shocked; their bodies shuddered.

Everyone on the kill list in Golden Horse Riders Department was considered dangerous enough to Diwu Qing Rou. Their names were only removed if they were dead. As long as they were alive, their names would remain there! Moreover, no matter who they were, if a person managed to kill someone on that list they would immediately be given a title in the royal court, or even become a general in the battlefield. Such generous rewards were a great temptation to everyone!

Each person in Golden Horse Riders Department eyed those names with great desire…

Tie Bu Tian and Tie Long Cheng’s names had been written up

there already. It was unimaginable that King of Hell Chu, who had just shown his talents, was given Diwu Qing Rou's "special honor" so quickly!

Of course, Chu Yang had no idea that he had become a hotshot in Golden Horse Riders Department. And he especially did not know that his head had increased in value; so much so that it could an ordinary person to the clouds with wealth and riches for more than a lifetime. This was an extremely great temptation!

If he knew about this, he would probably bring a head to collect the reward as well...

Currently, he was extremely busy. That day, after he collected the gambling debt, Chu Yang had essentially obtained an ill-gotten fortune!

While there were not many of the extremely rare medicinal herbs in the royal palace, he did manage to get a few... While they were not the nine great mysterious herbs, they were still hard to come by.

After Nine Tribulations Sword was done swallowing them, Nine Tribulations Pill became more than half of a pill. Another one fifth and it would be complete.

The rest of these herbs were used by Nine Tribulations Sword. It sent everything into Chu Yang's meridians. Right now, Chu Yang was cultivating these herbs. With their potency, it would be enough for him to breakthrough continuously to fifth grade Martial Artist. The power in these herbs was massive...

However, Nine Tribulations Sword kept strict control over his level, and kept him at first grade Martial Artist. Plus, it did not allow him to cultivate with such great herbal power. Instead, it just let it flood his meridians!

You want to increase your level? Fine! Train! Fight! Only once you fully understand your grade one Martial Warrior state will I

allow you to go to second grade!

This strict responsibility made Chu Yang grouchy to no end! If he could breakthrough a few grades at a time that would be enough for him to protect himself... According to his guess, whoever was coming to take his life would have to be at least a grade nine Revered Martial Artist. He might even be a King level master!

Without power, how can I fight? With my current power, my traps would probably catch a few cats. How will I catch tigers? This type of trap... would only make tigers angrier!

Chu Yang was now organizing his harvest from the royal palace. Once he was done, he could go out and immediately become the Dark Night Challenger. He could fight nonstop in order to be enlightened...

These rough days were hard to go through... Chu Yang sighed internally, but his eyes gleamed!

Chapter 134: Dreaming of a gentle dance, who needs earthly fame and fortune

That day, all the rare metals in the vault, per Chu Yang's forceful request, were absorbed by Nine Tribulations Sword. After that, the essences went into Nine Tribulations Sword.

At this moment, everything was being released.

These are perfect materials for creating heavenly weapons; how could they be wasted? Instead of letting them rust in the palace, just give them to me... (TLN: Our King of Hell is so thoughtful.)

Everything was absorbed by Nine Tribulations Sword; Chu Yang only kept two things: a block of Star Iron and a block of Red Cloud Steel. Naturally, Nine Tribulations Sword showed no mercy and swallowed everything within, leaving behind only Star Iron and Red Cloud Steel.

Star Iron was indestructible! Plus, if a few ounces of Star Iron was used in a weapon, it would become more powerful. While fighting against the enemies with this weapon, the input of energy would make it emit an extraordinary radiance that would be blinding to the enemies.

And having Red Cloud Steel was especially lucky! In fact, Chu Yang did not expect to find such a valuable treasure in the royal vault of Iron Cloud!

It could be said that in all of the treasures of Iron Cloud, this Red Cloud Steel was the most valuable. Chu Yang did not even think that all of the other things put together could be equivalent to this block of Red Cloud Steel!

When he saw this block of red metal, Chu Yang thought he was mistaken. Once he confirmed it, he almost jumped in shock.

Red Cloud Steel was exactly like its name; the whole block was bright red. Moreover, its true uniqueness was that while it was

extremely tough, it was not heavy at all!

It was a violation against the laws of nature, the strangest of all metals!

A block of Red Cloud Steel the size of a room would only weigh as much as the same volume of cotton. This strange characteristic drove many martial artists mad with desire!

All normal weapons must have weight. The greater the density, the greater the weight and the greater the requirements for those using it.

Furthermore, it would also be taxing on their body!

Red Cloud Steel's biggest advantage was that it forgoes the strength requirements. The strength of a three year old child would be enough to wield this weapon and kill the enemies! Plus, there was nothing it could not cut; it was extremely sharp!

But this Red Cloud Steel only existed in legends. Chu Yang had never seen any weapons forged with Red Cloud Steel in it!

And yet, there was a block the size of a large table in Iron Cloud's palace! Chu Yang was ecstatic!

With the fact that the Iron Cloud royal family kept such a large block of this strange metal, Chu Yang had only one explanation: They were not able to cut it! Whether it was placed in a furnace or was pounded with a hammer, it could not be damaged! All of the Iron Cloud royals were probably fuming knowing that it was a treasure but not being able to use it...

This Red Cloud Steel could only be broken by a martial artist with at least Emperor level cultivation. They would have to use fire from their body's energy to slowly melt and break off a very small chunk. Small, because even with the energy-fueled fire, an Emperor level master would not be able to melt a large chunk of Red Cloud Steel such as this. With a hundred times of melting like this, then there would be enough Red Cloud Steel to make one

weapon! In order to completely melt this entire block of metal, a person would have to be at Saint level...

But Chu Yang was not worried about that at all. He was the master of Nine Tribulations Sword. And Nine Tribulations Sword... not only could cut, but also absorb as well...

Therefore, the toughness of Red Cloud Steel to Nine Tribulations Sword was no different from that of cotton!

Such a precious metal was naturally high in purity content. After Nine Tribulations Sword took more than half, there was a block the size of a human head. King of Hell Chu was so sad, he almost wanted to kill himself!

However, a block the size of a human head was enough for making a weapon, even with some leftovers.

Chu Yang had planned to make Mo Qing Wu a personalized saber.

Mo Qing Wu loved sabers and the color red. Chu Yang knew this very well. In the previous life, every time they met, Mo Qing Wu would be dressed in completely red outfits.

Mo Qing Wu's favorite style, favorite color, favorite... were still fresh in Chu Yang's mind as if it was only from yesterday.

To forge a weapon that Mo Qing Wu would like was effortless, simple, and extremely easy for Chu Yang!

With the help of Nine Tribulations Sword, he only needed an hour and a small saber with smooth lines radiated in all four directions. It was completely red and as light as feather.

In the process of making this saber, even the sword spirit was driven to exhaustion by Chu Yang.

"You need a little bit more here... Uh... this spot is not straight. This spot... needs to be pointier. This needs to be longer. That needs to be smoother. Oh... the curve, the curve! I want a beautiful

curve…”

Toward the end, the sword spirit went on strike, and hid completely… Grandpa, you do it yourself! It’s already good that I helped you, but you’re still not done? You even yelled at me… I never ran into so many problems making just a saber! Motherf*, this is more troublesome than embroidery!

In the end Chu Yang had to yield to the sword spirit. He put what little of his last effort into sighing and lamenting… There is only a little curve as thin as a hair left and the saber would be perfect…

If the sword spirit had a body, it would probably jump out and fight with this guy immediately!

Such a saber, and Chu Yang turned it into a piece of art! Unbelievable! Even Chu Yang himself could not find anything flaws on the saber he made… Truly beautiful… Very, very, very beautiful!

Chu Yang had mixed a little bit of Star Iron into the saber as well. Instead of weighing seventeen to eighteen pounds, it was only half a pound…

Furthermore, Star Iron was arranged right in the middle of the saber blade to form the Big Dipper. So with a slight swing of the blade, it would look like the Big Dipper fell down from the sky and flew around…

Ack! After successful completion of the saber, Chu Yang had intended to use the rest of the time to forge the leftover material into weapons for himself… The result was the sword spirit becoming crazed with anger, “You already have Nine Tribulations Sword in hand, what other weapons do you need? Do you have any propriety!?”

Chu Yang had his hands tied as he realized he brought on trouble himself. He already had Nine Tribulations Sword, and still hoped to make other weapons for himself. Why would Nine Tribulations

Sword be willing to make its own rival?

This was no different from a man saying to his wife, “I want a mistress, can you take care of it for me?”

He had done an unbelievably stupid thing! He dared say these things to Nine Tribulations Sword. Where did his intelligence go?

Carefully putting away the excess metal in a chest, Chu Yang thought to himself: I will hold this for Heavenly Armament Pavilion later!

With saber in hand, Chu Yang felt triumphant. He thought about the moment he gives it to Mo Qing Wu. Perhaps she would give him a hug and a kiss...

If Mo Qing Wu had to return to the Mo clan, with this saber with her... even with her Three Yin Meridian gone... the others could not look down on her...

Because of Mo Qing Wu’s future, Chu Yang had planned exhaustively.

Thinking about this, Chu Yang suddenly remembered something. He immediately called on the sword spirit nonstop... but the other guy simply ignored him. Finally, the sword’s master had to softly and politely beg for a long time before the sword spirit came out.

“What?”

“Haha, there is something else about this saber that I need help with...”

“I... mother*...! You’re crazy, right? This saber again?” The sword spirit let it all out without any reservations, “You! B*... you are more annoying than a woman!”

“Just one more...”

“Not even a half more!” The sword spirit’s tone was blunt as it flatly refused him.

“What? Repeat that!” Chu Yang’s face turned purple in anger. He could not control his temper anymore... and started, “Motherf*! I was trying to give you some face; you don’t want that? Do you think I won’t kill myself right now? Then you can be alone for another thousand years!”

King of Hell Chu flew into a rage, “If you say anything else, blood will splatter five feet! Motherf*, I have been good for eighteen years! You can go ahead and wait for another thousand years. And there’s also the ten thousand years of chaos in the orders of the universe!”

“You are relentless!” The sword spirit grinded its teeth.

It did not want to take a gamble. On the off chance that this crazy guy took his own life, it would be screwed. It seems that this bastard’s temper is really powerful...

“Help with what?” The sword spirit asked forcefully.

“Huh? You’re not willing? Fine, fine... I will kill myself so I won’t have to deal with you anymore!”

“Hey! Don’t! Don’t! Master Chu... Life is so precious, how could you waste yours?”

“Haha, say ‘Master Chu’ one more time!”

“Motherf*! If you want to die, then die quickly! Another ten thousand years is another ten thousand years!” The sword spirit was fired up.

“Stop! Uncle sword spirit... Look... Engrave a few words here! Haha, this is not hard at all.” King of Hell Chu immediately softened.Are you kidding me? I went through a lot to live again, and see Qing Wu. How could I just die? Even if this annoying sword spirit dies, I still want to live comfortably! Suicide? It’s just my scare tactic...

Chu Yang might have been cursing in his heart, but a friendly smiled remained on his face as he pointed to a place on the saber.

“Huh? Engrave what?”

“Here. Engrave the words ‘dreaming of a gentle dance, who needs earthly fame and fortune’!” Chu Yang said plainly, “And help me make an old looking scabbard. Ah… just use ordinary material for it.” (TLN: For those of you who have not been studying, gentle dance is Qing Wu)

The sword spirit reluctantly did its job and disappeared without saying goodbye.

As per Chu Yang’s request, the saber’s scabbard was made to look old. It was rusty with little holes here and there…

No one would ever expect that underneath this wretched scabbard there would be an almost unreal saber that could not possibly exist in the world!

“Mission accomplished!” Chu Yang yelled out. He had the scabbard made that way with a very specific intention! Even if it is Mo Qing Wu’s father, he could not let them know that he had the ability to make such heavenly weapons like this…

If people were to find out about this unnatural ability, Minister Chu would probably be invited to some clan’s prison, and turned into a professional blacksmith…

I found it on a lovely day, when some mountains collapsed…

Oh… a while ago, didn’t a mountain at Beyond the Heavens Sect collapse… Haha! Chu Yang immediately thought of an explanation.

As for “‘dreaming of a gentle dance, who needs earthly fame and fortune’, of course they were done on purpose as well. But his explanation would be that it was a coincidence. The purpose of this was to say that this saber was ordained by the heavens to belong to Mo Qing Wu!

The saber with Mo Qing Wu’s name was engraved on it had some profound implications. It was a saber designed especially for females… and there were the words “Qing Wu” on it. In the Mo

clan, who would be shameful enough to try to take it?

Well! If you want to protect this saber, you have to protect Mo Qing Wu! If you can't protect her, you Mo clan people will lose this saber as well! This was something Chu Yang was sure that the Mo clan would understand.

Chu Yang smiled insidiously.

Chapter 135: A small gift for little sister

It was dinner time; King of Hell Chu finished making the food and carried a big tray down the secret passage with the saber hanging on the side of his waist.

Hehe... Mo Qing Wu at this age is not the same, but a kiss would still be ecstasy... haha... King of Hell Chu smiled deviously...

Mo Qing Wu was sitting in the secret chamber with great boredom. For a little girl at this age to be locked up in a tiny chamber, without being able to run wild, it was truly cruel.

While the secret chamber was brightly lit, light from torches was not the same as light from the sun. And this child loved excitement.

Because of his injuries, Mo Cheng Yu had to activate his martial energy to heal every day. King level masters rarely got injured, but once they were injured, it would be quite serious and hard to heal.

Let alone the fact that he suffered a serious internal injury that placed him at the border of life and death.

Mo Cheng Yu sat in concentration, gathering bits of blood clots and forcing them out. This treatment method was extremely painful and troublesome. Only when he managed to push all the blood clots out and clear his meridians would he be completely healed.

“Yeahhhh.... Brother Chu Yang is here!” The moment she saw Chu Yang, Mo Qing Wu jumped right into him.

“Hey, slow down. I am still holding the food...” At this moment, Chu Yang regretted the fact that he brought the food down. If only he had came down with nothing in his hands...!

I could have held her in my arms like I had hoped... and smell her beautiful fragrance!

He carefully placed the tray of food down, and by this time, Mo Qing Wu had regained her composure, “Brother Chu Yang, can you stay and play with me a little longer today? I am really pitiful here by myself…”

“Yes, of course.” Chu Yang quickly replied, feeling very sad inside. All businesses were tossed aside; there was nothing more important in his life than his Qing Wu and her suffering.

“It’s time for dinner already?” Mo Cheng Yu’s voice rang out as he wandered over from the next room.

Mo Cheng Yu knew well that Chu Yang only cared about Mo Qing Wu. As for him, a King level master, Chu Yang did not even give a glance. If he was a little late, he would surely go hungry.

This punk does not know what it means to respect his elders. Mo Cheng Yu suddenly felt as if he had become a useless freeloader. He was so depressed he wanted to just go and die.

If he was a guest at any clan, with his position as a King level master, who would dare not to show him respect? A sumptuous meal was standard fare.

However, this kid had treated him terribly, and did not care if he ate or not. The laws of heaven no longer existed here.

Since he had been here, Mo Cheng Yu discovered that he had changed a lot. He had been eating in a most timely manner. The moment he smelled food, he had to come running or else it would be scraps for him. And that would already be good, because whenever Chu Yang was in a bad mood, Mo Cheng Yu had to cultivate with an empty stomach.

Plus, this kid is only a little Martial Artist, and he dared to scream at me… Wait, Martial Artist? Mo Cheng Yu could not believe what he was seeing. Checking once more, he was so startled, his hair stood on end. This kid was just a Martial Warrior and he became a Martial Artist in two/three days?

How could his cultivation speed be so fast?

“Since you’re already here, let’s eat together.” Chu Yang’s tone sounded as if he was bestowing a great favor upon Mo Cheng Yu.

“Ah… Thank you, thank you…” The moment those words came out, Mo Cheng Yu wanted to smack his own mouth. When did I become a beggar? Just for a meal, and I am so grateful and humble like this?

Where is the dignity of a King level master? I am a respected martial expert; falling into such a state, I might as well bang my own head and die…

“Hey, is there any wine?” Mo Cheng Yu asked in a dignified manner in an attempt to recover his “King level master” esteem.

“No!” Chu Yang replied without even looking up. Then he said gently to Xiao Wu, “Try this, and this…”

“How do I eat without any wine?” Mo Cheng Yu glared.

“Eat if you can. If you don’t eat, it’s fine. I am not begging you to eat. If you don’t eat, I will be able to save some food.” Chu Yang did not have an ounce of respect for this King level master. Without even looking at Mo Cheng Yu’s face, he reached over to take Mo Cheng Yu’s bowl of rice away.

“Don’t… don’t… It’s fine without wine. Koff koff… I am injured anyway; I should refrain from drinking. It’s lucky that you are so considerate.” This King level master immediately caved in and quickly grabbed the bowl of rice with both hands. While his mouth spoke of these reasons, his tone sounded more like he was begging because King of Hell Chu was pulling on the bowl of rice.

“Do you still want to drink wine?” While King of Hell Chu was a very busy man, he leisurely held on to the bowl of rice as he asked. The two pulled back and forth the poor bowl almost broke into two.

“No, of course I won’t drink. This food is already delicious.” Mo

Cheng Yu pitifully held onto to the bowl of rice with all his might.Little ancestor, can you at least give me a some face in front of little miss?

“Pew... hahaha...” Mo Qing Wu was busy eating when she suddenly could not keep herself from laughing and spit food out everywhere. She coughed and laughed as she held her stomach.

Chu Yang and Mo Cheng Yu was covered in food.

“Brother Chu Yang is really powerful. Uncle Cheng Yu is known in the clan as a person who loves wine as much as his life. He even got into fights many times because of wine.” Mo Qing Wu said in admiration, “But Brother Chu Yang managed to get him to say he does not need wine; you are really good!”

Mo Cheng Yu wiped food from his face as he bitterly thought: If you want to cross a river, you have to depend on the ferryman. I cannot avoid bowing my head now, but wait till I am a little better... hehe... Then you just watch how I fix this kid.

“It’s really because your Uncle Cheng Yu is grown up now; he knows better and will not drink wine anymore.” Chu Yang said softly, “Drinking wine is not good. When you are grown, you should not drink wine either.”

He remembered in the previous life, Mo Qing Wu had a jade bowl she used to drink away her sorrows.

“I won’t drink!” Mo Qing Wu’s eyes opened wide as she spoke with conviction, “Wine is bitter and spicy; it’s not a good drink at all. I like to drink Heavenly Pear juice.”

“Ack.. ack...” Chu Yang choked and coughed.

Heavenly Pear juice? This is a great fruit for recovering energy. If were to search around here for three days, I would not find any! And she wants to drink this every day...!

“We have a Heavenly Pear grove at home.” Mo Qing Wu’s statement made Chu Yang’s head hurt even more. Mo Cheng Yu

was sitting on the side, laughing freely. He felt as if all of his anger had been vented as he finally was able to witness this kid suffer in embarrassment.

After he finished eating, Mo Cheng Yu immediately got up to heal his injuries.

“Wait, I need you for something.” Chu Yang wanted to give Mo Qing Wu the saber so he needed someone to be a witness. That person needed to be someone knowledgeable, so Mo Cheng Yu was the right choice! If it was someone who did not know anything, they would let Mo Qing Wu play games with the saber; that would be catastrophic.

“What is it?” Mo Cheng Yu turned around.

“I want to give Xiao Wu a gift, and I need you to be a witness.” Chu Yang looked at him and said slowly.

“Give a gift?” Mo Cheng Yu wanted to ask what sort of gift it was that he needed a witness for. But when he saw Chu Yang’s ceremonious manner, he knew this gift was not ordinary.

If it is an ordinary gift, Chu Yang surely would have tossed me aside and cajoled little miss already.

It seems that this gift is important; that’s why he needed me to be a witness. It’s best to report this back to our clan leader. Mo Cheng Yu was a King level master; he was not a fool! He understood this fast enough.

He walked back and sat in his previous position. The behavior was a way of showing his respect for Chu Yang.

“Brother Chu Yang, what is it?” Mo Qing Wu tilted her head and looked closely around Chu Yang’s body. “I love birthdays most because I get a lot of presents on my birthday.”

Chu Yang laughed and cleared the table by himself before removing the Qing Wu Dream Saber from the side of his waist and placing it down.

“This saber is so ugly.” Mo Qing Wu scowled. She did not like the look of the tattered scabbard.

However, Mo Cheng Yu knew better. When he saw the rusty scabbard, he immediately realized that this was an antique. Filled with curiosity, he let out, “This is…?”

“I also don’t know; I accidentally found this when a mountain at Beyond the Heavens Sect collapsed.” Chu Yang said in a low voice, “A magnificent saber.”

“Huh? A magnificent saber?” Mo Cheng Yu said in shock. With Chu Yang’s personality, such a description was not common fare.

Chu Yang grabbed the saber’s handle, and slowly pulled it out of the scabbard.

The entire secret chamber was flooded with a dreamy red light.

The saber in Chu Yang’s hand seemed to have its own consciousness as it sparkled, highlighting itself as a heavenly weapon.

Only by carefully looking at that radiance for a while, could the actual saber be seen.

The curve of the saber was wonderfully soft. No matter from which angle, the measurements of the saber were perfect. Even a master craftsman could not find any faults in it.

It was a saber for females!

It was the dream saber for any heroine in Jiang Hu.

A saber so beautiful it was difficult to praise it in words, and even harder to describe it!

Anyone would be conquered by it after seeing it for the first time.

Mo Cheng Yu gasped. When he saw Chu Yang’s strange ceremonious attitude, he knew that this saber was not ordinary. But he did not expect it to be such a masterpiece!

“Wow… What a beautiful saber!” Mo Qing Wu clapped her little hands. She looked lovingly at the saber. The little loli was mesmerized by the saber immediately after seeing it.

“I will peel a steel apple for you to see!” Chu Yang looked at Mo Qing Wu and smiled. After that he took a steel ball and slowly ‘peeled’ it with the saber.

“Don’t chip this saber… Aaah…!” Mo Cheng Yu said this, then his eyes and mouth widened. He stared as thin slices of gleaming steel fell from the steel ball…

It really peels steel like an apple!

Cutting steel as if it is mud!

This saber is not only beautiful, it is also a precious treasure that could slice through steel…!

Chapter 136: Who has the advantage?

Within moments, Chu Yang had successfully created a shiny steel apple; its shape was just like that of a normal apple. He placed it on the table with a loud “bang.”

“Brother Chu, this saber is too precious!” Mo Cheng Yu could not accept this priceless saber on Mo Qing Wu’s behalf. Little miss is only nine and a half, and Chu Yang is giving her such a valuable gift... As a member of Mo Qing Wu’s household, he still felt this gift was too wasteful.

“There’s more to this saber...” Chu Yang smiled mysteriously as he gave Mo Cheng Yu the sword hilt.

Mo Cheng Yu shakily reached for the sword. He might have been a King level master, but he had never seen heavenly weapons like this. He took the saber with the most respectful mentality...

With saber in hand, Mo Cheng Yu felt as if he was dreaming. It took him some time to register something strange: This saber... why does it seem to barely have any weight?

He carefully checked the weight of the saber in his hand and determined that it was no more than a pound!

Mo Cheng Yu looked at the saber in astonishment. He asked hesitantly, “This... could it be... could it be made from Red Cloud Steel?”

The moment the last word left his mouth, Mo Cheng Yu was already hyperventilating. He stared at the red glow that did not cease to swirl around the saber blade... he almost fainted from shock.

“Yes, not just Red Cloud Steel, but also Star Iron as well.” Chu Yang emphasized, “Senior Mo, you understand why I am giving Xiao Wu this saber, right?”

“You shouldn’t, you shouldn’t... This is too valuable.” Mo Cheng

Yu jumped up, and muttered incoherently.

While his mouth said no, his hand held the saber tightly not wanting to let go.

Priceless? Not just priceless! This is the number one saber of all the ages! Mo Cheng Yu was currently no longer able to control himself.

Oh god, can such a saber really exist in this world?

“This is my gift to Xiao Wu!” Chu Yang frowned and repeated once more, “Senior Mo, you should understand my intentions in giving this saber to Xiao Wu.”

Mo Cheng Yu shivered. He was awoken from his excitement and said sincerely, “You mean…?”

“I do not want Xiao Wu to suffer anymore hardship when she goes home!” Chu Yang looked directly at Mo Cheng Yu’s eyes, “This saber was fate. The two words in Xiao Wu’s name are on it! I hope it will remain by her side! And never in anyone else’s hand!”

“Rest assured. As long as Mo Cheng Yu is still alive, this saber will be with little miss. It will never fall into the hands of anyone else!” Mo Cheng Yu stood erect and said solemnly.

“Even the people from the Mo clan!” Chu Yang quietly added.

“Is little miss’s name on here?” Mo Cheng Yu recalled Chu Yang’s words and carefully looked at the saber. He saw a line written elegantly like flying dragons and dancing phoenix: Dreaming of a gentle dance, who needs earthly fame and fortune.

Mo Cheng Yu pondered, “Is this really heaven’s will?”

Given the toughness of Red Cloud Steel and Star Iron, Mo Cheng Yu never suspected that the inscriptions were engraved by Chu Yang. Never mind Chu Yang, even at his best, he could not even dream of even leaving mark the size of a silk thread on this saber!

“Give me… give me…” Mo Qing Wu reached her little hands up

and demanded eagerly.

“Here you go!” Chu Yang rudely yanked the saber from Mo Cheng Yu’s hands and handed it to Mo Qing Wu.

“Hey… hey… be careful not to cut your hand!” Mo Cheng Yu yelled anxiously. With a sharp saber like that, one moment of carelessness… and a hand would fall right off!

“How can a descendant of a martial family cut her hand with a saber???” Chu Yang looked at Mo Cheng Yu contemptuously.

“Ack…” How could Mo Cheng Yu not know this?! Mo Qing Wu was already nine; even if she was three, she would not cut herself with the saber. But he was in shock, so he was not in the right state of mind!

Today, I am able to finally see Red Cloud Steel with my own eyes!

Mo Cheng Yu rubbed his face until it was red, but he still remained in a daze as he asked himself, “Am I dreaming?”

“It’s a very good saber! Hehehe…” Mo Qing Wu’s clear voice rang out, “So pretty! I love it!!!”

“You like it?” Chu Yang asked gently.

“I like it a lot! Hehe!” Mo Qing Wu smiled sweetly, and her face was radiant as she played with the saber.

“Then…” Chu Yang pointed to his cheek…

“Smack…” Without any hesitation, Mo Qing Wu rewarded Chu Yang with a lovely kiss.

“This side too…” Chu Yang turned his face.

“Smack…”

“Here, too.”

“Smack…”

“Here, too.”

“Smack…”

Mo Qing Wu was so please with Chu Yang, she continually kissed his face making it practically slimy.

“Haha…” King of Hell Chu laughed like a silly flirt.

“…” Mo Cheng Yu’s countenance turned gray.

I have never met such a person like this. Liking a cute little girl is normal, but this is a little nutty… using this to coax a kid!

If this saber appears in Upper Three Heavens, it would probably lead to a great battle! And this King of Hell Chu punk is giving it to a nine year old girl that he met only a few days ago!

Moreover, he seems so satisfied with a few kisses as if he just made a great profit…

Strange things happens every year, but there are a little more of them this year!

King level Master Mo sighed endlessly… In term of spoiling little miss, Chu Yang was not any less than her biological parents!

Thinking over a little, Mo Cheng Yu suddenly said, “It’s a good thing that you are not little miss’s biological father… Otherwise…” he was going to add, “… Otherwise little miss would surely become an unruly little devil…”

“Me being her biological father???” When Chu Yang heard this, dark clouds gathered… Motherf*, telling her to call me uncle was already bad enough. Now you dare to think about me being her father!!!

“You… you’re saying such damned words!” Minister Chu growled; he was completely put up, “Such damned words!”

And Mo Cheng Yu suddenly became like Chu Yang earlier; his face was covered in saliva! The only difference was Chu Yang had thoroughly enjoyed Mo Qing Wu’s kisses, and he was thoroughly sprayed by Chu Yang…

This King level master felt so wronged. What did I say? I just let out my thoughts at the moment; do you need to act like you want to chew me up?

He wanted to speak when he saw Chu Yang fiercely yelled, “Shut your mouth!”

Mo Cheng Yu wanted to cough up blood at that moment.

“I am telling you; this saber is my gift to Qing Wu. It’s not for Mo Clan! Do you understand?” Chu Yang’s eyes widened as he shouted, “And no one could take it away from her. If Mo Tian Ji wants to take it, I will castrate him, too! Understand?”

“Once Xiao Wu returns to the clan, if she suffer any little grievances, I will bathe in Mo clan’s blood! Got it?”

“As for this saber, you just tell that damned father of Xiao Wu every word I said! Understand?”

Chu Yang’s anger had reached the heavens, and he let it on out on Mo Cheng Yu’s face. Even his eyelids were covered with saliva at this point... Chu Yang’s momentum completely suppressed Mo Cheng Yu so completely that he just repeatedly nodded his head.

“Good! I am going now!” Chu Yang whooshed out of sight. Are you kidding? That’s a bonafide King level master. It was great that I could take advantage of his shocked state to yell at him, but I am not going to wait around for him to recover...

Even with his serious injuries, I can’t handle him...

A while after Chu Yang left the secret chamber, Mo Cheng Yu awoke from his shock. He groaned and noticed that his eyelids were covered in slimy saliva... He had just now realized what a massive force Minister Chu’s saliva was...

He wiped his face with great force as the anger rose inside him. He wanted to jump out and give chase...

“Uncle Cheng Yu...” Mo Qing Wu sheepishly shouted, “Please

don’t go. I am afraid of being alone. Please tell me a fairy tale…”

Mo Cheng Yu stopped and turned to look at Mo Qing Wu. He cried pitifully, “Oh my great grandmother… you two are playing me to death…”

****

Of course, Chu Yang was not foolish enough to remain around there. He quickly ran away in pursuits of his great martial challenges…

Whoever wants to give a precious saber to you people? Huh! In the future, Qing Wu will be married and the saber will belong to the Chu family! Chu Yang was very happy as he thought about how he had become closer to little Loli… It gave Chu Yang great hopes of a bright future! He was already dreaming about the wedding…!

In the afternoon, he went to Bu Tian Pavilion and found that Cheng Zi Ang and Chen Yu Tong had gone out to work on their missions. Wu Qian Qian was wearing the black robe and his hideous mask, and administrating Bu Tian Pavilion. There was nothing for him to be concerned with…

The new recruits were training together. Chu Yang’s directive was: Train until death! How can you want wealth and privilege with wanting hardship? How can there be such an easy thing?

There were tragic moans and howls coming from the training ground every day… There was even talks of a grade three Martial Master, more than forty years of age, who was reduced to tears from all the training. His tears and snots mixed together pitifully…!

And with such weaklings, Minister Chu coldly ordered, “Double the training!”

However, there was one piece of news that bothered Chu Yang greatly, “Those Hei Mo people have not left Iron Cloud Citadel. Each day, they would go out early and come back late, looking and

searching for Mo Cheng Yu and Mo Qing Wu...

As for Mo Tian Ji's people, his searches did not find any trace of them.

Besides these, Chu Yang had also recently increased forces around the prison. The manpower increased with each day. Tie Bu Tian even sent an addition of ten Revered Martial Artists and twelve Martial Great Masters as extra precaution...

Chu Yang did not know if Diwu Qing Rou would fall for his trap, but he was worried that Diwu Qing Rou would send people knowing that it was a trap...

So Chu Yang was currently vamping up his traps at all costs... plus, he changed his strategies, methods, layouts, and positions for these traps each day...

As time went by, things became more chaotic. Even the martial masters were getting a headache, saying to each other, "Motherf*, this King of Hell Chu is mobilizing such a great force! Does he think that his opponent is a Saint or Supreme level master? Is he just making a big fuss over nothing?"

But King of Hell Chu did not bother to listen to any advice, and continued to do things his own way...

Chapter 137: Gu Du Xing's invitation

Chu Yang continued to challenge and bother other people, putting all of Iron Cloud Citadel in a state of chaos.

If someone had paid careful attention, they would have noticed that Dark Night Challenger's opponents were slowly rising in rank. He challenged third grade martial artists, fourth grade...

With even closer observation, one would notice that he challenged the best ones in each group... How did this Dark Night Challenger get such accurate information?

At first, he challenged those who had been at third grade for half a year. Then he advanced to those who had been so for two years. After that, those who were stuck there for three years.

Really accurate... any smart person would sigh in submission.

They did not know that Chu Yang was from Bu Tian Pavilion; if he did not know every detail of these people's background that would be strange.

At this time, Chu Yang was really puzzled. Gu Du Xing said he went out to find people, and he disappeared completely. There were times when Chu Yang thought: What the hell? Do you have to go all the way to Upper Three Heavens? If not, why do I not have even a little news from you?

Of course Chu Yang did not know that young master Gu Du Xing had one strict principle: Better to be short than careless. He wanted to choose only the best subordinates.

****

Sunny Mountain.

Sword aura filled the air.

Gu Du Xing slowly pulled out Black Dragon Sword. The blade was smooth like autumn water, and shined brightly. The sword shined

against the sunlight as if showing his passion.

Fanatical, but alert! His sword was cold as ice. His eyes radiated with blood-thirsty fanaticism.

The fanaticism was for his sword, not his opponent.

“I’ll ask again; are you going to follow me?” With his head down, Gu Du Xing stared at his sword and asked gently.

His hair flew in the wind; while his words were gentle they were very decisive.

“Will you actually kill me if I don’t follow you?” Facing Gu Du Xing was a young man in blue, looking suspiciously at him, “Gu Du Xing, this is not like you at all! What surprised me most is the fact that you are trying to recruit me to be someone else’s subordinate and not for your own force. Are you okay in the head? Did you toss away our many years of friendship?”

“It’s because we’re friends that I am giving you this opportunity!” Gu Du Xing coldly said, “Ji Mo, you and I are friends but we have never said this outright. Now, I want to show my sincerity with my action. If you refuse, then you intend to be my enemy.”

“Refusal means being enemies…” That young man smiled, “Gu Du Xing, our spars were famous at Cang Lan. Have you forgotten about all of it? And now you turned against me because of someone you just met for a few days? You even try to get me to be his subordinate without any clear reason!”

He shook his head, “I really can’t understand; have you gone crazy?”

“Ji Mo, stop talking nonsense. We were both famous; we both fought without being able to beat each other.” Gu Du Xing said, “I know this still bothers you. At the Ji clan, you don’t have any position. As long as your eldest brother is there, you can never rise. But opportunity is right in front of your face this very moment!”

“You want me to be a subordinate of someone in Lower Three Heavens, to work for another?” Ji Mo sneered at Gu Du Xing, “Gu Du, are you dreaming?”

“Let’s fight to find out if I am dreaming or not!” Gu Du Xing said icily, “I have only met him for a few days, but I have already surpassed you!”

“If you can convince me of that I will go with you.” Ji Mo sneered, “Regardless of whether I win or lose, I will not be anyone’s subordinate; I can provide support.”

“You have become weak!” Gu Du Xing’s aura suddenly rose. His gaze was like a blade piercing straight at Ji Mo, “You are thinking about the possibility of failure! You were not like this before. The fact that you are thinking about it now proves that you are no longer certain you could defeat me! Not being able to convince yourself, you have already lost! You are no longer my opponent! You might as well just go with me!”

“Motherf*!” Ji Mo roared in anger, “You presume to know my thoughts?”

“Bong… bong…”

Gu Du Xing flicked his finger on the sword point. Black Dragon Sword immediately emitted a dark fog as the blade flashed like a flying dragon. After that he did not bother saying anything else and aimed straight in front. His arm followed the sword, and his shot straight forward, forming a black cyclone.

Ji Mo’s pupils shrunk; all of Gu Du Xing’s movements to seemed to be merged with the sword and filled with emotions.

A person watching would clearly see the sword move, the arm move, the shoulder move, the body move, and the legs move! Each action seemed independent of each other but it was clearly one sword move!

Before the sword arrived, its aura overwhelmed the air! Before

the person came, ice cold sword aura already shot out.

Ji Mo was shocked. Clang... he pulled his sword from its sheath and ground his teeth, “So what if you had advanced? Try this...”

Before he could finish speaking Gu Du Xing was there.

An icy sword aura enveloped Ji Mo.

Ji Mo could barely breathe under the powerful pressure. He was like a tiny boat in the middle of a storm, capable of capsizing and perishing at any time.

Ji Mo used all of his strength to resist. Block a move, counter move... He currently could not speak, he did not even have time to roar out loud.

Ji Mo and Gu Du Xing were famous in Middle Three Heavens. They were both new emerging talents from two great clans, and both were not in the position of inheritance. Neither would admit defeat and fought to a draw countless times.

But currently, Gu Du Xing had made Ji Mo felt more helpless than he had ever been.

“Do you have an answer?” Gu Du Xing stabbed forward more than hundred times in the blink of an eye. The kind of feeling of dominating your opponent like this was too cool. Gu Du Xing’s icy dead countenance relaxed a bit.

“...”

Ji Mo gritted his teeth as he madly swung his sword.

“Do you have an answer?” Gu Du Xing’s sword movements became faster and faster, “Do you have an answer...”

“...”

Ji Mo’s whole body was soaked in sweat; he gradually felt that he could no longer hang on. He wanted to open his mouth and speak but the pressure was so great that he did not have the chance. He screamed internally: Motherf*, if you want me to reply, you have

to let me open my mouth first. I don't even have the time; if I open my mouth, my energy would dissipate, and I would receive a few dozen holes. How would I answer?

Actually, he wanted to agree already.

No matter what, he and Gu Du Xing were always equally matched. But after not seeing each other for a short time period Gu Du Xing's martial arts had moved up another level.

If this advancement speed was helped by this other person, then he was okay with following him! Who did not want to become powerful quickly? The feeling of being unbeatable was fantastic!

Being a subordinate for a few years to be able to reach the pinnacle of martial arts, anyone who did not agree would be the most foolish person in the world. If you become someone's disciple, would you not work for your master?

Ji Mo did not know what happened; today, Gu Du Xing used some unknown means to find him. Before he got over his surprise of meeting an old friend, Gu Du Xing had already laid out the reason why he came.

"I joined an organization; we currently need more manpower and I want to nominate you."

This made Ji Mo dumbfounded.

"Do you want to come?"

"If you don't want to come, I will fight until you want to come."

Gu Du Xing was fundamentally not a good recruiter; he already turned against people after a few lines. The person being forced was Ji Mo, but he did not have a chance to get angry and Gu Du Xing already started his outburst.

After that, he used punches to talk. No, it was actually his sword! Such a recruiter, Gu Du Xing was absolutely the only one for all the ages.

Gu Du Xing felt very angry: “I want what’s good for you! Motherf*, you actually don’t appreciate it! Most people don’t even have the qualifications for my invitation!”

Ji Mo felt very angry. I still haven’t said anything. I didn’t even have the chance to ask for the organization’s name, what it does, or who its leader is. Nothing was clear yet and you are pressuring me with force!

He was also an arrogant type of person. How could he be convinced in a situation like this? Facing an arrogant Gu Du Xing, Ji Mo’s anger rose by ten thousand feet. Even if you are inviting me to go to heaven, I still want beat that arrogance out of you first.

Furthermore, Gu Du Xing emphasized one thing, “I am inviting you because I think you are worthy!” This made Ji Mo even more agitated.

However, the moment they started fighting, he immediately regretted it. Motherf*, the two of us are not on the same level anymore. How can I fight? Gu Du Xing’s aura was currently overwhelming. Plus, his martial power was slightly stronger, and his sword skill had increased leaps and bounds.

Ji Mo was stupefied. He was able to counter Gu Du Xing’s movements before, but now he was completely ineffective.

Gu Du Xing’s movements had completely overpowered him now.

This made Ji Mo felt as if everything was spinning. Motherf*, did Gu Du Xing meet some unearthly phenomenon? In one short month and he has been completely reborn…

I was equally matched with him, but now I have to painfully resist every move. I feel like a clump of clay that he could bash as he pleases.

“Bam… bam… bam…”

Gu Du Xing was in full momentum when he yelled out; his sword moves completely changed. Ji Mo was caught by surprise and

suffered thirty to forty sword smacks; he cried out in pain.

“Stop!” He flew out. Ji Mo was hanging in midair and did not stop yelling. He had no other choice because Gu Du Xing was right behind him like a shadow. He immediately doled out more abuse.

A great man knows when to accept a loss.

Chapter 138: I won't be the only one defrauded!

Gu Du Xing paused, "What?"

"Are all of your advancements from his teachings? All your improved movements are also because of him?" Ji Mo asked breathlessly.

"Of course!" Gu Du Xing said proudly.

"I will join!" Ji Mo took a quick breath, "Damn! To beat you, I will join! Will I have to be his subordinate for a few years or what?"

Gu Du Xing's eyes showed a trace of satisfaction.

"What is this organization called? This organization is probably not small, right?" Ji Mo squatted on the ground, and panted. His eyes flashed with excitement, "What is the leader's name? Is he some expert from Upper Three Heavens?"

Now that he had decided to join, Ji Mo's curiosity with this organization grew even greater.

In Ji Mo's mind, anyone who was capable of helping Gu Du Xing's cultivation increase at the speed of a shooting rocket improving his style must be an astounding figure. Moreover, invincible!

An organization founded by such a person would surely be the largest, and most powerful. Someone like that in Middle Three Heavens would have already have a clan or a sect; they would not have time to found some organization. Therefore, it must be some senior with free time who came down from Upper Three Heavens to have fun...

Ji Mo was very curious...

"This organization is called Heavenly Armament Pavilion. We

have many heavenly weapons there! Each one is capable of cutting gold and jade; my Black Dragon cannot even compare! Those weapons are legendary!" Gu Du Xing said coolly.

"Huh? Really? Are you saying... I have a chance to get one of these legendary weapons?" Ji Mo's eyes brightened, full of expectations. He thought about being able to sweep the world with an invincible weapon, and traversing through Jiang Hu as the envy of everyone... And he especially looked forward to the admiration of those bastards at the same level as him in Middle Three Heavens...

Dreaming about that, Ji Mo practically became orgasmic...

"Yes, you definitely have a chance!" Gu Du Xing thought and said, "But given your lazy character and your temper. If you could sit, you would never stand; if you could lie down, you would never sit. With your lazy butt, I am guessing the chances are slim."

"How would you know if I would be lazy?" Ji Mo protested, "I am always dedicated!"

Gu Du Xing rolled his eyes.

"Hey... Elder Martial Brother Gu! We're going to be on the same boat, why are you still keeping secrets from me?" Ji Mo asked, "Tell me. Which expert is your leader? Is he an Emperor level? Monarch level?"

With each of his questions, Gu Du Xing shook his head each time.

"Oh god! Is he a Saint level?" Ji Mo's voice trembled. His eyes shined blue like a wolf looking at prey. Surprise and happiness made his hands shake.

He knew Gu Du Xing's character really well. Besides the Gu clan, no one else stood a chance of getting his allegiance! Perhaps an Emperor level... would have some hope. Under Emperor level, Revered level and King level were not even worth mentioning.

If it is not an Emperor level, then it must be Monarch level.

Could he be Saint level? Oh, mommy, your son just got lucky... Even as a subordinate, working for a Saint level master and being able to learn martial arts...

Ji Mo was so happy, he almost fainted.

“He is also not a Saint level master!” Gu Du Xing said curtly.

“Great master Gu, Grandfather Gu... Please tell me!” Ji Mo stood up and quickly gave Gu Du Xing a shoulder massage. He smiled with flattery, “Elder Martial Brother Gu... Tell me...” His whiny voice made Gu Du Xing shiver.

“Punk! You’re playing this game with me!” Gu Du Xing said angrily. Then he shook his head with enjoyment, “That side, press a little harder... put a little more strength into it... a little lower, a little harder... up a little more... on the left...”

After some time, Ji Mo asked breathlessly, “Master... will you tell me now?”

“Yes!” Gu Du Xing’s face suddenly became serious.

Ji Mo stared at Gu Du Xing’s mouth, fully expecting to hear some really shocking information.

“He is not an Emperor level... or a Monarch level... and definitely not a Saint level...” Gu Du Xing said slowly.

“Oh... Old master, stop being so mysterious...” Ji Mo had became so anxious his forehead was sweating and he was frantically rubbing his hands together, “That astounding person... tell me. Even if he is a Supreme level, I can handle the shock!”

“Uh... he is currently a... seventh grade Martial Warrior.” His voice was uncertain, “Not too far from it; he should achieve that by now.” Gu Du Xing said seriously.

“Exactly as I expected! Hahaha... hack?!,” Ji Mo was mentally prepared so he laughed. He choked immediately after. He used excessive force to laugh, and almost cracked his lips, “What did

you say?”

“You heard right! The boss is a Martial Warrior!” Gu Du Xing said frankly.

Ji Mo heard clearly, and his jaw dropped to the ground. Then he laughed and said, “Elder Martial Brother Gu, Grandfather Gu! How could you joke like this…”

“This is the truth; I am not joking.” Gu Du Xing said seriously, “My words are true!”

Ji Mo plopped to the ground and howled painfully, “Gu Du Xing! Just kill me!” Then he suddenly jumped up, and ground his teeth, “Gu Du Xing, you can… You are really something! Not bad, not bad! I finally discover how talented you are!”

He nodded forcefully, “Not bad, not bad! Really not bad! You ran all the way from Middle Three Heavens! Uh… a Martial Great Master becomes a subordinate of a Martial Warrior from Lower Three Heavens… You are unbelievable! If the rumors spread, you will surely be the idol of women of all ages in Middle Three Heavens!”

“Less gibberish, and walk faster!” Gu Du Xing said coldly.

“I changed my mind!” Ji Mo sqatted and shook his head like a rattle drum, “I am not going!”

“Are you going?” Gu Du Xing eyes narrowed, looking dangerously; clearly ready to take action.

“You can beat me to death; I am still not going!” Ji Mo said severely.

“Bam… bam… bam… bam…”

“Aaaahh… You can beat me to death; I won’t go…”

“Pow… pow…”

“Aa… a… a…”

“Bop… bop… bop…”

“Aaah…”

“Are you going?”

“No!”

“Bop… pow… bam…”

“A… a… a… Stop hitting… Hoo hoo…”

“Are you going?!”

“I’ll go!”

Gu Du Xing finally stopped and panted. He yelled, “Pathetic! You are really pathetic! If I didn’t beat you up you would still have that pathetic attitude!”

“Hoo hoo…” Ji Mo lay sadly on the grass, “Pathetic? Let me beat you up and see.”

“Didn’t you say you wouldn’t go even if I beat you to death? You’re still not dead yet…”

“You’re right. Beat me to death; I won’t go! If I’m still alive, I’ll go!” Ji Mo moaned, but he angrily thought to himself: If I didn’t get beaten like this, I would never go! A man would keep his word, but the truth is too difficult to accept… So I could say it, and not keep my word!

“Stand up! Are you so pretty lying on the ground like that? Let’s go quickly; I still have to find another!” Gu Du Xing impatiently kicked him.

Ji Mo howled in pain and sprung up, “You’re looking for someone else?”

“Yes, I’ll recruit the Coyote as well!” Gu Du Xing slowly walked ahead.

“Coyote? Luo Ke Di?” Ji Mo could not help but be excited, “Right! That guy had driven his eldest brother crazy long enough. I

support your decision Gu Du!" (TLN: No typo, it's his nickname meaning lonely.)

He thought to himself: If I am going to be taken, at least I won't be the only one. I will take others to die with me... I will definitely help Gu Du drag that guy in... At least, if I want to rebel in the future, I will have an ally.

Thinking of this, Ji Mo happily stuck close to Gu Du Xing's rear...

******

Two days passed in a blink of an eye. In these two days, Chu Yang sent people to watch Hei Mos' movements everyday. What concerned him most was these bastards would still not leave!

Moreover, the whereabouts of some of them were unknown. There were fourteen people, but now there were only seven!

Not only did they not leave, their actions in Iron Cloud Citadel became more intensive. They scurried about the busy streets from morning to night...

This made Chu Yang very annoyed!

As long as they did not leave, Mo Qing Wu could only hide in the secret chamber. How could this be comfortable?

Chu Yang thought for a very long time and decided to pay them a visit. People burn incense to lead ghosts; I will now burn incense to send them on their way. Letting them stay here is just not a good idea...

Minister Chu sent people to prepare some gifts, and then found people to carry them. Then he casually went to largest inn in Iron Cloud Citadel, Cloud Gate Inn!

He went as if he was some young master on vacation. Even the people carrying the gifts from Iron Blood Hall of Bu Tian Pavilion did not know that this person was their leader, the fearsome King of Hell Chu!

****

Unconcealable – Du Pi Kuai, King level master of Golden Horse Riders Department, never felt so alive in his whole life.

The three of them arrived at Iron Cloud last night. People were exhausted and horses were out of breath. The first thing they did was find their way to this inn. They had chosen it on purpose because it was not too far from Bu Tian Pavilion, just a little off on the other side of the street.

Before they had time to prepare anything, Unconcealable gave orders to gather all of Golden Horse Riders Department's people. The result was that all of the secret contacts' houses were empty, not one person was found.

Unconcealable was filled with rage, and sent the two people to look for hidden signals. The result was eight out of ten hidden signals were changed, or nonexistent...

It was not until midnight that they managed to contact one person, but this person was very frightened. Facing the King level master in person was Sun Zhang Fa, a Martial Master with tears and snot all over his face...

"Sir, we were not shirking in our duties, but this King of Hell Chu is really too vicious!"

"I have six underlings total. They were separated into three teams, and each team did not know the other teams. I was more than careful... A day ago, when Liu Xiao San and Deng Xiao Wu disappeared together, we did not find out until that afternoon. They had the task of contacting Official Wu. He was sent to jail for robbing and killing. Every stop they made was investigated, and all the false business fronts were closed..."

"Late that afternoon, Li Shun and Zhang Nang were able to go out to gather information and watch the shop. The result was they were captured the moment they opened the shop. It turned out

that Official Wang they were bribing had his home searched and revealed everything about them…”

[TLN: So, the name Unconcealable (Yin Wufa) seems a bit awkward to me. But it is his Jiang Hu moniker. Kind of like Dong Fang Bu Bai from Smiling, Proud Wanderer. When I say that name, I automatically know the meaning to be Undefeated East. But if I said his name was Yin Wufa, you guys wouldn’t know that it was a nickname meaning unable to be covered or concealed. So please vote for Unconcealable or Yin Wufai or suggest something else. Thanks very much!]

Chapter 139: King of Hell Chu's origin!

Sun Zhang Fa's face was mournful, "I was just about to notify others of this news when I saw Li Hei Zi and Peng Hui Hui's terrified faces running to find me. They told me that Liu Xiao San, Deng Xiao Wu, and Zhang Nang's heads were hung at the citadel's wall for public display, but they did not see Li Shun's head. Immediately after there was news that all of Li Shun's people were taken from top to bottom...! Sir... more than forty people... died because of one mistake!"

Sun Zhang Fa's whole body trembled, "This morning, Li Hei Zi also disappeared. Peng Hui Hui went round about for half a day before coming out. When he did, he discovered that Li Hei Zi had died in the woods. Peng Hui Hui immediately came back and notified me. Only a little later, I was surrounded by people from Bu Tian Pavilion right where I was; it was lucky that I managed to escape via a secret passage way. But Peng Hui Hui is no more...!"

"In other words, all of your people, more than ninety altogether, are dead? You're the only one left?" At first Yin Wu Fa was very angry, but as he listened, he became more somber.

Without a doubt, Bu Tian Pavilion was moving fast! Once they found a clue they immediately moved to annihilate. Sun Zhang Fa commanded almost a hundred people. As an external spy organization for Golden Horse Riders Department, this was a large one.

Moreover, they acted very carefully. And until now, all three branches had a single contact. This was the safest method. Everything was as it should be until two days... Yes, Yin Wu Fa had already started thinking about it the moment Sun Zhang Fa started talking about everything. Two days!

In just two days, they swept up everyone!

"I am the only one left...!" Sun Zhang Fa was a little dejected,

“Since I established myself here, there was only one-communication; I don’t know if there are any other divisions here. I only know that during this time of bloodshed, besides seizing properties of officials, they killed almost four hundred people. In my estimate, four hundred was the number of people we wanted to develop at Iron Cloud Citadel…”

Sun Zhang Fa shuddered in fear, “According to my calculations, four hundred people… is about five divisions that we have here; all annihilated! Sir… I… I walked by the execution grounds every day to count heads… The number increases significantly with each day…!”

Sun Zhang Fa was an experienced person; of course he was capable. His estimate was almost in line with the truth.

But because of this, he did not dare to show himself; he did not even dare to reply to their signals. He disguised himself so completely that he even ran into a wall to make his face change completely…

Yin Wu Fa was originally angry, but he gradually grew more somber. The more severe the situation, the calmer he was! In his hands was the information on all contacts at Iron Cloud. He remembered them clearly.

In Iron Cloud Citadel, there were three Silver Horse Riders and five Iron Horse Riders! (TLN: Financial and intelligence gathering, respectively.) Silver Horse Riders could not be mobilized so there was only Iron Horse Riders left.

Among the five Iron Horse Riders, one of them was the leader, the other four Iron Horse Riders each had two spy forces under them. When Golden Horse Riders Department was founded, Diwu Qing Rou intentionally used this method. The two spy forces were also separated; both sides did not know each other.

The four Iron Horse Riders also did not know each other; each one was only responsible for his division.

Sun Zhang Fa was a subordinate of one of those people, and a leader of one of the two spy forces! He was also the first person that Yin Wu Fa found since entering Iron Cloud Citadel.

If there were eight spy forces total, then according to Sun Zhang Fa's analysis, at least five were wiped out!

There were still three left!

That King of Hell Chu moved really fast!

There was a soft knock from outside. Yin Wu Fa grunted softly and the door cracked open. A person in black squeezed through, and asked, "May I ask... which one is the senior?"

Yin Wu Fa quietly looked at the man in black for a moment and moved his hand to tap the jade amulet on the table. Five gems were combined to make a meticulous amulet with the word "Three" in the middle.

"Ah, it's Third King level master coming all the way here; please forgive my late welcoming!" The person in black was surprised and immediately knelt down.

"Stand up and tell me about your situation!" The man in black was brought in by two Revered level masters. Currently, the two Revered level masters left to look for other Iron Horse Riders.

Not telling is fine, too! Yin Wu Fa's face became crooked. (TLN: He already knows the situation and is very annoyed.)

The two spy forces under this Iron Horse Rider had been reduced by more than a half. There were many of those remaining who turned themselves in. There were less than ten people that could still be used...

"Very good... very good! You have done well!" Yin Wu Fa ground his teeth, his right hand relaxing on the table slowly pressed down. A silent palm made a large hole in the table.

That Iron Horse Rider stood on the side, and did not dare to

breath.

The atmosphere was heavy.

Not long after, two more Iron Horse Riders arrived. Immediately after, the leader arrived as well. No one else came after that. A little later, the two Revered level masters hurriedly came back looking grave, “Sir, the last Iron Horse Rider... had been caught! The entire spy network under him was decimated...!”

“Good! Good for one King of Hell Chu! He is really ruthless!” Yin Wu Fa’s anger turned into a smile. Before coming here, all the higher ups of Golden Horse Riders Department had guessed that their spy network in Iron Cloud Citadel would inevitably suffer a major blow, but none had expected such an upheaval like this!

More than half had been directly destroyed!

“Who is in charge of contacting Official Tang?” Yin Wu Fa asked.

“Official Tang did not let us initiate contact. Plus, his whereabouts are currently unclear... We have been searching everywhere, but have found nothing!” The leader of the Iron Horse Riders said respectfully.

“Oh? It seems that the odds are against Official Tang...!” Yin Wu Fa took a deep breath and said, “Find all documents you have collected on King of Hell Chu and bring them to me!”

The four looked at each other, and smiled wryly, “Sir, since you have come here, of course we know that you want to deal with King of Hell Chu, but... it is extremely confusing... cough, cough...”

The leader of the Iron Horse Riders looked extremely gloomy.

“What’s the matter?”

“This King of Hell Chu... cough, cough... there are many documents about him...!”

The four immediately took out thick stacks of documents and

placed them on the table, perfect for covering the hole made by Yin Wu Fa.

“So much information…?” Yin Wu Fa looked the meter-tall pile of document. His countenance was normally gloomy and rarely became excited, but now, his eyes rolled.

“Is it really this much?” Yin Wu Fa asked in disbelief.

“Yes…! Sir, we still feel that there is not enough…!” The four faces looked ashamed.

“Not enough…?” Yin Wu Fa silently looked at the pile of documents that probably contained more than one hundred thousand words… and still… still not enough? Is this King of Hell Chu some creature that had lived for thousands of years? How is there so much information?

“You can sit down; I will look at the documents for a bit!” Yin Wu Fa was filled with anger, but had no reason to let it out.

The four people submissively sat down.

Sun Zhang Fa also wanted to sit down, but the moment his rear touched the seat, he heard Yin Wu Fa snap his finger. A Revered Martial Artist immediately advanced and grabbed him. Everything suddenly became dark in front of his eyes; he did not have the chance to even know what had happened.

Crack, and his neck was broken.

That Revered Martial Artist looked as if he just did a small task, and carried the corpse out with ease.

The four Iron Horse Riders felt their heads buzzing, but immediately after, they relaxed. Lower ranking spies never had the chance to see their faces. Today, Sun Zhang Fa saw all four of them at once. If Yin Wu Fa did not deal with him, they would not let Sun Zhang Fa live another day anyway.

No matter how loyal and dedicated, it was still no match for

loyalty and dedication to oneself...

"Bam!" Yin Wu Fa slammed the table and turned toward them. He looked as if he wanted to eat them up, "These are the information you collected on King of Hell Chu?"

Cold sweat poured out on their foreheads.

"Damn! This is a mess, not information!" Yin Wu Fa rarely got angry, but this time, he could no longer control himself.

The documents on King of Hell Chu were too chaotic!

"King of Hell Chu! Unknown face; normally wears a fierce mask and a black cloak. There are rumors that Chu Yang is sixteen years and eight months old. It is said that he comes from Beyond the Heavens Sect; disciple of the master of Purple Bamboo Garden, Meng Chao Ran. Later, he was expelled from the sect for accidentally killing his elder martial brother over a girl. He went to Iron Cloud..."

This was one small section in the pile of documents.

"King of Hell Chu! Unknown face; normally wears a fierce mask and a black cloak. There are rumors that Chu Yang is twenty-two years old. It is said that he is a student of the great Hong He Scholar – Qi Cheng Xin; well-learned, talented, and resourceful. Not a type of person to use force. Appointed by Tie Bu Tian to be minister of Bu Tian Pavilion..."

Another section.

"King of Hell Chu! Unknown face; normally wears a fierce mask and a black cloak. There are rumors that Chu Yang is twenty-one years old. It is said that he is a disciple of a reclusive Emperor level expert. Even though he is still young, his cultivation is already Martial Great Master. According to the words of his fellow disciples, he is a ferocious character who likes to eat people's hearts...!"

Another section.

“King of Hell Chu! Unknown face; normally wears a fierce mask and a black cloak. There are rumors that Chu Yang is nineteen years old. He is the godson of the number one general in the continent, Tie Long Cheng. Since his youth, he was well versed in literature and martial arts. Tie Long Cheng hid him for more than a decade, and he finally took over Bu Tian Pavilion. He is Prince Tie Bu Tian’s left arm…”

Yet another section.

“King of Hell Chu! Unknown face; normally wears a fierce mask and a black cloak. There are rumors that Chu Yang is a descendant of the Chu clan from Middle Three Heavens. Went out to train and became Minister of Bu Tian Pavilion…”

There were many of such things, and none of them agree with each other. This King of Hell Chu had more than twenty origins! Moreover, each document had some witness, some evidence…

With such information, such intelligence, how could the King level master not go nuts?

So many Kings of Hell Chu like this? Which one was real? In other words, which one in this pile of documents was real? After all, there was only one King of Hell Chu!

“This is all the information on King of Hell Chu that you people found?” Yin Wu Fa pounded the thick stack of documents on the table and said with an icy voice.

All four people were soaked in sweat. Their legs shook as they unanimously nodded. There was something they really wanted to say, but they did not dare. The dead Iron Horse Rider collected the most articulate information on King of Hell Chu. While half the information that he collected were already sent here, there was still much more…

Chapter 140: Information extraction

The seemingly useless measures that Chu Yang had placed were now finally proving to be very effective. The whole thing put all of Iron Cloud in a daze, and made that King level master of Golden Horse Riders Department swell like a bucket...

Yin Wu Fa's anger was at the point of exploding! He looked fiercely at the four individuals sitting in front of him, and tried to open his mouth to breathe and control the killing aura rising up inside him. He was a little concerned; he was concerned that he could not control his rage and bash these four guys in front of him into mush!

This is called information? Are you guys joking me?

"Do you really believe all these documents... talk about one person?" Yin Wu Fa held back his temper; his voice was clearly very gentle.

The four were soaked in sweat; too afraid to sit, they had already stood up with their heads down. They were like criminals all lined up in a row.

"Do you feel that I am stupid to the point that you can give me a pile of poop and call it rice?" Yin Wu Fa's voice gradually grew cold like wind blowing out from hell. (TLN: For those of you new to this, stereotypical wuxia hell is cold and dark as opposed to the fiery type that you're used to.)

"Martial Warrior, disciple of Beyond the Heavens Sect; frail Hong He Scholar; Martial Great Master, disciple of Emperor level expert; godson of famed general; young master of Chu clan..."Yin Wu Fa tightened his fist, "Is that King of Hell Chu all these things?"

The four people dropped their heads lower!

"Lift your head!" Yin Wu Fa roared.

The four instinctively looked up, and only a shadow flashed in

front of them. “Bop bop bop bop…” The sounds rang out in a row. Yin Wu Fa was back at his seat, and those four people’s faces were red and swollen. Without any previous planning, they all let out a terrified scream, and simultaneously swallowed down blood and a few loose teeth.

In an instant, each of them suffered from at least ten smacks!

“Sir… This King of Hell Chu is truly mysterious.” The leader of the Iron Horse Riders mustered up some courage and said softly, “There are very few people in Bu Tian Pavilion that know his appearance. These documents… these documents…”

He stammered, “These documents… were carefully screened by us…”

“Shut up!” Yin Wu Fa was furious.

The whole room immediately became muted.

“These documents make no sense! Especially, this Beyond the Heavens Sect…” Yin Wu Fa suddenly showed his superior wisdom, “What kind of person in King of Hell Chu? Resourceful, cruel, cunning, unscrupulous, and calculating. How could a person like that fight over a woman, and kill his eldest martial brother?”

Yin Wu Fa angrily said, “Are you people pigs?! You even believe this? And you actually put this on top? You think I am a pig like you?!” Yin Wu Fa grabbed the document on King of Hell Chu at Beyond the Heavens Sect and ripped it to pieces!

The pieces were then rolled into a ball and “bop.” It slammed on the forehead of the leader of the Iron Horse Riders. It bounced back. And another “bop,” it hit another Iron Horse Rider’s forehead. The other two also received this ball before it fell to the floor.

On the foreheads of the four people were four tall bumps, almost like unicorns.

Yin Wu Fa pulled back his energy. Such control was truly

terrifying!

“Wise master! Your vision is far and wise, we are no match...” The four simultaneously bowed, thinking: That Beyond the Heavens sect document was the only first hand account; it was also the first document about King of Hell Chu. It was most reliable, that’s why we put it first. It’s unbelievable that it it the first one to be rejected. This is...

“Get out!” Yin Wu Fa was enraged, “After I get back I must find out who placed you here in Iron Cloud! People with such lack of understanding, such stupidity, and no common sense like you were sent here? Such stupidity is enough to darken the sun and the moon! Why didn’t your stupidity kill you yet? Bah!”

The mouths of the two Revered Martial Artists next to him twitched, wanting to tell him something: Sir, their immediate superior is Command Horse Rider Zhou Wen Gang. And Offical Zhou is your dedicated subordinate... If you investigate this, you will find out that they are under you...

The four naturally thought the same; their mouths twitched, but who would dare to speak?

“What do you want to say?” Yin Wu Fa was livid, “Who is your immediate superior? What division does he belong to? Speak!”

“Golden Horse Riders Department, third pavilion’s Command Horse Rider, second division, ninth group...” The leader of the Iron Horse Riders fearfully let out the whole lot at once.

“Golden Horse Riders Department, third pavilion’s Command Horse Rider, second division, ninth group...” Yin Wu Fa angrily said, “When I get back, I will definitely... Hack!?” Half way through, he suddenly realized: Golden Horse Riders Department is divided into four pavilions with four leaders. I am in charge of the third pavilion. These are my subordinates....

“Out! Out now!!!” While Yin Wu Fa was no longer young and had

many years of training along with a thick skin, he was momentarily felt his face heating up. All the trouble and shame had turned into rage. “Bang! Bang! Bang!” He kicked these bastards out of the room. He went back to his seat and sulked. After a long while, he punched the table, and ground his teeth, “Zhou Wen Gang, I want to skin you!”

“Sir... what should we do?” One of the Revered Martial Artists cautiously asked.

Those two people were Yin Wu Fa’s hardworking subordinates. While they were not high level experts, they were not too lacking; they had been by Yin Wu Fa’s side for many years. Because of their close relationship, they were able to talk more freely with Yin Wu Fa.

Moreover, they were all part of the third pavilion, so they were essentially of the same household...

“I do not believe that King of Hell Chu is really that mysterious! Is there no one in Bu Tian Pavilion who knows what their Minister looks like?” Yin Wu Fa immediately calmed down, “Tomorrow, I will go out and catch people myself for questioning. And we’ll finally know where this King of Hell Chu is from!”

“Yes!”

“Let’s rest a little!” Yin Wu Fa was looking solemn when he suddenly laughed, “I can’t believe that after all this investigating, it all comes back to me... This is hilarious!”

The two Revered Martial Artists smiled and said, “Sir, you have been concentrating on your cultivation; all the little things have always been delegated to your subordinates. Little flaws are expected. Other leaders also don’t see everything that happens under them. Moreover, our Golden Horse Riders Department has been increasing in number every day. If you were to know what each of your subordinates are doing, I am afraid you would not have time to do anything else in this lifetime. You don’t need to be

bothered by it, sir."

"Haha, that's right! I was only an assassin leader, I used to have only five or six people under me; but now I have a few thousand... I am really too busy." Yin Wu Fa laughed mockingly at himself and said, "You two should go and rest! You must be exhausted from the long, arduous journey."

The two simultaneously bowed and left the room.

One uneventful night.

On the second day, Yin Wu Fa left the inn early and was staring intensely at the big entrance of Bu Tian Pavilion in the distance. He thought to himself: The moment a masked person comes out, I will make my move immediately. I don't care if it's the right person, it's better to get the wrong one than let the right one go.

Little did he know that he waited all morning until noon and while the big entrance of Bu Tian Pavilion was like a market place with people coming and going, none of them wore a mask.

And those coming out were disciplined looking people. Nearby were two barracks tightly guarding Bu Tian Pavilion.

Yin Wu Fa could not look at that distant place without feeling helpless, like a mouse pulling a turtle.

He might be a King level master, but he could only do so much. He might be powerful, but he did not have the ability to single-handedly deal with an entire disciplined army. And it was also clear that if he made a move, they would call out for backup. Thousands would immediately surround him!

He might be a King level master, but if he fell into their snares, he would die!

Yin Wu Fa looked at Bu Tian Pavilion indecisively. Just from the looks of it, he could sense trouble. He thought about going back to the inn and make his move at night. But before coming here, he had already boasted with his two subordinates. This would be "too

shameful to sheathe one's saber." How could he face them with nothing?

But those two were currently busy investigating the layout of Bu Tian Pavilion for the assassination of King of Hell Chu...

In this moment, Yin Wu Fa was filled with conflicting feelings, then his eyes suddenly brightened. From withing the great entrance of Bu Tian Pavilion, two people walked out. One was empty-handed and the other was holding a gift box. They walked hurriedly in his direction. They seemed to be heading outside the citadel...

Further in front was a young master in black. He had sword brows and bright eyes; thin and tall, his appearance seemed to show a somewhat privileged background. While he looked young, he was definitely some big official...

Yes, a person like that must hold some important position in Bu Tian Pavilion. I could capture him... wouldn't everything be solved?

Yin Wu Fa's eyes shined! This was really a great windfall...

Chu Yang brought a subordinate with him from Iron Blood Hall. They were preparing to visit the people of Hei Mo clan. On the way, Chu Yang was busy contemplating many things. The impression he left on that King level master Hei Mo leader was not too bad... Now that he was paying them a visit, he wondered if there would be any side benefits.

As for the fact that they hurt Mo Qing Wu, he would definitely make them pay. But currently, it would not be too bad to reap some benefits.

With these intentions, Chu Yang had his own plans. How to deal with them, what to do... Chu Yang already knew. Haha, I only need to do this... Then I could do this... haha...

With his wishful thinking, Chu Yang could no longer wait and

walked a little faster. Of course he did not know that there was a King level master eyeing him, waiting for the chance to capture him and extract information about one King of Hell Chu...

And Yin Wu Fa certainly did not expect that the youth in black that looked like a frail scholar was the target that made him travel thousands of mile to this Iron Cloud Citadel, King of Hell Chu. Yin Wu Fa only needed to kill him to finish his mission!

On the contrary, he was extremely elated. He would capture the King of Hell Chu walking toward him to extract information about King of Hell Chu. Afterward he would kill him to keep his mouth shut...

Closer, and closer...

Chapter 141: Captured

Yin Wu Fa carefully hid his power. While he was sure that this youth would not discover him, caution was a characteristic of an assassin. He had always prepared everything flawlessly before making his move.

To an expert like Yin Wu Fa, this fork in the road was the best place to make his move. With so many people coming and going, he was sure that no one would notice him!

Therefore, Yin Wu Fa body flashed and he arrived at the fork; he stood on the side and waited for his prey.

The moment he came out, Chu Yang had a faint feeling that something was wrong. It seemed as if someone was silently watching him, but it was very weak.

Moreover, there were more and more people watching over Bu Tian Pavilion each day, so Chu Yang paid no mind to it.

“Ah... young master, where are we going?” The subordinate, Sha Pei, walked behind him unhappily. I am a member of Iron Blood Hall. If the King of Hell catches one flaw, I would receive a beating!

I just can’t believe I have become the servant of this stupid young master... This really hurts my pride!

“Don’t be talkative; just follow behind me.” Chu Yang said casually. He currently felt very uneasy, but he did not know why. The closer he got to the fork the more his internal alarm rang out. He was trying to figure out what was abnormal when this servant opened his mouth, and disturbed Chu Yang’s thought process.

The servant carrying the gift box became even more annoyed. And the distance between them grew to half a yard. Motherf*, who do you think you are!?

Seeing the punk walk past a corner, this “great servant” sighed and followed. Regardless of everything, this was a task given to

him by the minister; he could not neglect it.

Unexpectedly when he came around, his mouth was gaping in shock. Motherf*! Where did he go?

Streams of people passed in front of him, but he did not see Chu Yang. He was perplexed. What to do now?

Where did that paled face punk go?

The attendant carrying the gift looked blankly at the fork, as the world in front of him spun. Motherf*! That guy disappeared; what am I going to tell King of Hell Chu?

Thinking about the misery waiting for him upon his return, his soul almost left his body. After a being petrified for a while, he jumped into the crowd asking, “Have you seen a very handsome young master in black?”

Right after Chu Yang passed the corner, his view became darkened. A strong sense of danger rose up, and his whole body felt as if it could not move. A hand grabbed his shoulder, and a powerful force spread through his bones. Within moments, his whole body was unable to move. He felt extremely hopeless. Oh no! I have been captured!

Immediately after, Chu Yang felt himself flying upward, held under someone’s armpits. “Swoosh.” They were in midair. By the time they landed, they were about ten yards from the fork.

So quick! So subtle!

My opponent must be a King level master!

No wonder I did not notice him!

This person is probably from Diwu Qing Rou’s Golden Horse Riders Department!

Chu Yang calmly closed his eyes and laughed bitterly on the inside. Forget about playing with the world and revering fate, I have fallen into the enemy’s hand. Is there any hope left?

It seems that I shall die before my grand plan comes to fruition.

What Chu Yang found most curious was: Who sold me out? I have maintained a false mysterious façade for so long, and it has been working very well. How did I get caught so easily?

After being sandwiched by another person for a while, they landed in an abandoned house.

Plop!

Chu Yang was tossed on the ground; his whole body relaxed. Though he was not able to activate his energy, he was able to talk and move.

Why is this? Why didn't he kill me? Chu Yang felt really confused. Golden Horse Riders Department probably hated him to the bones. If they caught him, they would surely chop him into minced meat. In fact... they probably would not even bother to catch him and just chop him where he stood...

But looking at the current situation, they seem to want to ask me about something. What could be so important?

He was still thinking when a thin face appeared in front of his eyes. He had odious brows and a pair of narrow eyes. An evil shot out from his stare. This guy's face was truly difficult to look at; it was like a dead corpse.

The aura from the opponent told Chu Yang one thing: This was a top master! At least, stronger than that of Tang Xin Sheng from the other day. Plus, his killing aura was thick and sharp, as his body constantly emitted a cold dark air.

This is a top level assassin! Moreover, a King level assassin!

Chu Yang felt an internal chill. The moment his opponent showed himself, Chu Yang had guessed that this was the person Diwu Qing Rou sent to deal with him, one of the four King level masters of Golden Horse Riders Department.

Moreover, he was someone good at killing in concealment!

I have been too careless! I should not have just went about like that...

“Punk, listen well! I ask one question, you give one answer! If you cooperate, you will not suffer great pains. Understood?” Yin Wu Fa looked at the young man in front of him and smiled a cruel smile.

He is still young and his cultivation is already Martial Artist. It seems his family background is not bad, and his qualifications are pretty decent. Only, once I make my move, how could a Martial Artist escape? This is as easy as flipping my hand over!

“Oh?” Chu Yang was surprised for a moment. Ask one question, give one answer? This is... You already got me, why do you need to ask questions?

Chu Yang felt ecstatic. Could it be that this bastard does not know who I am?

In that line of thought, Chu Yang immediately put himself in a heap, and stuttered in fear, “Senior,... you... you... you want... to ask... ask what? I I I... I... will... tell... tell you everything I know...”

“Stop stuttering!” Yin Wu Fa yelled unhappily, “Look at your useless appearance! I ask you. What is your last name?”

“My... my last name... last name is Cao...” Chu Yang was immediately overjoyed. He trembled as he answered, “I am called Cao... Cao Ni...” (TLN: Cao Ni is slang for f* you! Thanks to ShrimpSamurai for pointing it out!)

“I did not ask for your full name!” Yin Wu Fa said unhappily, “I ask you. Is Minister Chu Yang currently at Bu Tian Pavilion?”

“The minister?” Chu Yang heart calmed down as he answered, “The minister is not there. May I ask the reason you are looking for the minister...”

“To kill him!” Yi Wu Fa snorted and icily said, “If you don’t cooperate, I will kill you immediately! Understood?”

“Understood!” Chu Yang nodded repeatedly.

“Give me all the current details about this King of Hell Chu.” Yin Wu Fa glared, “If you leave out any little details, haha, take a look.”

Yin Wu Fa’s hand gripped tightly on a hard stone with force, and the stone turned into powder falling through the cracks of his fingers.

“Is your head harder than this stone?”

“No… no…”

“Then tell me!” Yin Wu Fa was pleased. He praised himself for finding a good candidate. This pale faced punk is definitely not someone who could keep a secret. Just a little scare and he almost pooped in his pants!

“King of Hell Chu… King of Hell Chu… ahhh… King of Hell Chu is not a good person at all!” His eyes showed a look of hatred as he spoke, “He is really not a human being! He is too difficult, too cruel… too inhumane!”

“Huh?”

“Anyway, King of Hell Chu is the minister; he is really powerful! No one in Bu Tian Pavilion will contest this. But the way he treats his subordinates… ahhh, being his subordinate is really a punishment!” Chu talked as if he could no longer cry tears.

Yin Wu Fa snorted and gave him a sideway glance. He thought to himself: Only a bloody tactic can create a powerful army! How could a pale faced punk like you understand? Then Yin Wu Fa patiently said, “Tell me about the key points!”

“Yes, yes! Normally, King of Hell Chu wears a mask and a loose black cape. We do not know what his figure looks like. He is always

mysterious…" Chu Yang secretly looked up, watching Yin Wu Fa's countenance, "Once, I entered to hand in some documents. It was right when Minister Chu took of his mask and straightened himself out…"

"Huh? You really saw King of Hell Chu's face?" Yin Wu Fa was excited, and his spirit rose.

"Yes, sir! King of Hell Chu's face was gaunt and his eyes were full of spirit. Plus, there is an aura of dark energy in his eyes, making anyone who looks into to them tremble." Chu Yang rolled his eyes, as if trying hard to remember. He described the Hei Mo King level master.

"Ah…" Yin Wu Fa rubbed his chin and concentrated as he tried to imagine. Within moments, a cruel, powerful, alert, and fierce figure appeared in his head.

Yes! This appearance matches perfectly with the title King of Hell Chu.

"How old is he?"

"Well, it's like this. Minister Chu always tells us to spread false rumors, telling people that he is twenty, eighteen or nineteen years old to confuse the enemies. But on that day, I was truly shocked, because…" Chu Yang suddenly hesitated.

"Why?" Yin Wu Fa asked hastily.

"It was truly unbelievable. King of Hell Chu's real age, from the looks of it, should be at least thirty." Chu Yang said pensively, "To say that he is forty would not be too farfetched…"

"That's more reasonable!" Yin Wu Fa felt that he just discovered a big secret, and his eyes shined. He thought: A seventeen or eighteen years old has such accomplishments, I wouldn't believe it if you killed me… Can there be talents like that Tie Bu Tian?

In the case of Tie Bu Tian, he was nurtured with the resources of an entire country… Can anyone else have such a massive family

background?

Chapter 142: Escape

“Plus, Minister Chu’s face is always icy, like the whole world owes him something!” Chu Yang said, and Yin Wu Fa immediately nodded.

“He seems to be constantly frowning so there are three vertical wrinkles between his brows.” Chu Yang carefully described the appearance of the Hei Mo King level master.

Yin Wu Fa was in full agreement. Leading Bu Tian Pavilion against Golden Horse Riders Department, two uneven powers, it would be strange if he does not frown. I am not under such great pressure, and I still frown very often.

Yin Wu Fa unconsciously reached up and touched his temple.

“He is not too tall. But because he is thin, it gives the impression that he is very tall!” Chu Yang continued.

“Ah. When does he usually come around? When is he at Bu Tian Pavilion?” Yin Wu Fa interrupted him. His description was enough for him to recognize King of Hell Chu if he ever met him. Currently, he needed to know King of Hell Chu’s working and resting habits.

“Minister Chu is very elusive; we don’t know when he would be there or not be there.” Chu Yang answered truthfully. His words were absolutely accurate!

That sounds about right. Yin Wu Fa thought to himself. Without safety, only a fool would come everyday.

“What is King of Hell Chu’s cultivation level?”

“I also do not know this!” Chu Yang thought a little then said, “But Minister Chu’s body emits a cold energy. It seems that Minister Chu knows martial arts, and his level is not low. He must be a high level master!”

Chu Yang suddenly looked angry, “So many people tell me that Minister Chu does not know any martial art, that he is just a frail scholar. Sir, each time I hear this, I just want to smack their mouths!”

I want to smack their mouths as well. Yin Wu Fa thought to himself. How could a frail scholar without any martial arts lead Bu Tian Pavilion against Diwu Qing Rou? A low martial arts level would not do! Motherf*, have they read too many novels? They think that King of Hell Chu is another Diwu Qing Rou? They should know that there is only one of such a person like Diwu Qing Rou on the continent every ten thousand years.

“There is one thing I am certain of; Minister Chu is rarely at Bu Tian Pavilion.” Chu Yang continued making up stuff about himself while telling the sword spirit to control his heart rate and blood flow, so this terrifying guy in front of him would not notice any issues.

This sword spirit is useful in any place at any time. At the same time, he also let the sword spirit to figure out how to recover his martial power while he was buying time. While in front of a master of this caliber, a little martial power could not do anything. But he needed to recover his martial power to help increase the chance of a successful escape...

“Then where is he usually?” Yin Wu Fa scowled. These things had made the difficulty level greatly increase. He did not expect King of Hell Chu to be this mysterious.

“Besides some confidants, few people knows where Minister Chu usually goes.” Chu Yang acted as if he was trying to think really hard.

“Is there anything else you know? Tell me everything!” Yin Wu Fa felt that this punk no longer has any value, and unconsciously emitted a flash of killing aura.

“I seem to recall one time, Hall Leader Cheng Zi Ang said an

inn... inn... what is it!?" Chu Yang tried his best to remember, "Please don't kill me. I will definitely remember!"

"Hurry up!" Yin Wu Fa was happy. An inn? Motherf*! King of Hell Chu really knows how to choose locations. Inns are places where snakes and dragons mix; people come and go all the time. If King of Hell Chu changes his location frequentlly, then his whereabouts would indeed be mysterious.

Yes. I am too clever!

"Remember something gate..." Chu Yang frowned; his forehead was soaked in sweat. The sword spirit had successfully broken through the last hurdle, and Chu Yang's martial energy had recovered!

"What gate?" Yin Wu Fa said angrily.

"Gate... gate..." Chu Yang took a deep breath, and was apparently thinking very hard.

Under the efforts of the sword spirit, that King level master's energy blockade had finally been broken through.

"I remember now!" Chu Yang triumphantly yelled out loud.

"What gate? Tell me!" Yin Wu Fa was overjoyed and advanced forward.

"Your mother's crotch!" Chu Yang yelled loudly and jumped up. He concentrated all of his martial energy on his left hand, and brought Nine Tribulations sword point to his left index finger. He hit with all his might!

This was absolutely unexpected.

Yin Wu Fa never would have thought that a punk who was answering all his questions had now suddenly recovered his martial energy. Everything was in the palm of his hand; this punk should not be able to escape even if he had wings. But it turned into a big disaster all of a sudden!

If his energy was blocked by a King level master, how could this little martial artist break through it? What monstrous thing is this?But Yin Wu Fa did not have time to ponder over these issues!

Chu Yang's attack was within inches. Even with his first move, he intended to kill!

Yin Wu Fa could only feel a strong wave of energy coming toward him, whistling like the wind! At the same time, a feeling of extreme danger came from Chu Yang's right arm.

My opponent is clearly unarmed. Even if he uses his martial energy, I would still not be injured just standing here. Why do I sense extreme danger?

While he could not figure it out, Yin Wu Fa still instinctively evaded the attacks. Then he fell backward; his back curved like a bridge with his head almost touching the floor.

Chu Yang's attack was really too fast, and the distance between the two was too close. On top of that, Yin Wu Fa was caught completely off guard so avoidance was impossible!

Therefore Yin Wu Fa chose to meet the attacks! But still, he had to try hard to distance himself from Chu Yang a little, if only because he was afraid of getting injured by that strange weapon!

This was a killer's instinct! Yin Wu Fa always trusted his senses!

This sense would save his life at this key moment!

Bam!

Chu Yang's left hand hit Yin Wu Fa's dantian with full force. Nine Tribulations Sword point quickly pierced Yin Wu Fa's chest!

Fresh blood squirted out!

When Chu Yang's left hand palmed him, there was a strong reaction from his dantian pushing back. Chu Yang pushed with his two legs and borrowed the momentum of this reaction to jump high. His legs pushed one more time against the wall and his whole

body flew far like an arrow.

Chu Yang did not have any hope that his sneak attack could kill a King level master. He only needed it to create a short hindrance!

After his two legs pushed with full force against the wall, the tile roof broke to pieces, debris shot in Yin Wu Fa's direction. By this time Chu Yang was already on the ground, running like mad.

Yin Wu Fa roared loudly as his whole body stood straight up!

He was about to give chase when he suddenly felt pain coming from his dantian, making him take a step back. While he was foaming with anger, taking a step back was the only thing he could do at the moment!

Chu Yang's left hand had accurately hit his dantian! With Chu Yang's martial power, he should not have been able to cause any injuries. But this full effort palm had prevented his activation of internal energy for a brief moment!

Only just a moment!

What Chu Yang needed was this brief moment. That was why he attacked the dantian instead of the head. Because Chu Yang knew attacking the head would have been useless as well!

The discrepancy between the two was too great, some forty to fifty grades. Only in attacking the dantian could he achieve such an effect!

Backing up one step, his dantian immediately recovered. Yin Wu Fa looked up and yelled out in rage. Without bothering to stay hidden, he angrily shot into the air and flew in Chu Yang's direction like a dark cloud.

I must catch up to that punk.

Damn!

Faced with pieces of tile and dust, Yin Wu Fa closed his eyes and carelessly passed through them. Tiles fell on him and broke into

pieces, shooting outward!

Yin Wu Fa was demented with anger!

A tiny ant dared to injure me! I can be patient, but I cannot take this insult!

A tingling pain came from his chest, where the bleeding still did not stop. But using his internal force, he had managed to slow it down. Yin Wu Fa's heart was filled with extreme hatred and anger.

At the same time, he also felt exceedingly terrified!

This time, his opponent had almost managed to take his life! The wound was so very deep that he could feel pain from his chest bone! It directly passed through his muscle and injured his ribs!

If I did not react quickly, I would probably be finished already!

If a King level master were to die by the sneak attack of a Martial Artist, that would probably be the biggest joke under the heavens! I would probably end up in recorded history!

In all of history, this has never happened. I am a sixth grade King level master, and I almost became a laughingstock of history!

Thinking of this, Yin Wu Fa felt so shameful, he wanted to die!

At the same time, he also found the whole thing very strange. Even if the strongest person in the military uses all of his might to stab me with a great saber, there would just be a white mark. What did he use to injure me? He clearly did not have any weapons in his hands...

If I don't kill this guy, I, Yin Wu Fa, am not a human being!

Yin Wu Fa bitterly swore!

With one jump, he had covered more than ten yards. And yet that punk was nowhere to be found. Yin Wu Fa let out a loud roar and jumped into the air.

Passersby suddenly discovered that there was a person hanging in

midair, and looked up with gaping mouths.

Yin Wu Fa ignored everyone's stares and the fresh blood that was dripping down as he swept the surrounding area.

He only saw Chu Yang in a black outfit, staying close to the walls as he ran for his life like a flash! In the worst situations, a human being was capable of showing his greatest potential! Within a short time period, Chu Yang had managed to run a distance of about a hundred yards!

No wonder Yin Wu Fa could not see him, he had kept close the walls as he ran.

"Bastard! Leave your life here!" Yin Wu Fa roared like thunder. His body was like an eagle after its prey; he tilted and shot down from the air like lightning.

Chu Yang did not dare to even look back. Without saying anything, he ran for his life!

Yin Wu Fa took in a deep breath. Without taking the time to even breathe out, he covered a few dozen yards in one shot, reducing the distance between them by a half!

Chapter 143: The real master appears

Yin Wu Fa knew that doing this would could cause great injuries to his body, and, moreover, shock his internal organs. That was something that should never happen! But at this moment, Yin Wu Fa no longer cared about what should or should not happen, or what shock was.

He no longer cared about anything!

Kill... kill... kill! No one has ever insulted me like that! Punk, you must die! To kill you, I am willing to pay any price! The hatred in Yin Wu Fa had risen beyond anyone's imagination!

But there was not just hatred; there was uncertainty and fear, along with a ray of greed. This punk must be holding some saintly weapon that is beyond what anyone could call a saintly weapon! Otherwise, how could he injure me with his strength?

If I kill him, that saintly weapon would be mine! With my martial power and such a saintly weapon, I would be a tiger with wings!

After a deep breath, Yin Wu Fa flew into the air again and gave chase in Chu Yang's direction! He currently regretted that he did not carry any throwing weapons.

Even with throwing weapons, I would not let this punk die easily! I want him to die from brutal tortures! No! I want him to be unable to live or die; that would appease the hatred in my heart!

Yin Wu Fa continued to give desperate chase, but was Chu Yang not also running for his life?

Chu Yang ran with all his might. He turned into various streets and alleys, and constantly changed directions. His meridians were in chaos but he did not pay any mind to that.

Almost there, almost there!

Cloud Gate Inn! I only need to get there! I only need to get to

Cloud Gate Inn! Only then will my painstaking plans come into effect!Chu Yang felt his heart beating violently as if it was about to jump out of his chest. His two eyes had now become bloodshot red!

Under the threat of death, Chu Yang seemed to have reached extreme speed. He maintained this speed and rushed desperately.

The person chasing me is a King level master! A King level master! F*! F*! F*!

While running, Chu Yang thought: I want to be stronger! I want to be stronger! Aaaah... Aaaah... Aaaah... I must be stronger!

I don't want to be chased!

I should be the one to give chase! I need to be stronger! Regardless if it is a King level or an Emperor level, no one should be able to chase me!

Under such fierce motivations, Chu Yang's speed increased once more!

Behind him, a surge of pressure suddenly came down! Chu Yang let out a scream.

His body suddenly changed direction while still maintaining its extreme speed. He quickly made a curve and shot straight ahead.

Thud!

Yin Wu Fa landed, and a massive hole appeared on the ground! Dirt shot out in all four directions, and seemed to envelop Chu Yang's body.

Ten yards, only ten yards and I will be at Cloud Gate Inn! Chu Yang shot forward amongst the busy crowd and threw on a black veil on his head.

Boom!

Yin Wu Fa got a little closer to Chu Yang; the distance was now only five yards! With Yin Wu Fa's martial power, he could already cause injuries at this distance!

Yin Wu Fa took a deep breath. On his skinny face, there seemed to appear a bright flash. His right hand pulled back, and quickly pushed outward!

A sharp whistling sound emitted from that palm; there was a trace of white smoke in the air! The palm was done with all his effort!

Chu Yang could only sense the atmosphere thicken with this palm! There was less than five yards to Cloud Gate Inn, but it had become like a heavenly moat! His meridians were completely empty with not a drop of energy left!

At this critical juncture, Nine Tribulations Sword suddenly stirred. The Seven Shades cold energy that it had absorbed at Beyond the Heavens Sect suddenly flooded into Chu Yang's meridians with the force of a waterfall.

Chu Yang yelled out loud, and turned to shoot out one palm. Then he immediately tilted his body and jumped in the air. While he could not depend on anything in midair, he could use the power of Yin Wu Fa's palm to propel himself forward! As long as I don't die, everything will work out well! Chu Yang thought to himself.

I only hope that Sha Pei is already here. He thought about about Chen Yu Tong's information: Those black outfitted people are currently staying at this inn!

This was the reason why Chu Yang decided to come here today!

Chen Yu Tong, Chen Yu Tong... at this critical moment, your information cannot be wrong! If your information is false, I am done!Chu Yang prayed.

Bang! Two massive powers met in midair.

Chu Yang screamed as he felt a powerful energy rip his own cold energy to pieces. His back felt as if a few thousand pounds of force slammed into it. His vision became blurred, there was a clump in his throat, and his body was shot out far.

Plop! He flew into Cloud Gate Inn!

With such a big commotion on the street, the Hei Mo people in Cloud Gate Inn certainly took notice. Two Revered Martial Artists just came to the door to look when they saw Chu Yang's body come smashing down.

Caught by complete surprise, and also because Chu Yang was wearing black with his face covered like one of them, the two thought that he was on the same side and reached out to catch him.

Pow!

All three fell to the ground.

The two Revered Martial Artists immediately became alarmed. If his momentum was capable of sending two of them to the ground, then how powerful was the person that hit him?

The moment he came into contact with these two people, a majority of the impact on Chu Yang's body was transferred to them. Before he could even stand up, he started yelling, "Leader, run quickly! A powerful enemy is attacking!"

Immediately after, he spat out blood and seemed to crumble to the ground!

When he yelled the word leader, the words "run quickly" that followed seemed to have overpowered it. The others only heard, "Run quickly. A powerful enemy is attacking!"

Everything happened very quickly; Yin Wu Fa was like a devil as he landed. With a glance, he immediately discovered the words: "Cloud Gate Inn."

He suddenly had an epiphany: Isn't King of Hell Chu at some Gate?

Could this punk have been telling the truth?

Did he risk his life to alert them? But you are too stupid, kid. Are

you alerting them or are you just leading the way for me?

All of a sudden, he heard, “Leader, run quickly! A powerful enemy is attacking!” He could not help but feel happy; all of his frustrations evaporated within moments, and he majestically shouted, “Run? Where can you run? Leave your life here!”

The two fallen men in black immediately jumped up. They just heard Chu Yang’s yell and now they heard Yin Wu Fa’s arrogant words; they became furious, and their hearts were filled with hatred.

The two of them stood and blocked Yin Wu Fa, saying icily, “Who are you? Why…”

“Why, your mother!” Yin Wu Fa was unable to control his anger and said, “Move!”

“Motherf*!” The two Revered Martial Artists were of the Hei Mo clan, and they had always been arrogant. Others had not dared to yell at them. This proved that this guy was an enemy; they cursed in unison and made their move at the same time!

Yin Wu Fa’s eyes brightened; Revered Martial Artists?

Not bad. This must be the place where King of Hell Chu is hiding! I certainly did not expect that he would have two Revered Martial Artists as guards. Yin Wu Fa laughed and immediately started fighting with those two.

The three fought and a powerful wind whistled.

The strength of the two Revered Martial Artists were indeed impressive, but they were absolutely no match for Yin Wu Fa. The fight had just started, and they were instantly on the losing side!

They were completely overpowered by Yin Wu Fa!

“A King level master?!” The two were shocked that their enemy was so powerful. No wonder their colleague had yelled out for their leader to run. At the same time, he did not cease to cheer

them on from the sideline!

Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!

Four Revered Martial Artists appeared. Seeing the three in battle and that their colleagues were on the losing side, they rushed up without hesitation and fought with full force!

One versus six!

“So many?” Yin Wu Fa laughed mockingly, “What can you do with so many people? If I don’t kill all of you today, I won’t be a human being! A bunch of SOBs dare to stop me? What a joke!”

The six Revered Martial Artists were attacking with all their might; one of them angrily said, “Who are you?”

They could only think of the Mo clan. Only the Mo Clan was capable of quickly mobilizing a King level master!

They just ambushed Mo Cheng Yu and the little Mo princess; this was clearly revenge!

Yin Wu Fa sneered, “The person who will kill all of you!”

“Kill!” The six Revered Martial Artists angrily yelled; their offensive became even more fierce! However, Yin Wu Fa was a sixth grade King level master, and they were just Revered Martial Artists. Even if they fought to the death, they were no match for him.

Yin Wu Fa’s pleasure grew as he dealt out one blow after another!

“Pop… pop.” Two sounds, and two Revered Martial Artists flew out. The terrifying sounds of their bones cracking was heard, as blood splattered everywhere. With one blow, those two were closer to death than life!

At this point, the eyes of the four others were bright red as they attacked without any regard for their own lives.

Yin Wu Fa mocked, “Lightning bugs dare to compare their brilliance to the bright light?! Why don’t you call…”

“Stop!” An angry roar rang out. A person appeared at the inn’s door.

His body was thin, and his face was gaunt. His two eyes were full of spirit, and there was an aura of cruel, dark energy in his eyes, making anyone who looked into them tremble! His face currently looked like it was covered with a layer of frost; and as he frowned, there were three wrinkle lines in the middle of his temple!

This person looked like he could be thirty, fifty, or even twenty years old!

He clasped his hands behind his back as his cruel eyes stared at Yin Wu Fa! His eyes were like that of a poisonous snake looking at its target!

Yin Wu Fa looked, and was immediately shocked! This person was exactly as Chu Yang described!

Moreover, this person emitted a powerful aura! One that enveloped the world! This was the aura of a person at a high position and holding the lives of millions in his hands!

Only such an aura was capable of controlling Bu Tian Pavilion and going against a legendary figure like Diwu Qing Rou!

This was also the person with the cruelty and the ferociousness to kill so many people!

Yin Wu Fa’s two eyes brightened! This is the reason I came to Iron Cloud! King of Hell Chu! Finally, you have appeared! Finally, I have found you!

Chapter 144: A battle of Kings

Yin Wu Fa's mind was greatly uplifted because the thought that he was about to be successful in killing a master flooded his head! At this moment, his fighting spirit was rising. It was the same fierceness from long ago when he secretly travelled for thousands of miles to and hid amongst thousands of soldiers to get an opposing general's head.

The moment the man in black appeared, Yin Wu Fa immediately let out a spirited shout and attacked!

His body and appendages seemed to be covered by a layer of golden mist. Within a blink of an eye, he hit out three palms. Four painful screams rang out as four Revered Martial Artists flew out in four directions. The loud cracking sounds of their bones breaking was heard, and fresh blood sprayed everywhere. There were even two who died before their bodies landed on the ground.

The two people who were lucky enough to survive had become unconscious as they fell on the ground; blood spewed out from their orifices.

Yin Wu Fa laughed loudly, then a "pop" was heard as he made a quick movement with his hands. Unbelievably, that action had made his sleeves "pop" like they were metallic. All the dust on his body rained down to the ground, an incredibly arrogant and cool move.

After that he slowly straightened his shirt, covering the wound on his chest. Under the control of his energy, that area was no longer bleeding.

Yin Wu Fa looked up; an icy and cruel smiled appeared on his face as he looked at the Hei Mo King level leader. He said casually, "It's peaceful now!"

The moment this "King of Hell Chu" appeared, Yin Wu Fa had

sensed that this legendary minister of Bu Tian Pavilion was his lifetime rival.

That was why he immediately took care of the six Revered Martial Artists to prepare for this great battle!

He was an assassin; but now that they were face to face, there was no hiding. The only thing left was a direct battle! This was a big handicap for Yin Wu Fa; he had lost his greatest advantage.

However, the golden moment had arrived; if he did not even try, how could he live with himself? It would be difficult to come face to face with King of Hell Chu like this again!

Regardless, his opponent was still a master!

If someone were to intervene during a key moment in the battle, he would surely be in danger! Therefore, he took care to clean up first.

The Hei Mo King level master glared at Yin Wu Fa. A killing aura rose up from inside him and was slowly emitted through his eyes, which was gradually becoming frosty like a block of ice. Six capable subordinates: four seriously are injured and unconscious, and two are already dead!

This is my first loss since arriving at this Lower Three Heavens!

This person did not bother asking any questions and fought with such hatred. Plus, his martial power is really high level; he must be a person from the Mo clan!

“Peaceful?” The Hei Mo King level master never took a step. He floated about three yards above the ground as a dark aura surrounded his body, apparently, not even using his full martial power. He coldly asked, “Who are you?”

“The person who will take your life!” Yin Wu Fa clasped his hands behind his back, looking the part of a master!

“You, kill me...?” The Hei Mo King level master muttered, and

then laughed icily, “Not bad, not bad. What grade are you? You are clearly injured, and you still dare mouth off?”

Yin Wu Fa laughed and replied with satisfaction, “Six grade Martial King! I might be injured, but taking your life will be as easy as flipping my palm over!”

The Hei Mo King level master slowly nodded and said, “Yes, unless you are a fifth grade King or above, you would not dare to brag that you could kill me. And you certainly would not dare to come here by yourself!”

His two bony hands slowly opened, and the dark aura became thicker and thicker. In that hazy fog, his eyes also became darker and darker. As time progressed, the white in his eyes also disappeared. They had become two deep dark black holes.

This abnormal occurrence was extremely frightening! He was like a Nine Heavens Devil that came down with the dark fog.

His black robe fluttered wildly even though there was no wind.

Clang...!

A black sword appeared on his right hand, emitting a black mist.

“Only a sixth grade Martial King, and you want to kill me?” The Hei Mo King level master laughed icily and continued, “I guess your clan did not tell you... I already broke through sixth grade Sword King a year ago...!!”

“Sixth grade Sword King?” Yin Wu Fa smiled and replied, “No matter what, you will still have to die today!”

“You dared killed my subordinates; you will be buried with them today! I will absolutely not allow you to leave here alive.”

The two King level masters were engaged in a verbal battle; each showing off their imposing air! In the air, a golden aura and a black aura continually crashed into each other!

Both sides had only one thought: As soon as the enemy’s aura

becomes slightly weakened, I will attack in a flash, and end him in the shortest time possible!

When two masters fight, it was crucial to compete with their auras!

Competing with their auras was related to their later actions. Whichever side could take the upper hand in aura would be stronger; their force would be one level above that of their opponent!

This was an irreparable gap!

After a long time, their auras were unexpectedly evenly matched. The black aura could not advance, and the golden aura would not retreat. On their heads, black and gold auras appeared as their distinguishing crowns!

The moment these crowns appeared, all the experts in the area immediately paused and watched the situation restlessly.

Such a great commotion was bound to happen; it was two King level masters in battle!

Swoosh... swoosh. The black sword immediately sliced across, leaving a black streak in the air. Their auras were equally matched, but the balance was broken! The sword was swung!

Yin Wu Fa laughed. The aura around his palms became thicker and thicker. And without even avoiding, he shot forward to attack.

A steady hissing sound rang out. The surrounding atmosphere became silent; all that was left was the sound of the air being ripped apart. The two figures moved like lightning. Palms were shot out continuously, and the sword was everywhere. The two King level masters were in a fight to the death.

The two people paid serious attention; neither underestimated their opponent. Two thin shadows, both solemn and terrifying.

They were evenly matched!

Yin Wu Fa was furious! My martial power is supposed to be stronger than this King of Hell Chu, but that one stab has weakened my strength. We have been fighting for so long and I still can't get the upper hand!

The number of onlookers became greater and greater, and Yin Wu Fa became more anxious. He immediately roared and turned his palm into a claw, a technique he created – Wu Fa Eighteen Lawless Style. The wind from the claw hissed; it was not any less sharp than the sword.

The Hei Mo King level leader had not said a word since they started fighting. His face remained icy as his sword hand continued to swing. The black sword was like a viper shooting out from the black aura; each sword swing was filled with murderous intent!

Bang!

Yin Wu Fa's hand and the sword came into contact. The two bodies flashed as endless "bang bang bang" sounds rang out.

The two were enraged!

Yin Wu Fa wanted to kill this King of Hell Chu no matter what, and the Hei Mo King level master also wanted to kill the person who just killed his two subordinates.

They both had reasons to put their lives on the line. While each maintained a fortified mind, the killing intents in their eyes gradually grew stronger, capable of exploding at any point.

Chu Yang had long ago stood up. While he suffered heavy internal injuries, it was not so bad that he could not move. He stood and watched the two King level masters in battle with great elation.

Wow, they are real masters!

They are truly matched rivals! Both sides have incredible martial powers. Truly admirable...!!!

Chu Yang watched the two people in battle, completely mesmerized. In my previous life, I never had the chance to watch two King level masters fighting like this... Every technique used, every kick, every movement, and every swing are the best of the best...

As Chu Yang watched the fight, he immediately compared their techniques with his own. Whatever he was not able to comprehend before, it was now clear.

One far reaching palm with advancing left leg, and turning right leg. It looks as if the person is attacking on the left, but the right leg continually changes with each second. Point to the south, but hit the north. You guard the right, I attack the left! This is changing according to one's mind!

And that sword; it looked like it was going straight, but the sword curved, capable of attacking positions that normally could not be attacked. It would not be expected by the opponents! This requires using body movements and energy in expert synchronization. Not one thing is expendable!

Chu Yang's eyes brightened, and he seemed to have completely forgotten about the fact that he was seriously injured.

There was a loud explosion. The two crowns on their heads shook nonstop, and the two dark figures were like eagles as they flew backward!

The two had went in with their full force! Yin Wu Fa hit one palm into the left shoulder of the Hei Mo King level master, and the other stabbed into Yin Wu Fa's right arm. Blood appeared as Yin Wu Fa lost a large chunk of meat.

As the two flew backward, the face of the Hei Mo King level master suddenly turned red and then became pale. He immediately spat out fresh blood! Yin Wu Fa's face became sallow, and then paled as well. Fresh blood sprayed into the air!

After the two separated, they advanced forward right away, and continued fighting in midair.

The two fought from the ground to the air.

The two were in a fight to the death without any intentions of retreating; their eyes were completely red! Both were also seriously injured! Sustaining a serious injury during an open battle was the greatest insult for both of them!

Their hatred for their opponent grew deeper! Both did not say a word and continued to fight to the death!

Each move became more cruel and malicious!

Chu Yang looked up and studied carefully. He put great efforts into understand as he silently prayed: I can’t believe they have fought to this point of no return. It seems neither of them intend to retreat. It would be best if you two take care to die together for me. Quickly die for me please...

Chapter 145: Mutual destruction

Sure enough, Chu Yang's prayer was immediately answered!

There was a thunderous explosion and the two people were shot outward once again. They now stood about ten yards from each other. On top of a roof, each stared intensely at their opponent, breathing heavily. They did not make a move, but the mist surrounding each one continued to swirl furiously.

Obviously, they were about to release a strike that would determine the outcome!

After a long while!

"Aaaa...!"

"Yaaa...!"

Two loud roars rang out at the same time! Chu Yang's whole body was immediately in shock as an icy feeling ran down his spine. It was as if he had just been hit with an orgasmic electric shock...

Great! It has finally started!

Getting hurt this time is not a waste after all!

The two people were like two black meteors as they flew through the air. They left a long blurry trail as they shot toward each other at high speed!

The sword point of the Hei Mo King level master emitted a glow so thick it seemed almost solid. With two hands on the sword hilt, person and sword became one straight line ready to strike a fatal blow.

Such a move was unretractable!

Yin Wu Fa's eyes were opened wide and his eyeballs looked like they almost popped out of their sockets. With one palm in front of the other, his fingers curved like a tiger grabbing its prey. After

flying up, his body immediately curved. Midway, his legs suddenly pushed straight out and his speed increased fractionally!

His eyes were filled with zealousness!

The moment had finally arrived!

“Stop! You two, stop right now!” A loud roar rang out from a far distance as a few figures in black quickly shot forward. The quickest person had, surprisingly, a majestic crown on his head.

Another King level master!

He yelled at this moment hoping that the two would stop their battle to the death.

But he was too late!

Two loud roars rang out as the two struck each other with all their might.

Boom boom boom! Yin Wu Fa had used all of his strength. Within moments of contact, his tiger claw slammed into the Hei Mo King level master a few dozen times! The sounds rang out continuously like firecrackers!

Pop pop pop! The Hei Mo King level master was no less. His black sword was like angry dragon; in the blink of an eye, he pierced numerous spots on Yin Wu Fa’s body. Stabbed... pull... stabbed about seven or eight times...

Each time he pulled out his sword, he created a new blood spout.

For a fleeting moment, both people could clearly see their opponent faces soaked in blood... In this instant, they suddenly had a feeling of empathy and a touch of regret...

I have finally killed King of Hell Chu! Yin Wu Fa’s gaunt face smiled brightly as he thought to himself...

I have finally killed a six grade King level master of the Mo clan! The cruel eyes of the Hei Mo King level master was showing extreme satisfaction!

After that, the two passed by each other as they continued to fly forward!

In the end Yin Wu Fa was a little more shrewd. At the most critical moment, he retained one breath and became a golden rainbow, highlighted by fresh blood as he used all of his might to flee.

The other man in black must also be a King level master, but I am the only King level master at Golden Horse Riders Department! So he must be an enemy as well!

Even if I die, my body must not fall into the enemy's hands!

With this mentality, Yin Wu Fa mustered up his last breath, and disappeared without a trace.

That person in black was one of the Saber Sword King Pair of the Hei Mo Clan, a Saber King! At this moment, he was greatly distressed, and used all of his efforts to rush forward and catch the Sword King as he was falling down. When he landed, he staggered in shock.

It is too late to chase the enemy! Let's check on the injuries of Sword King first! He was completely surprised! All of the Sword King's ribs were broken; not one bone was intact. All of his internal organs were disheveled. His meridians were broken at many places, and the energy in his dantian was completely dried up. While his hand still maintained a tight grip of his Hei Mo sword, his arm was broken at seven or eight places!

With such injuries, he would surely die!

The Saber King did not dare to delay and immediately transferred energy into the Sword King's body. He felt somewhat alleviated.He is still capable of taking in energy; that means there is still a ray of hope!

"It's... it's people of the Mo..." The Sword King turned his body and bore the pain without making a sound. He said weakly,

“Third... and Ninth are... d... dead. The... the other four are... all severely injured!”

This news made the Saber King stunned!

“There was only one opponent?” The Saber King asked.

There was no need for an answer as the Sword King closed his eyes with the feeling of lost showing on his face.

“Junior martial brother, don’t think too much. We have to take care of your injuries first! We’ll talk when you are better!” Even though the Saber King was extremely anxious, he said, “It’s nothing; I am certain you will be find! You must hang on!”

“I am won’t make it...” The Sword King coughed a dry cough and said weakly, “Before coming here... he... was injured...”

The Saber King maintained his composure as he walked into the inn. What he witness in the inn was chaos with four subordinates still lying on the floor and next to them was two icy corpses. His eyes were filled with anger and hatred.

“Two of you, go find doctors! If they are in Iron Cloud Citadel, bring them to me! Anyone who does not comply, kill them!”

“Three of you, immediately start investigating!” The Saber King tried to control his anger as ground his teeth and said, “That guy has been seriously injured; I am sure he would not be able to run far! You must find him at any cost! I want to mince him into ten thousand pieces!”

The six people in black carried out their duties right away. Two people immediately went out. The other four carefully carried their four injured colleagues into their room. After that, three people also left.

The one left behind dealt with the bodies of his friends... The whole inn was covered in a gloom and doom atmosphere.

Who would have thought that two King level masters and twelve

Revered Martial Artists went out and met such a great loss at Iron Cloud Citadel!

“Find a way to notify the clan!” The Saber King kept his hands on the Sword King’s back and concentrated on transferring energy while giving orders, “We need to see what the clan wants to do. Notify them now! Quickly!”

“We must get to the roots of this and find out what happened. We must know why people from the Mo clan suddenly came here, and which one of the Five Great Heavenly Kings made the move!!!”

As for Chu Yang, he was long gone!

After seeing the Saber King flew forward faster than the wind, Chu Yang did not dare show his face. With his head down, he tried to drag his body away and went behind a wall.

With the final battle’s results, he was sure that the two King level masters would either die or at least never recover their martial power! With such results, Chu Yang was already very satisfied!

One of the King level masters was definitely Diwu Qing Rou’s people, and the other one was the one that injured Qing Wu! In Chu Yang’s mind, death was not enough to pay for their sins!

He had singlehandedly directed and watched a drama for free. Chu Yang was feeling very pleasant. While his organs were suffering and his whole body was exhausted, his mind was elated.

This is really fun!

King level masters fighting to the death! Moreover, fighting with a misguided mindset. The Hei Mo King level master thought Yin Wu Fa was a person of the Mo clan, and Yin Wu Fa thought his opponent was me!

What a crazy accident! If these two find out that they were being fooled by me, they would surely spit blood from anger and die!

What’s really great is that it was all luck. Chu Yang was

somewhat satisfied. There was one thing that bothered him: He had to put great effort into dragging his injured body and finding a horse carriage to go back to Bu Tian Pavilion.

The two Revered Martial Artists from Golden Horse Riders Department were really skilled. In a short amount of time, the had managed to find a layout map of Bu Tian Pavilion. The were currently studying Bu Tian Pavilion's architecture.

No matter what, if they wanted to easily assassinate King of Hell Chu, they first had to find the best route for their King level official...

He had not carried out any field work for many years... They thought about his fatal lightning strike and his overbearing air; the two of them became really excited!

This Iron Cloud Nation finally has the chance to see our King level master in action!

The two were still concentrating on their research when the sound of a person ripping through the wind as he shot forward. The next moment, the window was smashed through by Yin Wu Fa's bloody body.

"Plop!" Yin Wu Fa dropped on the floor. Unable to stand up he rolled a few times and lifted his head. His face was horrible looking like that of a demon!

The moment they saw this, the two were surprised; their spirits almost fled from their bodies.

The body of the King level master was riddled with wounds. The stomach, the thighs, the right chest, and the shoulders, each one had a bloody hole with blood still spewing. Furthermore, there was a large hole on his back!

This was a wound that pierced right through the body!

Who is this cruel and powerful? I can't believe that he could caused our King level master to be in this state.

At this time, the two people were terrified; their hearts practically stopped beating!

“Quick... Leave here immediately...” Yin Wu Fa could only say so much before he spat out blood. His body twitched and his voice was fragmented, “King of Hell Chu... is also... a... King level... master. I am... seriously... injured... Send out a notice... immediately... retreat...”

Unable to carry on, he became unconscious!

The two frantically helped Yin Wu Fa stop the bleeding. Such a terrible wound, even the two Revered Martial Arts were petrified.

So severely injured, and he still managed to get back!

“Wait a minute... the King level master just said King of Hell Chu is also a King level master? Could it be that he just fought with King of Hell Chu?”

No wonder...

The two used the quickest speed to help Yin Wu Fa. Then they left the place. They hurriedly contacted the Iron Horse Riders and found another place to hide.

A while later, an Invisible Falcon came out from another corner of Iron Cloud Citadel. It flew into the air and quickly disappeared in the sky.

The minister must be notified of everything that has happened in Iron Cloud Citadel!

Chapter 146: If you're going to leave, leave quickly!

Less than ten minutes after the people of Golden Horse Riders Department left, two masked people in black came only to find that room completely empty. The two were furious and set fire to the whole inn.

The Hei Mo people were currently going berserk.

Two of their martial brothers died needlessly, and four were still bedridden from being severely injured. Even their King level master was now on the brink of death. Such a huge blow made the Revered Martial Artists of the Hei Mo clan feel as if they were on fire, unable to sit or stand still. This situation was the result of their risky act...

At this time, the inside of Bu Tian Pavilion was also in chaos.

That subordinate searched for a long time and was not able to find Chu Yang. In the end, he had to quickly return to report back.

For Wu Qian Qian, hearing news of Chu Yang's sudden disappearance was like being struck by lightning; she almost fainted on the spot. That unlucky subordinate was sent directly to a jail cell.

After that, all the members of Bu Tian Pavilion were sent out to search. While no one knew who that youth in black was, they knew that this situation was no laughing matter.

Tie Bu Tian immediately rode over to supervise Bu Tian Pavilion after hearing the news. He directly received all information and delegated personnel.

As for the both famed groups from Bu Tian Pavilion, all were mobilized and spread out all over Iron Cloud Citadel searching for Chu Yang.

After that, there was news of a great battle between King level masters on a main street of Iron Cloud Citadel.

Tie Bu Tian suddenly had an inkling that this great battle certainly was related to Chu Yang's disappearance, and immediately sent people to the scene to investigate. They were none other than his two shadow guards.

After all, it was a battle between two King level masters. Sending ordinary people meant sending them to their death, and was essentially a useless act.

When Tie Bu Tian was done making all the arrangements, he paced back and forth in the room. He was distraught and filled with concerns, "Minister Chu, nothing happened to you, right?"

The news from the past few days stated that Diwu Qing Rou would probably make Bu Tian Pavilion and Minister Chu his next target. This made Tie Bu Tian doubly worried.

Wu Qian Qian sat listlessly on the chair that Chu Yang sat on each day. She was like a body without a soul and did not know what to do next. The more she tried to ignore everything, the worse she imagined the whole situation. An ominous feeling grew larger and larger in her mind, and, in the end, she had abandoned all hope. She sat as if expecting some horrific news to come.

In all that pandemonium, Minister Chu came waltzing in.

The sight of that diabolical mask at the door made everyone in Bu Tian Pavilion cheer.

While they were still unclear as to what had happened, without the leadership of Minister Chu, they were like a snake without a head. Minister Chu had finally come back; a heavy burden was lifted from their chest.

Tie Bu Tian and Wu Qian Qian were pleasantly surprised, and came out to greet Chu Yang together. Seeing Chu Yang, the always composed Tie Bu Tian became so excited that his face flushed.

Wu Qian Qian rushed toward Chu Yang with teary eyes. She touched his body, and once she was sure Chu Yang was okay, she squatted on the floor and cried up a storm.

The fact that Chu Yang went missing was only known to Wu Qian Qian and Tie Bu Tian. Since the person was Chu Yang, the two of them had been extremely pessimistic. He was the person the enemies wanted dead the most. If he was captured, how could he come back alive?

Therefore, the two did not hold on to any hope.

They never expected such luck.

“What are you crying for? I am still not dead.” Chu Yang coughed dryly twice. With his body greatly weakened, he said softly, “Quickly help me in; I am injured…”

Wu Qian Qian was startled and carefully took Chu Yang’s arm and helped him into the room. Chu Yang only managed to say a few words before becoming unconscious, “Let the prince know that the Hei Mo people have gone crazy; we don’t need to worry about them for the time being. Send people to bring a few doses of medicine for them…”

“Finally… I am back… no more danger…” Chu Yang’s last words were only muttered unconsciously.

Chu Yang did not come to until some time in the afternoon of the next day. He awoke to find Du Shi Qing right next to him. And Wu Qian Qian was working on the side with the entire room filled with the noxious smell of medicine.

“Are you awake?” Du Shi Qing calmly looked at him and asked.

“Yes, I am alright!” Chu Yang smiled, wanting to get up.

“Don’t move! Your are seriously injured!” Du Shi Qing gently pushed him back down, “You were injured by a powerful person; your meridians are in shock and your internal organs also show signs of injuries. You should not act carelessly!”

“Senior Du, how many days before I recover?” Chu Yang asked.

“Days? One month if you are lucky!” Du Shi Qing stroked his bead, and said as he glared at Chu Yang.

“Chu Yang, drink your medicine!” Wu Qian Qian slowly brought a medicine bowl over. The edge of her eyes were pinkish, and there were faint traces tears on her face.

“Just put it down! Is the situation at the Pavilion still stable?”

“There is nothing. Everyone only knows that the minister just returned; they don’t know anything else.” Wu Qian Qian’s face was pale as she struggled to answer.

“That’s good!”

“The prince has left. He said that you should take care to heal properly; he does not need you to worry about other things!”

“Good! Elder Martial Sister Wu, please go out and get some fresh air! I have a few things to say to Senior Du.” Chu Yang said solemnly. Seeing Du Shi Qing, he suddenly remembered something.

“Sure!” Wu Qian Qian watched Chu Yang finish his medication before stepping out.

“Do you have something you want to talk to me about?” Du Shi Qing looked at him suspiciously; his face was filled with anxiety.

“Yes. There are some things that I have been thinking about for a long time. Today, since only the two of us are here, it is a good opportunity. I want to discuss a few things with Senior Du.” Chu Yang pushed himself up with great effort and leaned against the headboard. He eyes looked at Du Shi Qing as he answered sincerely.

“Go ahead!” Du Shi Qing smiled.

“Senior Du, how long will you be staying at Iron Cloud?” Chu Yang pondered for a little, then asked.

“Staying in Iron Cloud…” Du Shi Qing’s eyes showed a trace of fatigue as he answered, “I also do not know… This depends on His Majesty’s condition!”

“Senior Du came to Iron Cloud because of Diwu Qing Rou’s request, correct?” Chu Yang thought for a while and decided to get straight to the point.

“Huh? You…” Du Shi Qing was startled.

“This is something not difficult to understand!” Chu Yang continued softly, “If Diwu Qing Rou does not want you here, then no matter how powerful Prince Tie Bu Tian is, he could not reach that far. No matter what, that is still Diwu Qing Rou’s territory.”

“Yes, it is Diwu Qing Rou!” Du Shi Qing sighed dejectedly and replied.

“It could be said that your presence here is the result of a mutual agreement between two enemies, Tie Bu Tian and Diwu Qing Rou. It is about the life of the ruler of Iron Cloud. Diwu Qing Rou intends to dominate, and keep the ruler living longer to constrain the prince. Thereby creating a divided Iron Cloud. Whereas Tie Bu Tian is simply a filial child.”

Thinking about Tie Bu Tian, Chu Yang could not help but sigh. This love that the prince had for his father could be easily seen by anyone.

“That’s correct!” Du Shi Qing softly replied. He thought about Tie Bu Tian coming to see his father every day no matter how busy he was. He always asked about the ruler’s condition. His hope and longing made Du Shi Qing feel immensely guilty.

He could not confess that the ruler’s condition, from all those years, was of his own making.

“I plan to leave Iron Cloud in spring next year, before the flowers bloom.” Du Shi Qing did not hold anything from Chu Yang.

“In other words, before the flowers bloom next spring, the ruler

will die!" Chu Yang let out a muffled cry. Du Shi Qing remained silent, without any objections.

Chu Yang frowned. The death of the ruler of Iron Cloud was not the end, but the beginning of great chaos. This was Diwu Qing Rou's last use of the ruler, to attack Tie Bu Tian.

At that time, chaos would ensue!

"His Majesty Tie Shi Cheng is currently only... a lamp without any oil left!" Du Shi Qing sighed and said, "His body is as frail as a stick of wood. His meridians are already damaged and his blood is running dry. Even if we use wild ginseng more than fifty years old, it would not do, because such a powerful supplement could cause damage if used carelessly. That is why I have to use the mildest medications to stretch his life hours by hours each day."

"Senior Du!" Chu Yang interrupted him and said sternly, "Senior Du, you must be gone from Iron Cloud before the flowers bloom!"

What Chu Yang meant was that Du Shi Qing must depart before the ruler of Iron Cloud Nation passed on.

Du Shi Qing asked in surprise, "Why is this? If the ruler passes on, why can't I be there to send him off?"

"Senior Du, if you don't leave, then you would never have the chance to leave!" Chu Yang's eyes shined sharply as he looked straight at Du Shi Qing, "Senior Du, a man won't beat around the bushes! You know well why the ruler is sick, right?"

Du Shi Qing immediately paled. He looked at Chu Yang in shock, unable to speak a word. This was the greatest secret in his heart. But the words Chu Yang just spoke seemed to show that he already knew all about it.

"At that time, Iron Cloud will be in chaos. Tie Bu Tian will be furious..." Chu Yang continued slowly, "Diwu Qing Rou will not let this opportunity pass him by. He will surely release the information, and Tie Bu Tian, with his great grief, will surely take

Senior Du's life!"

Du Shi Qing's whole body trembled; he slumped on a seat, and replied listlessly, "Diwu Qing Rou...? It can't be...!!!"

He definitely knew that!

"Saintly Doctor Du saved countless lives. According to my knowledge, some key characters in the major sects owe you their lives. These people have always maintained neutrality, never siding with anyone. But once you lose your life at Iron Cloud... they will surely join forces with Diwu Qing Rou."

Chu Yang chuckled softly and continued, "Surely Senior Du also knows about Diwu Qing Rou's ruthless tactics. Doing something like this is definitely not difficult for Diwu Qing Rou at all."

Du Shi Qing's face became pale and his eyes were filled with hopelessness.

Chu Yang has stated clearly: Once Tie Shi Cheng dies, Diwu Qing Rou will surely make his move. And Tie Bu Tian will surely take my life. A person who kills one's father cannot share the same sky; even if Tie Bu Tian does not want to, he will have no choice. On the off chance that I am lucky enough to escape from Tie Bu Tian's grasp, Diwu Qing Rou will surely send people to kill me. Because once I am dead, he will use my fame to recruit powerful people to help make the continent his.

Du Shi Qing absolutely believed that Diwu Qing Rou would do that. If he did not, he would not be Diwu Qing Rou! Just like that year when Diwu Qing Rou threatened the lives of his family to get Du Shi Qing to work for him. He would use any means necessary to achieve his goals.

In other words, once Tie Shi Cheng is laid down to rest, the two nations, Iron Cloud and Great Zhao, would fall into a path of great death. The path ahead did not have a way out.

Chapter 147: Boom! Boom! Boom!

Even if Du Shi Qing was an Emperor level master, facing against the massive forces of Iron Cloud Nation and Golden Horse Riders Department, he would probably just come to a sad end. Not to mention that he did not have such high cultivation.

“Senior Du, only in leaving here will you have any chance of living!!!” Chu Yang said slowly.

“Even if I can escape, this world is vast… where can I run to?” Du Shi Qing muttered.

“Senior Du has forgotten, I still owe you one favor!” Chu Yang smiled and replied, “In this world, there are few elders that are deserving of my respect; you are one of them!!!”

Du Shi Qing repeatedly shook his head, “That will not do! You currently have a prestigious position in Iron Cloud and a bright future ahead of you! Plus, I have handed you my life’s work. Even if I have to die, I cannot let this have a negative impact on you!”

Du Shi Qing’s words were resolute. Chu Yang was the person that Du Shi Qing had high hopes for. In the heart of this physician, nothing should happen to Chu Yang.

“It cannot have a negative impact on me!” Chu Yang was little impatient, but he continues to reply softly, “Plus, in the entire world, I am the only one with the ability to help Senior Du!”

“Such a kindhearted doctor like Senior Du should not die like that!” Chu Yang said with a heavy heart, “Senior Du, let’s agree on that! It’s just that there are some people that I have not figured out if they are working for Diwu Qing Rou! At that time, if these things are still not clear, I will take just you and leave!”

“Some people,” Chu Yang’s words were referring to Du Shi Qing’s body guard, Fire Saber Great Master, Gao Wei Cheng.

This Saber Great Master was the only one that Chu Yang did not

have an impression of. After everything, Chu Yang had no way of knowing if he was Du Shi Qing's friend or Diwu Qing Rou's spy.

Chu Yang felt that Saber Great Master Gao Wei Cheng's ability to control his power was a little odd.

Du Shi Qing let out a long sigh; his mouth opened as if he wanted to say something but stopped. After a long time, he muttered to himself, "I have done so many wrongs in my life... Sooner or later I will have to pay for it..."

Then he suddenly smiled and said, "I didn't really save your father's life, did I? You don't owe me anything!"

Chu Yang smiled and said meaningfully, "I owe you a conscience..." [TLN: basically, he feels guilty for having lied. If someone has a better way to say this in English, comment please.]

The words "conscience" made Du Shi Qing solemn for a while. Then he sighed and muttered, "Conscience... conscience..."

He did not add anything else after that.

Du Shi Qing stayed a little longer and then returned to the palace because Tie Shi Cheng's condition was critical so he could not stay too long.

After Du Shi Qing left, Chu Yang immediately sat up.

"Sword spirit, are you there?"

"What is it?"

"I need a little of the medicine from that day! I need to heal my injuries!"

Chu Yang's mind resolute. Ordinarily, with these kind of injuries, Chu Yang would need to rest for at least half a month before recovering. But this was a critical time; how could he lay on a bed for half a month?

Of course he still remembered that in his own meridians there was an extremely large quantity of medicine. If he wanted to heal

this way, it would not take too much effort. Because the force was already in the meridians, all he had to do was let it out and recover almost naturally.

“If I let out the medicinal power to completely heal you, your cultivation would increase by at least one grade in the process. But you just achieved the state of Martial Artist, your mind is not yet fortified. You don’t have a deep understanding of this state yet; I am worried that it would do more harm than good!” The sword spirit replied hesitantly.

“First grade Martial Artist? Don’t forget that that first grade cultivation resulted from breakthrough under the pressure of a King level master!” Chu Yang continued, “Plus, I just battled with a Martial King; how could it not be fortified?”

Chu Yang continued his retort, “I will probably breakthrough soon!!!”

The sword spirit remained quiet for a while as if checking the state of his mind. A long time later, Chu Yang felt a surge of pure medicinal power from his meridian spreading throughout his entire body. Along with it was a euphoric feeling that quickly rose.

At that moment, a surge of heat rose from his dantian. Nine Tribulations Sword also released a chill, mixing it with that heat.

Hot and cold joined forces. The was suddenly a loud explosion in Chu Yang’s dantian.

“Boom!”

Wu Qian Qian just walked into the room with a bowl of medicine in her hand. Behind her was Tie Bu Tian in a radiant golden outfit. But the movement these two stepped into the room they heard this “natural sound” coming from Chu Yang. Their faces had an odd expression, wanting to cover their nose but feeling that it would be not too polite...

This Minister Chu really had character... Even his gas release had

great force...

Within moments, the two felt that the room was flooded with a special aroma.

The two did not say one word and gave Chu Yang a strange look; they seemed to be simmering.

Chu Yang opened his eyes wide. Seeing their strange faces, he did not seem to understand what was going on. He waved his hand, “What’s wrong?”

“You can move already?” Wu Qian Qian asked with great difficulty. Of course it would be difficult to hold your breath and speak. Plus, there was that extraordinary sound...

“Yes... But what’s wrong with you two?” Chu Yang looked at the two people turning purple from holding their breath and asked in annoyance.

At that exact moment, another surge of heat rose from his dantian, and Nine Tribulations Sword released another chill.

“Boom...”

This time, the sound was twice as loud as before.

Too shameless! The first time could be considered accidental, but this time is definitely intentional. Without intention, no one could create such a loud noise...

This was a result of gas being retained, and then liberated at full force for an awe-inspiring effect.

Wu Qian Qian and Tie Bu Tian looked at each other. They were fuming on the inside. This punk is playing with us...

“Drink it yourself...” Wu Qian Qian held in her anger and placed the bowl of medicine at the head of the bed. She covered her nose with her hands and ran out of the room. Tie Bu Tian did not say one word. He glared at Chu Yang and followed Wu Qian Qian out with his darkened face. It was as if they were trying to run away.

“This… no.. ack, that…” Chu Yang finally understood why those two ran in haste; it was because of this smell.

“I am innocent…”

Chu Yang rolled his eyes and thought that these two were strange. Even if you poop, would you make such loud noises?

At least without you people here, I can heal…

Tie Bu Tian clasped his hands behind his back and stood outside the door. Wu Qian Qian stood behind him with a flushed face. It took her practically half a day before being able to say, “I am really sorry Your Majesty. It’s probably because Chu Yang is injured that his body accumulated so much gas…”

“I am nauseated…” Tie Bu Tian made a retching move, and waved dismissively, “Don’t try to explain on his behalf; I won’t blame him. The more you try to explain, the more I want to vomit…”

What is this clever girl saying?

Accumulated gas can’t be controlled…? Tie Bu Tian thought with some annoyance.

Wu Qian Qian did not know what happened and just added insult to injury. It was because she was so concerned to he line of thoughts became chaotic and said some nonsensical things.

While the two were standing, the suddenly heard an “earth-shattering explosion.”

“Boom…”

The two covered their mouths and ran out to the front awning. Breathing in fresh air was helped a little. They looked at each other, trying to hold in their laughter, “That was some strong force…”

Cheng Zi Ang hastily ran toward them, wanting to go into Chu Yang’s room. But when he saw Tie Bu Tian standing there he

immediately performed his greeting. Then he asked in surprise, “How is Minister Chu’s injury? Miss Wu, why are you… ack… out here like this?”

Tie Bu Tian smiled and replied, “Go in there and you will find out…”

“Yes… yes…” Cheng Zi Ang ceremoniously bowed and hurriedly went in. Behind him, Wu Qian Qian cover her mouth and giggled until her whole body trembled.

The moment he entered, Cheng Zi Ang called out loudly, “Minister, you…”

“Boom…”

Our Hall Leader Cheng suddenly jumped and ran back out. His martial power was really great; he ran like a rabbit with an arrow on its back.

“Ha… ha… ha…” Tie Bu Tian and Wu Qian Qian held their stomachs and laughed.

Cheng Zi Ang, with one hand on his nose and a shameful face, scratched his head and said, “Minister Chu is worthy of being a minister… even that is earth-shattering…!!!”

Tie Bu Tian let out a few dry coughs; he had laughed so hard that his throat was a little irritated, “Minister Chu is no longer in any danger; I will leave first. Miss Wu, please take care of Minister Chu well… Ack, if there is anything inconvenient, then you can ask Hall Leader Cheng to come and take care of him…”

As he was talking, he started walking away really fast.

Cheng Zi Ang looked nauseated. He wanted to say no but he did not dare. That minister let… let out such a loud one… And I have to take care of him???

At this point, those monstrous sounds from the room were growing louder with each interval becoming shorter…

“Boom… boom… boom…”

Wu Qian Qian could no longer stand it, “Hall Leader Cheng, I will have to trouble you then!!!”

She immediately covered her nose and hightailed out of there.

Cheng Zi Ang stood stupefied as he watched Wu Qian Qian disappeared. The endless sounds of “boom… boom” filled his ears. He suddenly felt it was getting harder and harder to breathe; he bent down…

“Bleeeuuurrrggghh…”

Our pitiful Hall Leader Cheng vomited on the spot.

Chu Yang was finally done with his embarrassing “letting out gas.” Even our thick skinned Minister Chu felt as if the short period lasted a lifetime.

Too humiliating! From the previous life until now, this was the first time that he suffered such an embarrassing misunderstanding…

In his consciousness, our Minister Chu was arguing with the sword spirit about this. He absolutely did not believe that this could not be controlled, but the sword spirit simply ignored him.

A long time later, Chu Yang felt his body fill with strength. He immediately put on his devilish mask, and walked out casually. This was the first time he appreciated the “hiding” effect of this mask.

Cheng Zi Ang was sitting on a chair with his stretched out in front, completely limp. His face was pale and haggard.

“Cough… cough…” Chu Yang coughed a few times.

“Ah… Minister… You are better?” Cheng Zi Ang seemed drained as he looked at Chu Yang with tired eyes.

“Yes, do you have something to report?” Chu Yang redirected the conversation.

“We have those people completely guarded. All are going according to your instructions. When should we make our move?”

Talking about official business improved Cheng Zi Ang’s state of mind a little.

“Really? You were not discovered?” Chu Yang nodded, showing satisfaction.

“Absolutely not…” Cheng Zi Ang smiled and replied.

“Those places are under the jurisdiction of the military. There are many disabled veterans there. We were able to easily talk with them and switch in our people. They were very cooperative. Minister Chu, those are all good people.”

“Disabled veterans…” Chu Yang thought hard. He realized that a nation in constant war must have many disabled veterans. Those people once rode on horseback and fought in the battle field. Now that they could barely drag their bodies around, they were forced to live in these substandard housings…

He pondered a little more and added, “Once this is done, I will come to visit these disabled veterans with His Majesty!”

A flame burned in Cheng Zi Ang’s chest; he immediately replied, “Yes!”

Chapter 148: One spot of cold light radiates over a vast area

"How is the training coming along for our delivery falcon?" Chu Yang asked. That particular area had been very weak, and Chu Yang had been improving it since he took his position. But they were only able to find a few Lightning Falcons; Invisible Falcons were, of course, unattainable.

This continued to be a concern of Chu Yang. Compared to Invisible Falcons, Lightning Falcons were not able to hide themselves but were almost equally fast.

"Sir, the first group of Lightning Falcons are ready for use!" Cheng Zi Ang said.

"Ah, minimize giving orders to the others. They don't need to do anything; just tell them to wait for my orders. When it is time to make a move, I will immediately send out the orders!" Chu Yang slowly said.

As he was speaking, Chu Yang's eyes remained fixed to the south. He thought to himself: How could Diwu Qing Rou not think of ways to rescue Tang Xin Sheng? That King level master had already arrived; he is surely just the first wave. His first priority was to assassinate and second priority was to provide support.

But thinking of a rescue strategy? Dream on!

I wonder, if Diwu Qing Rou knows that I gently took care of that King level master of his, how would he react? If Diwu Qing Rou wants to rescue Tang Xin Sheng, who would come? How many would come?

"Quickly give the order! Search the entire citadel and capture a person who is currently severely injured!" Chu Yang described Yin Wu Fa's appearance, then continued, "Let an artist know right away. We need to draw up a notice immediately and capture this

person! If he is alive, I want to see the person! If he is dead, I want to see the corpse!”

“Yes!” Cheng Zi Ang solemnly complied and left.

Chu Yang sighed and looked at the western sky. The sunlight was slowly sinking below the horizon and was red like blood. It seemed to foreshadow an approaching storm of blood.

The Hei Mo people, how can they leave after something like this?

Chu Yang did some work, then returned to Heavenly Armament Pavilion.

When he was leaving, Wu Qian Qian could not believe that his injuries were healed. She carefully checked and agreed to let him go. But her beautiful eyes were filled with surprise. How could he recover from such serious injuries so quickly?

Isn’t this speed too fast? What magical elixir did Saintly Doctor Du Shi Qing give him?

When Chu Yang returned to Heavenly Armament Pavilion, the little loli was waiting for him wistfully.

Currently, Mo Qing Wu thought Uncle Mo Cheng Yu was no fun at all. Brother Chu Yang was the best. Besides giving her a toy every time he comes home, he also gave her many valuable things.

Mo Cheng Yu’s condition had become much better. He no longer looked haggard like before. His face had some color as well.

This proved that the medicine that Chu Yang gave Mo Cheng Yu had helped him recover. But this had made him more depressed, and he often sighed quietly.

My condition is improving; I will have to bring Qing Wu back to the clan soon. Once the clan discovers that Qing Wu’s Three Yin Meridian has been damaged, how would they react?

How would they treat this little miss that I have watched over since infancy?

Given the heartlessness of the Mo Clan, Mo Cheng Yu could imagine what kind of treatment Mo Qing Wu would receive after returning. While he had a bargaining chip that was Chu Yang's Dreaming of a Gentle Dance Saber... but he still could not be too optimistic.

What Mo Cheng Yu was most afraid of was that the Mo clan would take this saber. Even though he swore in front of Chu Yang, he was not certain of his promise at all.

Would the clan allow such a masterpiece to be in the hand of a disabled person like little miss? Each time he thought about this, Mo Cheng Yu was greatly troubled and sighed endlessly.

Chu Yang may be intelligent, but he did not come from a clan. Therefore, he would never understand how much weight the word clan has on the hearts of all the descendants!

As for the two young masters who went out with us, I don't know where they are now.

"Elder Martial Brother Mo!" Chu Yang held Mo Qing Wu in his arm and walked toward Mo Cheng Yu greeting him. Mo Qing Wu, dressed in red, was holding a stick of candied fruits in her hands and eating it with delight.

"Brother Chu!" Mo Cheng Yu forced a laugh and replied, "Why are you in such good mood today?"

"There are a few things, if I tell you, you will be in a good mood, too!" Chu Yang smiled, "Let me give you one piece of good news. The Sword King of the Hei Mo clan and an unknown King level master got into a big fight. The Sword King was seriously injured with all of his bones broken. As for his six subordinates, two died and six were also severely injured..."

"Who is that King level master? How were his injuries?" Mo Cheng Yu asked anxiously. His first reaction to this news was not excitement, but concerns for that master. According to his

speculations, that unknown King level master was probably from his clan!

His concerns for his brothers was much greater than his joy in hearing about the enemies being seriously injured.

For such results, this King level master must be second grade or higher. Otherwise, they would have to fight with the tactic of dying together. Mo Cheng Yu thought that the three King level masters that traveled with him were not more powerful than a second grade Sword King. So when he heard this news, how could he not be anxious?

Chu Yang silently nodded. This Mo Cheng Yu was definitely a loyal person; his first reaction to the news was concern for his brothers.

“That King level master took seven or eight stabs from the Sword King; each one pierced right through the body. While he tried to shield the weak spots, his chance of survival is very small.” Chu Yang said slowly.

“Aaah…” Mo Cheng Yu punched the ground; his countenance was full of suffering, “I wonder which brother it was…”

“That King level master is not from your Mo clan.” Chu Yang smiled and said, “He is an assassin from Great Zhao, a person of the Golden Horse Riders Department; he came to assassinate me. It’s just that he fell for my ruse.”

“Really? Hahaha…” Mo Cheng Yu’s spirit was lifted; he could not help but be excited. He suddenly said, “Hey, that’s not right. Why would a King level master try to assassinate you? Plus, how could a King level master assassinate the wrong person? This does not make sense.”

“Of course there is a reason for it.” Chu Yang smiled and replied mysteriously. He then changed the subject, “Your injuries, I am guessing they will not be completely healed for a few more days.”

“The key issue right now is my meridians are still blocked. To clear each one and quickly recover my strength, it would probably take half a month.” Mo Cheng Yu replied sadly.

“It’s nothing. Take your time recovering, no need to rush!” Chu Yang comforted. The two looked at each other and laughed in unison. They both understood what the other wanted.

For each day that Mo Cheng Yu did not recover, Mo Qing Wu would stay with Chu Yang another day. It was what Chu Yang wished for.

“There is time today; I just remembered two saber moves, and I want to teach Xiao Wu Right away!” Chu Yang smiled and said, “These moves might not be consecutive with each other, just fragments, but the power is not weak. They are probably not comparable to your clan, but consider this a little piece of my sincerity!”

Mo Cheng Yu’s countenance became serious, and he ceremoniously replied, “Thank you Brother Chu.”

In this day and age, martial artists valued their techniques as much as their lives. They always worried that teaching them to someone else would lead to their enemies studying their flaws. Besides teachers and parents, very few people taught their unique techniques to others.

While, in Mo Cheng Yu’s mind, Chu Yang’s cultivation was very low and he could not have any good moves, his line of thinking was indeed rare.

The saber techniques Chu Yang wanted to teach Mo Qing Wu was the first move of Nine Tribulations Sword: one spot of cold light radiates over a vast area.

This one move, after Chu Yang modified it to be a saber move, became two. One for defense, and one for offense. While they were far inferior from that of the sword, it was not lacking in power

when applied to the saber.

If it was just defensive and there was not a large gap in skill, Mo Qing Wu's safety would easily be guaranteed.

Chu Yang took Mo Qing Wu to train on saber techniques, and Mo Cheng Yu was alone deep in thought. This saber technique, Chu Yang clearly stated to he was only teaching it to Mo Qing Wu so it was not for others to see. Therefore, even Mo Cheng Yu, Mo Qing Wu's bodyguard, was not allowed to stand by and watch.

Mo Cheng Yu was currently thinking: This Chu Yang is able to make Golden Horse Riders Department send a King level master to assassinate him; his position in Iron Cloud Nation must be very important. But what is his position? Is he royalty?

Though Chu Yang saved his life, he did not know much about Chu Yang.

A little while after, Mo Cheng Yu immediately stood up in distress. He always thought that Chu Yang spoiled Mo Qing Wu in everything, but today was the first time he was surprised like this.

Chu Yang was strict with Mo Qing Wu; his sternness was comparable to his indulgence.

"Wrong. How could you hold a saber like that? In this move, you have to aim the saber's point outward. Do it again!"

"Again. Idiot. Practice once more. Practice ten times."

"Why don't you remember it yet? What's wrong with you? The saber is so light and you still can't hold it steady? You didn't eat, is that it?"

"You are really stupid. Quickly. You're not allowed to cry."

"If you drop the saber or forget your moves again, I will spank you."

"Bop, bop!"

"Hoo.. hoo... hoo..."

“You are not allowed to cry; continue practicing!”

“You’re stupider than a pig!”

Chu Yang’s yelling and little miss’s constant sobbing rang out. Mo Cheng Yu’s heart was so distressed as he paced back and forth on pins and needles. How could little miss bear such scolding?

Chu Yang also did not want this, but Mo Cheng Yu had been healing so well so the day that Mo Qing Wu would leave was coming closer.

Once they returned home, Mo Qing Wu would have to face the harsh treatments of the clan. This saber could not replace her own ability. If he could teach Mo Qing Wu these moves, she would have something to defend herself. This would have to be used at key moments. If someone looked down on her or if the clan had a competition… using these moves would make her invincible!

This was also the only thing Chu Yang could do for Mo Qing Wu. Time was of the essence; if she did not train in these few days, everything would change when she returned to the clan. If this little girl could not bear it, how could she train with her saber?

Therefore Chu Yang could not avoid being strict. He was hurt by it, but his countenance remained stern and cold as ice as he scolded her nonstop.

After some time, Mo Cheng Yu was finally unable to wait any longer. He immediately ran out looking at Mo Qing Wu who seemed to be washing her face with tears. He could not help but feel distressed and hugged her, “Little miss, are you tired? Do you want me to beat him up?”

“Don’t.” Mo Qing Wu unexpectedly shook her head. While her eyes were flooded with tears, she said with determination, “Brother Chu only wants what’s good for me!”

This statement made Mo Cheng Yu happy and scared at the same time, “Little miss, you have grown up!”

****

One night quickly passed and morning had arrived in a blink of an eye.

But inside Diwu Qing Rou’s prime minister manor, there were endless waves of people coming and going since midnight until now.

Chapter 149: Suspicion

The moment Diwu Qing Rou woke up, there was already news waiting for him. Golden Horse Riders Department's number one King level master had been waiting to talk to him in his study for more than two hours. Official Gao, Official Han and Official Cheng were waiting there even longer than that.

Diwu Qing Rou frowned slightly then leisurely ate his breakfast before going to his study.

This was Diwu Qing Rou's way. He always believed that no matter what great events occurred, one should never lose composure. Therefore, he would casually do what he had to do, and carefully plan what he had to plan. No matter what, he would not make a hasty decision.

If things were done hastily, there would be oversights.

And Diwu Qing Rou would never allow himself to make any mistakes.

Seeing Diwu Qing Rou enter the study, four people stood up and said in unison, "Minister!"

"Ah, sit down!" Diwu Qing Rou smiled and nodded. He walked toward his seat and slowly sat down. Then he said, "King level master Jing, what happened? Even you have lost your composure? After so many years, this is the first time I see you like this!"

The person facing him was an old person of more than sixty years; he seemed very scholarly at first glance. His face was pale and his hair was gray. His eyes were calm like some saintly, well-learned scholar. At a glance, no one would think that this kindly looking old man was the number one leader of Golden Horse Riders Department, ninth grade King level master Jing Meng Hun.

Jing Meng Hun smiled sadly and said, "We have unexpected news! I was in such a rush that I did not have time to prepare; I am

so worried that I lost my composure!”

“Huh? So worried you lost your composure? News from King level master Yin?” Diwu Qing Rou slowly brought up the cup of tea in front of him and gently blew on the tea leaves floating on the surface; he said softly, “What happened to Yin Wu Fa?”

A look of admiration immediately appeared on the faces of Han Bu Chu and the others. Diwu Qing Rou did not know what happened, but looking at their faces, he could clearly tell that something had happened to Yin Wu Fa. This keen sense and sharp wit was possessed by very few people.

“According to the news we received, Yin Wu Fa was severely injured, his life is in danger.” Jing Meng Hun took a deep breath. With a grave face, he said, “He battled with King of Hell Chu for a while, and they both lost!”

“King of Hell Chu? He battled with King level master Yin and they both lost?” Diwu Qing Rou’s countenance finally changed. He stopped blowing the tea and said solemnly, “How could King of Hell Chu have this much ability?”

Meanwhile, the other three looked puzzled; even Jing Meng Hun’s countenance had a troubled look.

King of Hell Chu might have been mysterious, but no one thought that he had the power to battle with Yin Wu Fa.

Yin Wu Fa was a sixth grade King level master after all.

“This note was written by Yin Wu Fa’s own hand.” Jing Meng Hun pulled out a piece of paper stained with blood. Only looking at this piece of paper was enough to imagine how serious Yin Wu Fa’s injuries were.

Instead of taking this paper, Diwu Qing Rou frowned and said, “Yin Wu Fa was severely injured, why did he bother to write this himself? Are his two Revered Martial Artists dead? Is there no one else with him?”

“No! It is just that our intelligence on King of Hell Chu is not congruent.” Jing Meng Hun continued helplessly, “We have all been fooled by King of Hell Chu. All the information on him is false!”

“All of it is false?” Diwu Qing Rou finally nodded. Han Bu Chu took that paper and brought it to Diwu Qing Rou’s hand.

“Eldest brother…” From those first words, it could be seen that this note was written by Yin Wu Fa for Jing Meng Hun.

“I am in Iron Cloud living on my last dying breath, but… the enemy is cunning; his tactics are hard to predict. It is hard to describe.” These few words were enough to make Diwu Qing Rou pensive.

“Official Chu is extremely cunning; everyone thinks that he is a youth and does not know what he really looks like.” Then Yin Wu Fa proceeded to carefully repeat everything Chu Yang told him about the appearance of the Hei Mo King level master.

“I finally know that those rumors can’t be trusted. King of Hell Chu is a Sword King. I went to Cloud Gate Inn and fought with him. We both lost; I was stabbed nine times, and Official Chu received eleven punches from me. All of his bones are broken and he is in critical condition. If you want to completely eliminate him, now is the best time!”

“There are more than ten Revered Martial Artists by Official Chu’s side. This massive strength is also not consistent with our intelligence.”

“The spy network in Iron Cloud is almost completely broken. King of Hell Chu has already dealt with seventeen people. If we don’t eliminate him now, there will be great misfortune!”

The content of Yin Wu Fa’s note made Diwu Qing Rou’s brows wrinkle tightly together! According to Yin Wu Fa, all the information they had obtained were like fantasies and could not be

trusted!

The information I have should not be false, but this note contains information that Yin Wu Fa traded for with his own life. What has happened?

King of Hell Chu is a King level master; moreover, a sixth grade King level master. This is too ridiculous!

“This is too ridiculous!” Diwu Qing Rou snorted and said, “Give me your views on this!”

Jing Meng Hun let out a dry cough and went first, “At first, I thought the same. But this blood letter in front of us is clearly not a ploy from King of Hell Chu. Moreover, King of Hell Chu did not know Third Brother’s strength.”

When these words were spoken, everyone nodded in agreement. If this letter was a forgery, the fact that it had Yin Wu Fa’s seal would mean that the enemies must have captured him to do this. Given Yin Wu Fa’s strength, he would be able to at least escape if he could not fight. Moreover, masters at this level, even without any hope left, would choose death over being captured.

Even an Emperor level master who could kill a King level master easily would have little chance of capturing one alive.

“I believe…” Gao Sheng coughed and said, “This letter of blood, there are many things here that we need to analyze…”

“For example, here! We know that King of Hell Chu created a web of confusion, but some things we know are true. Chu Yang did join with Du Shi Qing’s group after leaving Beyond the Heavens Sect. Plus, he had met Tie Bu Tian outside of Iron Cloud Citadel. And after Tie Bu Tian returned, he immediately sent people to search for Chu Yang.”

“With these, we have investigated and verified with more than thirty people. They have all verified this; even Fire Saber Great Master Gao Wei Cheng has also verified this.”

“After Chu Yang entered Iron Cloud Citadel, Tie Bu Tian sent Wu Qian Qian of Beyond the Heavens Sect to come and assist him. After that, Chu Yang disappeared from Iron Cloud Citadel, and Bu Tian Pavilion has one Minister Chu. From this, we could reason that King of Hell Chu is Chu Yang! This should not be wrong!”

When Jing Meng Hun heard this, his face became crestfallen. Are you saying my martial brother risked his life to give false information?

But Gao Sheng’s discussion turned as he said, “But the information sent by King level master Yin is not fake. This information was obtained at the risk of his life; there is no doubting this!”

“Therefore, I venture to ask that perhaps Bu Tian Pavilion has two ministers?” Gao Sheng said mused, “Perhaps Chu Yang is potentially Tie Bu Tian’s decoy? And the real King of Hell Chu also has the Chu surname?”

“You mean… When Tie Bu Tian selected a master, Chu Yang happened to appear at the same time. So Tie Bu Tian used that opportunity to set up his trap?” Cheng Yun He frowned.

“He might not have necessarily intended to set up a web of confusion; this Chu Yang probably possessed some ability… resourcefulness, intelligence or pedigree… In short, Tie Bu Tian might have another Minister to supplement some lacking factors in the other person…” Gao Sheng slowly continued, “Perhaps by using such an explanation, we can make sense of this contradiction.”

“That Tie Bu Tian is probably not that thorough!” Han Bu Chu sneered, “If there is indeed two ministers, then we cannot trust any of the information.”

“I think so, too.” Cheng Yun He nodded and said, “Currently… Bu Tian Pavilion only has one minister, and it is not Chu Yang. I believe this is true!”

The three spoke their opinions and debated endlessly.

Diwu Qing Rou and Jing Meng Hun quietly sat and listened. Jing Meng Hun was feeling as if his head was becoming unraveled by this noisy gang of scholars.

And Diwu Qing Rou was also frowning. His initial trap for King of Hell Chu had become slightly shaken. After all, Yin Wu Fa was injured in a public fight. This much was true!

How did this happen?

For the first time in his life, Diwu Qing Rou felt that there was a slight disarray in his mind. Listening to his three subordinates arguing in front of him, he wondered how he would sort out this mess.

“Minister, no matter who that King of Hell Chu is, Third brother is in desperate need of support. We must immediately send people to rescue Third brother. With his serious injuries, if we don’t rescue him in time, I am afraid…” Jing Meng Hun said pensively.

These words of Jing Meng Hun made Diwu Qing Rou’s eyes brighten, “Yes, what we have heard could be fake; seeing is believing!”

Words may not be true but seeing is believing! Gao Sheng and the others were so preoccupied that they were unable to uptake anything else.

“Are the three of you done with your plans?” Diwu Qing Rou recovered his calm countenance.

“Yes!” Gao Sheng had already prepared some good plans and readily handed them over to Diwu Qing Rou.

“Ah, let’s go with plan number two!” Diwu Qing Rou took a quick glance, then quickly made a decision, “These people must be extremely careful! First, we must save Number One. Second, we must save King level master Yin and bring him safely back to Great Zhao. Third, verify the information about King of Hell Chu!”

“The first and second items are not difficult; the last one is!” Diwu Qing Rou continued, “For now, regardless of whether that King level master is King of Hell Chu or not, he is still seriously injured. We can assume that there are no more high level masters in Iron Cloud. With a little care, all these tasks could be done without difficulties.”

Diwu Qing Rou then looked up the heavens and said, “No matter who he is, the most important thing now is to rescue our people. As for King of Hell Chu, if we can’t verify the information, we still don’t need to make a move.” He grunted coldly and continued, “If King of Hell Chu or Tie Bu Tian manages to keep taking advantage the situation like this and you people keep doing things simply like this, there is a great chance that our Golden Horse Riders Department will attract an exceptionally powerful opponent!”

Chapter 150: Diwu Qing Rou's deduction

Jing Meng Hun got a chill and immediately nodded. Earlier he had planned to rescue Third Brother no matter what, and, at the same time, assassinate King of Hell Chu as vengeance for Third Brother. But Diwu Qing Rou's words had made him abandon that thought!

"Under normal circumstances, this must be done. But this is not a normal circumstance; we do not need to further complicate this matter!" Diwu Qing Rou smiled and continued, "These types of killing someone with a borrowed knife or adorning a tree with borrowed flowers methods are already too common for us as well as our opponents!"

When he got to this point, Diwu Qing Rou suddenly hesitated, and quickly said, "That's right..., if..."

Then he immediately stood up and took a few steps while frowning and muttering, "Killing with borrow knife, adorning a tree with borrowed flowers..."

He muttered a few more times as if he was about to discover something. Then he yelled out all of a sudden, "Yes, that must be it!"

"If that's the case... then the key moment was when Yin Wu Fa caught that youth!" Diwu Qing Rou's hands tightened; his eyes flamed up, then he sighed, "I hope that I am wrong; if I am not mistaken, then Yin Wu Fa had allowed an opportunity of a lifetime to slip through his fingers!"

"An opportunity of a lifetime?" Gao Sheng quickly understood and replied, "You mean... that youth that King level master Yin caught..."

"That youth... is probably King of Hell Chu!" Diwu Qing Rou's countenance darkened as he replied slowly.

His words silenced the room. Each person's eyes were filled with shock. Even Diwu Qing Rou, after saying these words, was stunned by his own deduction.

"Let us make this assumption: This incident was a result of him acting on the fly!!! Then what kind of person would be capable of such strategy? But if it is indeed the case that the youth is really King of Hell Chu, then everything can be easily dealt with." Diwu Qing Rou was talking when he suddenly turned to Gao Sheng and said, "Young master Gao, you once said that all of the descendants of Middle Three Heavens have went out to train, correct? If some of them have come to Great Zhao then there might be some in Iron Cloud as well!"

Diwu Qing Rou had always called Gao Sheng by his full name, but this time, he uses the words "Young master Gao." And yet, Gao Sheng just calmly nodded.

"If that is the case, Yin Wu Fa was taken by King of Hell Chu's scheme. We have been framed, and this calamity is not minor at all!"

Diwu Qing Rou sighed, "I wonder where that King level master that fought with King level master Yin is from. What clan does he belong to?"

Around him, the four people were taken aback by this information; their eyes widened and their minds went blank. Even the ninth grade King level master felt as if his head was hit by lightning. If the situation was indeed like that, then it would be the biggest joke under the heavens. He caught King of Hell Chu and allowed him to escape? And then there is the possibility that he provoked a powerful enemy from a great clan, too?

Is King of Hell Chu that cunning?

"We should not delay this urgent matter; not only will we rescue people, we must increase manpower!" Diwu Qing Rou turned to Jing Meng Hun and said, "King level master Jing, you must take

care of this, and do not act rashly. King level master Kong should bring with him a few Command Horse Riders with him!”

Diwu Qing Rou saw that Jing Meng Hun wanted to say something and immediately waved his hand dismissively, “The fourth King level master cannot do this! He and Yin Wu Fa are biological brothers; if he goes, there will more chaos. The battle was cause by a misunderstanding; if the two sides could talk things over then we can surely turn foes into friends. But if there is more chaos, things might become irreparable!

Jing Meng Hun sighed. Fourth King level master Yin Wu Tian had already gave him trouble after hearing the news. No matter what, he would still want to go and save his eldest brother himself. Even more so, he wanted to kill that King of Hell Chu for revenge. But with Diwu Qing Rou, before he could speak a word, this idea had been tossed aside.

“This time, besides investigating and rescuing people, we also have to explain this misunderstanding to that King level master!” Diwu Qing Rou continued slowly, “While this is just my deduction, I don’t think it’s wrong. Because of this, we must send someone skilled; the second King level master is the most suitable person!” Diwu Qing Rou turned to the other three and said, “This plan could be considered the biggest plan ever; we need someone to control the entire situation to make sure it is successful. Between the two of you, who wants to give this a go?”

He looked at three people but said “two of you.” Clearly, Gao Sheng was excluded.

“Minister, let me go…”

Before Gao Sheng could finish, Diwu Qing Rou interrupted him, “Gao Sheng, you cannot go! If you go, wouldn’t all your peers go as well?”

Then he continued, “They are my ace cards; they can’t be easily used like that. Plus, if you go and the mission happens to get

exposed, all of the clans opposed to yours would immediately join force with Tie Bu Tian. This is extremely damaging for us!”

“Iron Cloud is currently weak, but if they gain more strength, they’ll fight and harm my grand design!” Diwu Qing Rou said slowly, “I only want one of you two to go!”

“Minister, how about me?” Cheng Yun He asked.

“If you go, what would you do?” Diwu Qing Rou asked.

“I would make rescuing our people the primary cause and keep losses to a minimum. We would immediately retreat after our objective is achieved! Plans against King of Hell Chu have already become a quagmire. If it cannot be dealt with, I would give it up!” Cheng Yun He replied, “On the other hand, if things are as you deduced, I will think of all possible means to eliminate this misunderstanding at all costs!”

“Good. I will give you this task!” Diwu Qing Rou said, “You should work with King level master Kong; I will feel more assured if you do. Your strategy is almost perfect, but you must remember, if you have a good opportunity, then take action! However, before that, you must never let King level master Kong act on his own accord! You must carefully discuss every move with him beforehand!”

Diwu Qing Rou turned and looked at Jing Meng Hun, “You must repeats these words to King level master Kong!”

Jing Meng Hun nodded and replied right away, “You can rest assured; Second Brother is not so reckless!”

“Yes!” Cheng Yun He respectfully said, as he carefully made a mental note of all of Diwu Qing Rou’s words.

“Opportunities are always there, but they pass by in a flash. If you want to grab hold of them, you must be courageous, keen, and intelligent!” Diwu Qing Rou added, “And at this moment, you must remain steady. If you can’t be, don’t force it!”

Diwu Qing Rou continued, “This trip is not like before! If you happen to fight a battle of wits with King of Hell Chu, you should notify me immediately if you could! If you are in a rush, you must carefully think before you act! Even if we have to suffer some losses, you must return to Great Zhao safely! Got it?”

Han Bu Chu was shocked. All these years, this was the first time he saw Diwu Qing Rou so grave when sending a subordinate on a mission. He carefully repeated instructions many times. Plus, this time, he sent someone famous for being calm like Cheng Yun He. It seemed that Diwu Qing Rou really saw King of Hell Chu as his archenemy!

“This should not be delayed. After you have picked out your candidates, leave right away!” Diwu Qing Rou’s gaze became cold as he ordered, “Before you leave, take these three pieces of Jade Spirit Ginseng in case of emergency!”

Jade Spirit Ginseng – one of the nine great legendary herbs in the world. Diwu Qing Rou only had one root. Whether it was an external or internal injury, as long as the person was still alive, eating a piece would save their life within half a day! With its help, a person could completely recover within a month. Diwu Qing Rou had valued this as much as his own life. Now that he had pulled out three pieces because of Yin Wu Fa, it could be seen that Diwu Qing Rou had given his best efforts.

With these three pieces of Jade Spirit Ginseng, two were clearly for Yin Wu Fa and Tang Xin Sheng. His appreciation for Yin Wu Fa and Tang Xin Sheng could be seen by everyone. As for the third piece, it was a peacemaking gift from Diwu Qing Rou to the King level master that fought with Yin Wu Fa, and his clan.

There was also Meng Hun Solution, a strange medicine invented by Jing Meng Hun. Meng Hun Solution could make a mortally wounded person fall into a latent sleep, and keep them alive for some set time period. While it could not be as long as a month, it was enough time to save the person life!

“Thank you, minister!” Jing Meng Hun said confidently. If Diwu Qing Rou took out Jade Spirit Ginseng, then Yin Wu Fa’s life could easily be saved! Moreover, his cultivation could be preserved as well.

“If there is nothing else, return and prepare to leave!” Diwu Qing Rou said softly without a trace of worry on his face. It was as if everything had been carefully planned by him. Seeing that, everyone was extremely confident; they thought that their minister’s certainty must mean their grand scheme would be successful.

What no one knew was that at this moment, Diwu Qing Rou was sighing silently to himself: Good for one King of Hell Chu. You have once again forced me to make a decision! Not only do I have to act according to your plans, I also have to accept the risk of losses. I am clearly more powerful than you, but under such urgent situation, I can only let things follow your plans! If there is ever a day when you and I meet face to face in battle... how would you be?

“Gao Sheng, will you play a game of chess with me?” Diwu Qing Rou smiled and asked.

“Minister, if you want to, I would be happy to comply!” Gao Sheng laughed.

“If the minister and Brother Gao are playing chess, then I shall be the referee! Han Bu Chu smiled happily, “When noon comes, I will get a nice meal!”

All three broke out a big laugh.

Two hours later, a group nineteen riders shot out of the northern gate of Great Zhao’s capital. They rode like the wind, and quickly disappeared. A little later, a convoy also went quickly out of the northern gate.

Chapter 151: Studious Minister Chu

Sitting in the carriage was Cheng Yun He. Leaving the city's gate, his emotions suddenly surged up. He immediately stuck out his head and looked at the northern gate of the majestic city slowly shrinking from his sight. He thought about his home there; his parents, wife and children were all there. For many generations, his family had been people of Great Zhao. He was born and grew up in this capital; all in all, he had been there for more than forty years.

He suddenly remembered a phrase: born here, grow up here, and die here.

He smiled bitterly and thought: Living here does not mean growing up here. Growing up here does not mean dying here! These thoughts seemed to be what he was telling himself. He had the sense that he might not be able to die in this Great Zhao.

A great man leaves his life in the battle field; who cares about where he would be buried?

He could not help but recite these verses:

"Going through thousands of miles of golden sand

After forty years, there is no minding death.

Sad autumn winds have turned all the hair white.

Endless troubles have made the heart colder."

After reciting, he did not think it was too good; it just seemed like something he said at the moment. Grinning, he thought: Why is the last verse "made the heart colder?" I was given a great responsibility by the minister. This journey is my chance to make a mark and advance.

He shook his head and sat back in the carriage, not bothering to write down those verses.

When Cheng Yun He left, it was late autumn. Leaves fell all over the ground as the autumn winds gently blew under the gloomy sky.Thick layers of dark clouds hanging above made the heart feel a heavy burden.

****

In Iron Cloud Citadel, Chu Yang had finished three challenges. Returning to Bu Tian Pavilion, he picked up a book and started reading.

Wu Qian Qian frowned in puzzlement as she looked at the tall pile of books on Chu Yang's desk.

When did our Minister Chu become so studious and start reading so diligently? This kind of focus without resting, eating or sleeping put to shame to all the scholars who studied hard to become officials!

But...

If our Minister Chu was reading strategies, arts of war, or something similar like the history of the continent, then Wu Qian Qian would not have found it so strange.

But this guy was reading books that the scholars would consider inferior! There was "Famous Love Stories" and some other fictional legends. Plus, he also read some absurd supernatural fantasies!

Those stories were not long; they were just stories that authors wrote for fun during their free time. They had no meaning and were probably used to coax children...

This was really amusing!

Minister Chu intensely looked at the book; his mind seemed to be completely engrossed in it. His mouth also muttered the words as if trying to memorize them.

This left Wu Qian Qian speechless...

The worst part was that Minister Chu seemed to be addicted. He even laughed idiotically every now and then!

This was a person wearing a black outfit and a horrifying mask; this person in a powerful position was reading a childish book and even laughed once in a while!

Forget about witnessing it, just thinking about it was enough to give people goosebumps.

Wu Qian Qian was getting wave after wave of goosebumps. As for Minister Chu, he continued to giggle like a fool. The most undignified thing was his mind often wandered off, and his eyes had just a blank stare. Following that would be some glistening drool as he seemed to be dreaming about some distant thing...

Reading books to the point the spirit left the body... children's books... this must be some incredible spiritual state!

Wu Qian Qian silently lamented: When will this long day pass?

As she was doing paperwork, a creepy, wanton laughter rose up from behind her. If Wu Qian Qian did not have a sense of humor and patience, she would have smacked King of Hell Chu's face with that book. Then she would have splashed the tea on his face and pointed him to the door!

Wu Qian Qian was even more speechless with the origin of these books. That King of Hell Chu abused his power and sent his powerful subordinates everywhere to search for them. Sending assassins to hunt for children's books, our King of Hell Chu was especially skilled. Each one must bring back at least twenty! Can't hold them? You will be greeted with corporal punishment!

Each time she thought about these fierce guys looking so helpless and pitiful as they carried piles of children's books in, Wu Qian Qian almost stopped breathing from trying to hold down the urge to laugh.

That emotion peaked when she saw Hall Leader Cheng carry a

stack of books in.

An old man with a wrinkly face gloomily held a stack of children's books.

Wu Qian Qian laughed like crazy!

Once, when Minister Chu was completely engrossed, the prince came to visit. He came in but Chu Yang was still calmly reading. Prince Tie Bu Tian's mouth widened in surprise.

After that, the prince asked something that made Wu Qian Qian laugh uncontrollably every time she thought about it, "Ah, is Minister Chu improving his intellect?"

As the leader of an intelligence network, a supervisor of an assassin group, and the minister of a spy organization, his actions left people at a loss...

The worst of it all was the fact that he would come in early each morning saying sadly, "I forgot that story!"

Wu Qian Qian was speechless!

What kind of person was this?

The books that Chu Yang already read, Wu Qian Qian calculated that they would fill up a few large chests!

Even more especially excessive was that this guy did not only just like children's books, he also liked children's toys! And he did not like toys for boys, he liked toys for girls!

She even witnessed this guy holding a doll with dreamy eyes saying, "I must bring it back tonight!"

Wu Qian Qian's daily nightmare was each time Minister Chu was getting ready to leave. He would say one sentence to her, "Elder martial sister, if you have free time, go out and buy me a toy!"

Each time she heard this, Wu Qian Qian practically went into convulsions.

The only thing she could be proud of was:

Have any of you witnessed King of Hell Chu laugh like an idiot while reading a book? I am the only one!

Have any of you witnessed King of Hell Chu looking dreamily at a girl's toy? I am also the only one!

While Wu Qian Qian never spoke these words, she did have these eye-opening experiences!

"Minister, someone wants to see you!" Cheng Zi Ang's voice rang out. He sounded like he just got his tooth pulled out, not loud like normal.

They should know what their Minister Chu was doing not to asking like that!

"Who? I am busy!" While Minister Chu was 'researching and studying hard', he did not have any patience.

"Sir, the people that came the other day!" Cheng Zi Ang's face was now wrinkly like a bitter gourd. If I could turn him down, I would have done it already. But you can't turn down this person! He is from the Hei Mo Clan, and this one is a King level master!

"The people from the other day?" Chu Yang asked skeptically.

An icy voice suddenly rang out, "Minister Chu, you sure are big!"

Before the statement ended, a person in black appeared at the doorway. His movement was extremely fast like that of ghosts and demons.

Chu Yang looked up right away, and exclaimed in surprise, "Haha, I thought it was someone else. It's you, sir! Please sit! Please sit! No wonder a magpie was singing at the door early this morning; it's because of your arrival! Qian Qian, bring tea! The best one! Quickly get my best tea!"

Such intimate and excited words made the Hei Mo Saber King feel as if he was meeting family that he had not seen in many years.

After he finished talking, Minister Chu quickly moved from his spot and stepped out to greet his guest.

The Hei Mo Saber King grunted and was a about to say something when he caught a glance of the children's book in King of Hell Chu that was being flipped open by the wind.

This leader of Bu Tian Pavilion was clearly read a book called "The Story of the Water Buffalo and the Mean Dog." His eyes shifted to the desk, and saw many books of the same kind. There were "The Secret of in the Palace," "The Love Story of the Three-Headed Toad and the Two-Legged Horse," and "Snow White and the Seven Dwarfs" as well!

The Saber King felt as if he was going crazy. Within moments, he two eyes glared at Minister Chu. Goosebumps could be seen on the back of his hands!

Wu Qian Qian stood on the side with her head down in shame for her leader while trying to hold down her laugher.

"Ah... ahem! Cough, cough..." Minister Chu was slightly ashamed and yelled out to cover up, "Qian Qian, you're still not putting your books away? How does it look letting our guest see this?"

Then he casually looked at the Hei Mo Saber King, "Funny! Cough... cough. All young ladies are like that! Haha..."

Wu Qian Qian paled from anger. How did they become my books? If you want to keep your dignity, at least don't frame this on me! But she could only glare at King of Hell Chu. While this eldest miss was annoyed, she did not dare say it; she quietly swallowed her anger and started to put away "her books."

The Hei Mo Saber King's mouth became crooked as he sat down. He silently cursed this shameless guy: Clearly these books are on your side. There is even one in your hand, and you blame it on somebody's daughter! But he laughed and replied, "It's nothing!

All little girls love those books…”

When he said these words, the Saber King’s face also reddened. Little girls were supposed to be seven or eight years old; the little girl in front of him was seventeen or eighteen already!

But today, he came asking for a favor, so he had to say some nice words!

“Swoosh… swoosh” Wu Qian Qian tossed all the books into a chest. She carried the chest toward Minister Chu and said, “Minister, sir, please give me the book in your hand. It’s my book; please return it to me! You have used it to fan enough already!”

“Ack…” Chu Yang had finally realized that he was still holding one in his hand and quickly tossed it into the chest Wu Qian Qian was holding. He laughed loudly, “It is too hot!”

The Hei Mo Saber King’s mouth twitched as he thought: Motherf*! It is the end of autumn. All the leaves have fallen, and snow is about to come down. You are still fanning yourself; you must have really bad health!

[TLN: I can only hope that Mo Qing Wu leaves quickly, so that our MC can regain some of his dignity.]

Chapter 152: Coming right to the door to get hustled

Wu Qian Qian pouted as she carried the chest out leaving the two alone in the room. Minister Chu graciously invited the Hei Mo Saber King to sit, and then took it upon himself to pour a cup of hot tea for his guest and said warmly, “Senior, you must have a lot of spare time to come and see me. Haha, I am really flattered by your attention!”

After his embarrassment, Minister Chu seemed to suddenly be in the mood to come up with an impromptu poem like real scholars. When he saw the Saber King start glaring at him, Minister Chu stopped, let out two dry coughs and asked, “The meaning of this poem is: if a senior comes to visit then would he not surely drink a cup of tea?”

“I... I understand!” This Saber King was going mad with anger. Do you think I am illiterate?

This guy is brazenly shameless! Earlier he was fanning and complaining it was hot; now he wants it to snow...

Can this kind of thing be called poetry? It can’t even compare to a dog’s fart...

Since he came in here, the Saber King’s state of mind had shifted from surprise to contempt; and now he was about to go crazy... The Saber King lifted the tea cup and took a big gulp without paying any attention to whether it was good or not. Currently, he had been so spun around by Chu Yang that he forgot his purpose for coming here...

“You see, senior, this tea is truly good tea... This tea was picked from the peak of Black Mountain. After it was picked, twenty eight young ladies held it in their mouths and then dried it on their breasts. From beginning to end, they never touched any dust! This

is why it is also called ‘Black Mountain Lady Tea!’” Our scholarly Minister Chu was very pleased and said excitedly, “The best part is that this tea is not mine!”

“Not yours?” The Saber King had just remembered why he came, and he forgot once again.

“It’s true!” Chu Yang smiled with satisfaction. He moved a little closer and said softly, “Last time I came to the prince’s study, I smelled the aroma of this tea. As I was walking out, I saw a box of tea on the shelf. I immediately… Ha… ha…” Minister Chu’s eyes shifted back and forth, and he made a signal for the other person to keep his secret. With a wink, he said, “I just conveniently took it…”

“Ah… uh…” The Hei Mo Saber King was dumbfounded and tongue-tied; three black lines appeared on his forehead.

“That’s why this tea is very hard to come by! It is because you are here that I bring it out; I would never give it to ordinary people!” Minister Chu said affectionately, “Senior, after you drink this did you sense the aromas of the mountains and rivers, of the earthly scenery, of misty clouds, and of heavenly fragrance?… Of course, haha… there is also the natural sense of a woman along with a little… haha… milk flavor.”

“Ah… I am thankful for your generosity!” Looking at a guy wearing a ferocious mask and laughing pervertedly, this Saber King got goosebumps all over. He found himself stammering and felt as if he was sitting on pins and needles.

Even when I face the clan leader, I don’t feel so anxious like this! This punk in front of me is clearly a sexual deviant, the kind that would not spare young or old, males or females!

This Saber King suddenly discovered that talking to Minister Chu was like being tortured! He asked himself if he came to the wrong place today.

“Senior, please have some tea!” Minister Chu continued his invitation, and the Saber King drank another cup.

“Please... luck runs in threes. You have to drink another cup!” The Saber King glared as he gulped it down.

“Four cups is good fortune....” The Saber King’s face grew dark, and he drank yet another.

“Five, five, twenty-five, please...” The Saber King’s veins started to bulge.

“Six cups is good fortune...”

“I drank for good fortune already!” The Saber King was finally unable to bear it any longer, “Minister Chu, I came here today to ask you a favor!”

“Senior, don’t say that! You just need to say it; I will definitely give it my all!” Chu Yang laughed a hearty and friendly laugh, “Is there any differentiation between us?”

The Saber King was so disturbed, he practically ran right out of there!

Can you please not talk in such an intimate way? What relationship do I have with you?

The Saber King took a deep breath and gathered his civility. He used all of his strength to calm himself down as he slowly breathed out, “A day before yesterday, there was a battle of two King level masters in the city. Such an event surely did not escape Minister Chu’s eyes.”

Speaking of official business, Chu Yang also became seriously and replied, “Of course, this little official has heard of this big event. Your friend was seriously injured. I even sent over some herbal medicines to help. It was modest, but it was all of my resources!”

“Thank you, Minister Chu!” The Saber King continued, “The life of my brother is no longer in danger. But the culprit is still at large.

With my resources, finding a person inside Iron Cloud Citadel is no different from finding a needle at the bottom of the sea! However, if Minister Chu gives me a hand, it would be a different story!”

Chu Yang slightly frowned and did not answer right away.

When the Saber King came, Chu Yang already knew his intentions. But helping them for nothing was too much of a loss in Chu Yang’s opinion. Moreover, the ones responsible for destroying Qing Wu’s life was this Hei Mo Saber Sword King Pair. How could Chu Yang be willing to help these two now?

However, because of his grand plan and his current situation, he had no other choice. Minister Chu was greatly bothered, so he would not allow the Saber King to get off easily. This was the reason why Chu Yang had been talking nonsensically and changing topics constantly since that Saber King arrived.

Of course, the major reason for Chu Yang’s rambling about stealing the tea was because he was worried. When the Saber King saw so many children’s books for girls like that, could he think about Mo Qing Wu? If he thought about Mo Qing Wu, would that not expose my cover?

Therefore, the first thing Minister Chu did was create a web of confusion. Even if you start developing some suspicions, I will have you so turned around, you will be dizzy!

However, it seemed that the brain of this Saber King was significantly lacking compared to Diwu Qing Rou and Tie Bu Tian. He only became a little impatient and never had any suspicions about little miss!

Chu Yang let out an internal sigh of relief. But at the same time, he was also irritated. Why did I have to worry so much about this type of idiot? I wasted half a day of saliva for nothing...

Now that they were talking about official business, Chu Yang would naturally have to come up with a good plan to reap the most

benefits.

The Saber King was currently also very annoyed. If he had another choice, why would he bother with the shame of asking for help from a leader of an intelligence organization of some secular state? He had really lost face!

The thing was, after the Sword King was injured, Chu Yang had sent a large number of items for healing injuries. The Saber King was out at the time these incredibly helpful items were received. After searching for an entire day without finding the enemy, the Saber King came back and thought of Bu Tian Pavilion.

If Chu Yang did not send people with the medicines, the Saber King would never have thought about this place. Now that he had no other way, he found his way here to ask for help!

No matter what he had to find the person responsible for his martial brother's injuries and take revenge! That was the only way he could vent the hatred inside him!

What he did not know was that Minister Chu sent the medicines over for the very purpose of waiting for the Saber King to come to his door. Then, he could paddle him once. Now that he was here, Minister Chu's scheme had succeeded. So how could Chu Yang be kind to him?

"This... if we are to do this... it is not difficult..." Chu Yang took a deep breath and frowned.

This is great... the enemy comes asking for my help to kill my other enemy. He even asks politely as if just waiting to be hustled. This is too good!!!

"Huh? Minister Chu, please tell me what you have to say!"

"Senior, what is your name? I don't know how to address you; it's too disrespectful!" Chu Yang asked cautiously.

"I... we are people of the Hei Mo clan. I am Soft Cloud Saber King; you can call me Soft Cloud or senior. As for surname..." An

icy light shot out from his eyes as he replied softly, “I have not used a surname in a long time!”

Chu Yang knew this very well so he nodded. Hei Mo clan was a clan in Middle Three Heavens; Chu Yang already knew this. He also knew that Hei Mo clan was not a family but more like a sect or some large organization. All those who joined them did not get their own name but only a title.

The ranking in the clan was based on strength. The most powerful became the clan leader; only that person can be call Hei Mo!

“Since senior said so, I will respectfully oblige!” Then Chu Yang frowned and said, “If it is just me, I would naturally help you in this. In fact, right after that great battle of two kings, I had already sent people to gather information!”

“But there is one thing I am concerned about. Your clan is powerful so you naturally do not pay attention to this! But we are only common officials; even the royal family or the generals are just bugs in the eyes of you powerful people. If I help you... how would we fight if they come back to take revenge?”

After lamenting, Chu Yang’s voice became very sincere as he said frankly, “You have given me a great opportunity in coming here today. How could I not know this? But, this is also something extremely dangerous!!!”

“Opportunity? Dangerous?” The Saber King rubbed his mustache; his eyes brightened.

When he came here today, he initially just wanted to get some help. How could he plan to give any opportunity? But after hearing Chu Yang talk, it became clear to him. For Iron Cloud, helping him deal with the Mo clan was an extremely dangerous thing. It seems that I cannot afford to not offer a great payment!

“Hey...” While the Saber King was contemplating, Chu Yang

sighed as he sat on the opposite side, “The Sword King was good to me. That day, what the Sword King told me is something that still rings in my heart. A kind senior like that is suddenly attacked by a lowly scoundrel; it hurts me greatly!”

The Saber King let out two dry coughs; there was a trace of pink on his old face.

A person who killed without blinking, and pulled tendons without so much as a frown like the Sword King was actually looked upon by Minister Chu as a “kind senior?” These words... can these words be said?

“A person capable of going head to head with your clan would surely have powerful backing...” Chu Yang lamented. His eyes started to heat up as he looked at the Saber King.

They implied to the Saber King that: While I can do this... doing this... this should bring something good for me! Now I will see if you people can name a price that will move me!

“Tell me; what would it take for you to agree to find that person for me?” The Saber King muttered.

After he asked, he finished the rest of the tea in his cup in one breath. Chewing a few times the “Black Mountain Lady Tea” King of Hell Chu had praised up to the sky. He truly did not taste anything.

What flavor of fragrant tongue or breast milk!

Chapter 153: Set the net and wait for fish

“This is hard to say...” Chu Yang said hesitantly, “There are hundreds of thousands of people in this Iron Cloud Citadel; there are five major areas in it. The aristocratic area is easy to search, the slums are not so easy. Even if a thousand people hid in there, they would be like fish in an ocean and tigers in a deep forest. If we want to find him... I am afraid we will have to mobilize the entire force of the citadel. All of the soldiers and civilians would have to join in the search; we would have to do a complete investigation. The efforts and resources we will have to spend would be enormous...”

“If you can find this guy, I will represent the Hei Mo clan in promising one favor!” The Saber King hastily cut him off. If he had allowed Minister Chu to continue, then the entire Hei Mo clan would surely have to toil and still not be able to pay off this debt...

“Hey, how can senior say this? I am not the type of person that helps people in hope of repayment.” Chu Yang replied unhappily, “Your words have really undervalued me!”

The Saber King angrily thought: You are clearly opening your big mouth waiting to be fed, and you are still saying you don’t need repayment...

King of Hell Chu’s eyes shifted and the conversation took a turn. His countenance immediately became pensive, “However, Iron Cloud is currently dealing with enemies on the inside and out; the situation is precarious. Golden Horse Riders Department of Great Zhao is constantly eyeing our Bu Tian Pavilion. Moreover, they also have King level leaders. This is too difficult...”

“You want me to help you deal with Golden Horse Riders Department?” The Saber King was shocked, “I can’t do this!” He was both annoyed and troubled.This punk’s statements went from heroic and moral to complaining.

“No, no! Not like that!” Chu Yang replied astutely, “Very soon, Golden Horse Riders Department will surely make their move against our Bu Tian Pavilion. Not many will come, probably only a dozen people or so. Senior, you only need to help me kill these guys.”

“Only a dozen people? Well, that’s not too many!” The Saber King thought for a moment and found it feasible. Just killing a dozen secular officials or ordinary martial masters in exchange for the death of one Mo clan King level master... This deal was worth it.

“You agree, then?” Minister Chu struck quickly; he needed to be certain of this.

“Uh, I agree!” The Saber King thought for a while and finally agreed.

“Senior, you are a great man! You have saved thousands of people from boiling oil, and turned the tide of a dangerous situation. Your righteousness reaches the heavens, and your chivalry puts me in awe! Millions of people in Iron Cloud are thankful for your great deed!” Minister Chu was so touched, there were tears in his eyes... Motherf*... I finally managed to solve the problem that I have been worrying about for so long!

“Ah, rest assured! While we are not able to help you deal with the entire Golden Horse Riders Department, I can promise you that the people they send here will not be able to return! If one comes, one will die; if two comes, a pair will die!” The Saber King said imposingly.

Chu Yang laughed and replied, “Yes! Your greatness is out of this world. Even if Golden Horse Riders Department sent a few hundred people that will only give them more ancestral tablets!”

“A few hundred people? Didn’t you just say a dozen people?” The Saber King frowned.

“This lowly official meant to say… this group of people…” Chu Yang sighed, “Who knows if there would be one, ten or a hundred people… This is hard to figure out…”

The Saber King was furious! This punk just said at most there would be a dozen people. And within the blink of an eye, they got multiplied a dozen times from his very own mouth. Even worse, he’s not even sure how many there would be.

Motherf*, is this even a human mouth? He talked up and down; he could say anything. First, it was black, and now it is white…

No wonder he managed to become an official at such a young age, a Minister even. Damn, with just his mouth alone, he could become the Prime Minister!

Leaving Bu Tian Pavilion, the Saber King looked as if he was trying to escape! His countenance was completely pale!

After this deal, I will sever all ties with this King of Hell Chu! He is too much of a hustler!

Everything Minister Chu said seemed reasonable and legitimate! First, he placed me on a high pedestal as a hero and a savior; his praises blew me right into a fog. A little later, I discovered that he was actually praising himself.

I was supposed to do him one favor. But after all the back and forth, I somehow ended up doing him a few favors!

Especially those last words: “… Senior, you can rest assured! While I might have few people and weak strength, for you, I will risk my own head, shed blood, climb a mountain of sabers, and walk into a sea of fire. I will not relent even if I get stabbed by swords and slashed by sabers! Is there any need for reward? Is there any need for a conditional exchange? These words will not only belittle me, but also insult you, senior! Senior, don’t you think I am right? We have just met each other, but I feel as if I have known you already. My only regret is we met too late.

Between the two of us… is there really need for differentiation…”

Just thinking about King of Hell Chu’s talk of being good friends made the Saber King feel as if his body was convulsing. This is still not a conditional exchange?

In the end, King of Hell Chu added something that made the Saber King run for his life, “…Yes, there is one other thing that had been troubling me for a long time…”

Before he could finish, the Saber King stood up and bid farewell… Motherf*, you have already told me seven or eight things that have been troubling you, and I have agreed to all of them. Now, you have more… Are you going to let me live in peace?

Chu Yang finally let out a sigh of relief.

Done!

However, this situation was not over! There were a few things to follow up on.

Since such a large piece of meat fell from the sky, he caught it, naturally.

After that, Chu Yang immediately went to the prison. It was tightly guarded and the security was stricter than it had ever been since the founding of Iron Cloud Nation! But Chu Yang still felt it was not enough.

Frowning as he walked in, Chu Yang looked at a few of the traps they had set up and his face turned purple. He grabbed the people in charge of this place and started scolding them, “You call this a trap? Are you trapping birds and mice?”

He scolded the Revered Martial Artists until they were grinding their teeth, and veins were popping up on their foreheads.

In the eyes of King of Hell Chu, these traps could be seen at a glance and could not fool anyone. Plus, their strength was too weak; they could not give a master any difficulties… In short, there

were flaws everywhere.

One guy amongst them was a person borrowed from the prince's manor; he actually spoke up, "Our arrangements are not good, why don't you show us how it's done? You don't do anything; anyone can talk!"

Chu Yang stared at him icily and replied, "Watch this!"

True to his words, Minister Chu fixed the traps by himself. He got rid of the old cover ups, but still kept the blades under them in place. Then he covered them with a highly toxic poison, and poured water on top, only showing a small tip of the blade. He even mixed sleeping drugs in the water. After that, he took a few branches and stripped some leaves. He tossed them to make them look like fallen leaves. He also tossed some dust to create a light covering on top. He gently placed his foot on top to create a faint footprint...

After that he placed a few traps on top, ensuring that anyone who stepped on the traps would cause the innocuous-looking ceiling to break and drop a piece down. Plus, there was ecstasy powder inside... After arranging all sorts of things, he still thought it was not enough, and placed a dozen powerful automatic crossbows.

East, west, south, and north, all four directions also had increasingly cruel designs. In short, it was essentially the collection of every vicious design in history.

The strangest thing was, there was aphrodisiac powder sprinkled everywhere...

According to Minister Chu's explanation: Once the cultivation level had reached Revered Martial Artist, most of the drugs would not be very effective. But with aphrodisiac powder, even an Emperor level master would have no means to deal with it.

Everyone imagined the situation where the enemies fell into the traps. While fighting, their nether region would become inflated,

their faces would become red, and their eyes would be filled with desires... Thinking about this, they could not help but shiver.

Finally, King of Hell Chu said with regret, “Huhhh... Too bad we are in a hurry. Otherwise, I could arrange for a few drums of boiling oil. The weather has become cold or I could have put a few poisonous snakes, some poisonous centipedes...”

These people became dizzy!

Just what he had there was already terrifying enough for everyone already. And yet, to King of Hell Chu, it was still not enough...

Upon finishing everything, Chu Yang casually asked, “Well? Are you satisfied with these traps?”

“Satisfied! Very satisfied!” A bunch of masters nodded like pecking chickens. They looked upon Minister Chu with eyes full of fear. Not just satisfied... terrified!

They should never fall into the hands of this guy, otherwise life would be worse than death...

“What is your name?” Chu Yang glared at that disgruntled Revered Martial Artist.

“Qu Shao Bo!” That Revered Martial Artist answered indifferently, “What order does Minister Chu have?”

“I would not dare give you orders! But you can return to the prince now.” Chu Yang coldly said, “Since you are going there, please help me tell His Majesty that I can’t use his people!”

“What?” Qu Shao Bo was startled.

“You heard me; you were not mistaken!” Chu Yang continued, “I don’t want to see your face anymore!”

“Why? You should at least give me a reason.” Qu Shao Bo’s eyes widened. He was beginning to worry. If he returned to Tie Bu Tian like this, he would never see good fortune.

“My people must follow orders! Those who are disobedient, I will not tolerate!” Chu Yang continued casually, “You dared to go against me and question my authority! That is why I don’t need you!”

“Do you prefer a group of obedient idiots over a master?” In his anger, Qu Shao Bo spoke without thinking. These words made everyone around him furious.

“Wrong! I would rather choose a few normal people over an idiot who can’t listen!” Chu Yang said harshly, “Get out now! If you dare to add another word, you will be killed without mercy!”

Qu Shao Bo was panting in anger as his eyes gradually reddened. He knew well that once he left, he would not have a future in Iron Cloud!

“You… King of Hell Chu, you have gone too far!” Qu Shao Bo glared at King of Hell Chu, “You will regret this!”

“Kill him!” Chu Yang did not hesitate and gave the order right away, “Anyone who hesitates will also be killed, all nine generations!” This person disrespected me right at the moment I needed to make an example of someone. I have to let you people see that King of Hell Chu can even order the prince’s subordinates to be killed!

From now on, who would dare disobey his orders? This was a shining example! Furthermore, at critical moments, the attitude of one person could affect the outcome of his big plans. How could Chu Yang allow a person like that to remain here?

He could not be kept, but he also could not be let go. There was only death!

Chu Yang might have been softhearted, but he never hesitated!

Chapter 154: Gu Du Xing returns

Suddenly, a dry voice boomed, “Minister Chu does not need someone who can’t take orders, and His Majesty also does not need someone who can’t take orders!” Before those words were done, a shadowy figure fell down from the air. There was a glowing crown on his head!

This crown was almost solid. [TLN: like a halo.]

A cluster of mist suddenly appeared and turned into a large hand in the blink of an eye; it covered Qu Shao Bo’s head.

“Shadow Lord…” Qu Shao Bo did not even have a chance to plead before getting turned into a pile of minced meat by that large hand. Things happened so swiftly that the others were still just rushing in upon Chu Yang’s order; their bodies were still in the air when everything was done.

The large hand slowly pulled back and became a mist once again. The shadowy figure floating in the mist said, “Minister Chu, His Majesty said that you can kill anyone who is dissatisfied!”

Chu Yang smiled and replied, “Please let his Majesty know that I already knew this!”

In the mist, the shadow slightly nodded. There were sounds of fluttering wind and the figure disappeared without a trace.

That shadow’s action had brought great terror! Everyone was now looking at Chu Yang with anxiety and fear!

Chu Yang smiled bitterly as he lamented. It seems that, this time, Tie Bu Tian’s good intentions has messed up my plans. I am capable of taking care of this by myself. And yet Tie Bu Tian had to get involved like this. His well-intentioned intervention has weakened my authority.

With my method, everyone here would have killed Qu Shao Bo; that would have been better.

Stepping into the cell and looking at the person lying curled up in there, Chu Yang did not say anything. The prisoner inside was one on death row; he had been interrogated and tortured to the point where he no longer looked human; he also had lost the ability to speak. According to Tie Bu Tian's idea, this person was used as a fake Tang Xin Sheng. But Chu Yang was a little hesitant...

"This is the best opportunity!" Chu Yang quietly looked around the dingy cell and quietly planned, "But setting up a fake scene here is extremely dangerous. I have to figure out how to make it beneficial in every way."

Chu Yang frowned and thought for a long time. The others stood quietly behind him. No one dared to breathe loudly and disturb his train of thoughts.

"Perfect all the traps here. The next time I come here, if I see one trap not fitting in, the ones who set it up can leave." Chu Yang left these words as he was preparing to leave.

But these words were enough to make all the masters tremble.

In the next few days, Chu Yang rushed about taking care of the business of capturing Yin Wu Fa in the mornings. In the afternoons, he continued to challenge people. In the end, all of his efforts paid off. Chu Yang was able to integrate the Gentle Force of water into his moves.

While it was going to be a while before he would be able to fully incorporate it into his techniques, this was still great progress.

Besides that, his martial power also did not cease to increase. After only five or six short days, he already became a third grade Martial Artist. This kind of advancement made a King level master like Mo Cheng Yu tongue-tied!

I have never seen such advancement like this! This guy is a monster!

Early each evening, Chu Yang always trained Mo Qing Wu on her

saber techniques, pointing out any flaws. After that, he would tell her stories. One big and one little: first, there were strict words and serious faces; soon after, they were amicably sitting together.

During this time, Chu Yang's studious efforts had proven itself to be very effective. In Mo Qing Wu's eyes, Brother Chu Yang was becoming more scholarly each day!

Whether it was a story in heaven or on earth, an old story or new story, a fantasy or a love story…. Brother Chu Yang knew them all!

Xiao Wu was worshiping Brother Chu Yang more and more every day.

While Brother Chu Yang has strict requirements when it came to her training, Mo Qing Qu came from a great clan and understood that strength was the key to getting the respect of others! Beauty was nothing more than a flower vase.

Therefore, she never felt any contempt.

Plus, after each time she trained with her saber, she got to hear stories, play with toys…

Mo Cheng Yu watched one big one small from the side. One telling the stories as the other one listened to these children stories; it was giving him the shivers. Internally, he was even more worried and pensive.

Before, he did not think there was anything, but now, he could not avoid thinking about it.

Chu Yang's advancement speed was not humanly possible. Mo Cheng Yu could imagine that if he maintained such a speed, there was no doubt that he would be a King level master within a year!

If that speed was maintained… in fact, not even so. A slightly slower speed would achieve such results as well. Mo Cheng Yu was certain that in twenty years, Chu Yang was capable of becoming the greatest master in the world!

This world included Lower Three Heavens, Middle Three Heavens, and even Upper Three Heavens!

Anyone could see how much Chu Yang adored Mo Qing Wu.

When they were to return to the clan this time, would the clan listen to him and allow Mo Qing Wu to continue receiving the privileges of a person with a Three Yin Meridian?

Mo Cheng Yu could not be certain of this!

But there was one thing that he was absolutely certain of.

The clan only needed to mistreat little miss a little for Chu Yang's anger to reach the heavens! There was not one clan that would want to go head to head with such a young master with such limitless potential!

If Mo Qing Wu was wronged by the clan, Chu Yang's current strength was still too weak to be a threat. But once he had the strength, he would certainly be a misfortune for the entire Mo clan.

In the time that he had interacted with Chu Yang, how could Mo Cheng Yu not know about Chu Yang's characteristics? He was an absolutely lawless person; but, even more than that, he was certainly one to take revenge!

Furthermore, he was about to become a very powerful person in Lower Three Heavens while still so young and without any family background! Who knows how he would be when he reached Middle Three Heavens?

But there was one thing he was certain of; if Chu Yang's cultivation speed was known to the rest of the world, all the clans in Middle Three Heavens would spare no expense to invite him!

Given Chu Yang's personality, he would never join any clan. He would build his own strength. That point, Mo Cheng Yu saw clearly.

If the Mo clan... applied too much pressure, Chu Yang would be cornered and would fight without caring for anything.

I still don't know why Chu Yang cares for little miss to such an extreme! He seems to care for her so much that he stopped caring for anything else, even himself.

This type of attention was terrifying. Mo Cheng Yu felt that if something happened to Mo Qing Wu with the clan, Chu Yang would definitely take revenge and there would be endless deaths!

If Chu Yang was to show his true personality, he would say, "Anyone who could destroy the Mo clan, I will serve that person!"

Mo Cheng Yu shivered, stopping his train of thoughts. But he was sure that if Chu Yang realized that he could not deal with the Mo clan, he was certainly capable of doing such a thing.

If nothing happens to little miss, then the Mo clan will have a big supporter for it. But if something was to happen to little miss, the clan will have the most terrifying enemy in this world!

Mo Cheng Yu laughed bitterly. The issue is, will the clan believe my words?

They will probably call me a crazy person!

The days passed and Mo Cheng Yu's injuries improved more and more. But he also became more pensive. When he discovered that Chu Yang had suddenly broke through fourth grade Martial Artist, he became even more worried. His worries became more and more serious and virtually turned into a mental condition.

Another concern of his was the fact that he still did not receive any news about the two young masters, Mo Tian Yun and Mo Tian Ji. What had happened to them?

Time went by quickly and three days passed.

Chu Yang no longer went out to challenge people because it would take nine days to go from Great Zhao to Iron Cloud with the

fastest horses. If Diwu Qing Rou worked quickly, then the martial experts from Golden Horse Riders Department would be in Iron Cloud early that night!

A great battle that was both covert and overt was about to happen.

After this battle, Iron Cloud would be cleansed. After this battle, all of Chu Yang's targets would be eradicated!

Early in the morning of the eighth day, before Chu Yang had a chance to get out of bed, there was a loud commotion outside of Heavenly Armament Pavilion; it seemed some people had come.

Chu Yang quickly got dressed and went out. He ran into Gu Du Xing with a few people in tow. Gu Du Xing's countenance was just as icy as before; he walked stiffly like a cadaver. After seeing Chu Yang, his eyes suddenly brightened with a trace of emotion!

"Big brother, I did not fail you!" Gu Du Xing advanced and bowed respectfully.

Of course Gu Du Xing knew that he and Chu Yang did not need this sort of formality. However, these newly arrived punks needed to see Chu Yang with absolute power! Especially since Chu Yang's current martial power was nowhere near theirs, his action was absolutely necessary!

Sure enough, just that bow left the five people behind him startled.

What kind of person was Gu Du Xing? He was the strongest and fastest amongst all of them. He was also the biggest loner. Furthermore, he was disobedient and unruly.

And yet, Gu Du Xing was currently showing respect to this youth! Everyone was suddenly in awe.

"These guys are the subordinates I found!" Gu Du Xing introduced icily.

“Hey, Gu Du! I already told you before; I am only here to help!” Ji Mo called out in protest.

“Shut up!” Gu Du Xing turned and flashed a fierce look, “If you keep talking, I will give you a beating!”

Ji Mo shrunk back and muttered, “You keep threatening me with this; do you know anything else?”

“What did you say?” Gu Du Xing yelled, and Ji Mo immediately closed his mouth without adding anything else.

“This guy is Ji Mo, a layabout. He is the second young master of the Ji clan, and a punching bag for the eldest young master Ji Wu Tian. He is a lazy guy that would not go anywhere if you don’t drag him; he is also stubborn as a mule. But he is very afraid of getting beat up!” Gu Du Xing solemnly introduced, “He also uses a sword, but he is not that good! He is much worse than me!”

These words put the people behind wild with laughter.

“What nonsense are you talking about?” Ji Mo’s face turned red as he looked at Gu Du Xing, “You didn’t even leave me with a little bit of face!”

“Ji Mo?” Chu Yang looked at Ji Mo; his eyes could not help but brighten.

This man was very interesting! He wore a blue ribbon on his head, a blue robe, a blue outfit, and also blue shoes.

He was blue from head to toe.

Chapter 155: Rebellion

This was the second young master of the Ji clan! His memory from the previous life did not include this second young master. Firstly, it was because his time in Middle Three Heavens was too short. Secondly, he did not remember everyone clearly.

If he was capable of making Gu Du Xing notice, he was clearly not a weakling!

“You’re not going to greet the boss?”

When Gu Du Xing saw that Ji Mo was still standing there, he became grouchy and gave his butt a few kicks.

“Aah...” Ji Mo angrily rubbed his rear, and reluctantly bowed, “Boss!”

“Great! Since you are here, let’s be brothers!” Chu Yang smiled and nodded.

“His name is Luo Ke Di, second young master of the Luo clan. His nickname is Coyote. He might seem like a loner, but it is just a façade. He loves to pretend.” Gu Du Xing pointed to another young man and continued his introduction. This young man had an icy countenance, but his eyes were very lively. It could be seen that he was not arrogant like his appearance.

“Ah, I have admired you for a long time!” Chu Yang smiled and nodded.

“Hello, boss.” Luo Ke Di bowed and added, “I was forcefully invited by Gu Du Xing. This bastard does not have a care for our old friendship; I hope you can do me justice.”

He had just been introduced and he already filed a complaint.

“Ah, you can’t beat him?” Chu Yang asked.

“I am not a match for him.” Luo Ke Di replied frankly, “If I beat him, I would have hung him upside down and spanked him a

hundred times already!”

“Well, that’s it! You can’t beat him so he harassed you; that’s normal!” Chu Yang smiled and replied. These words surprised all the second young masters, especially Luo Ke Di whose eyes almost popped out.

Motherf*! This boss has some personality!

“Do you want to harass him back?” Chu Yang tempted.

“Of course I do!” Luo Ke Di said loudly, “Even while I am dreaming…”

He sighed all of a sudden, and said with a crestfallen face, “Unfortunately, it is extremely difficult!”

“Just follow me and do a good job; I will give you this opportunity!” Chu Yang winked.

“Thank you, boss! If I could torture Gu Du Xing once, I am willing to be your ox, your horse!” Luo Ke Di replied bluntly.

“Hah, even if you have three lifetimes, you won’t be able to do anything!” Gu Du Xing replied in disdain, and immediately introduced the third person.

“This is Dong Wu Shang, second young master of the Dong clan. This clan is the only clan in Middle Three Heavens that uses sabers.”

Dong Wu Shang was about eighteen or nineteen years old with dark skin. On his back was a saber scabbard dark as ink. When his eyes looked up, Chu Yang felt as if there were two sabers flying toward him.

Chu Yang was pleasantly surprised.

Dong Wu Shang, this guy was extremely famous in Chu Yang’s previous life! He was one of the twelve powerful forces in Middle Three Heavens. “Black Saber One Thousand Talents Evil Young Master;” (TLN: One line of a poem from chapter 66. He is the Black

Saber in this line.) the protector of the Dong clan was standing right in front of him.

After gaining his fame, Dong Wu Shang fought a few hundred battles, big and small. He never lost one, and he never was injured, which also happened to be his name! (TLN: Wu Shang – no injuries)

However, Dong Wu Shang had yet to amount to anything then.

“Black Saber clan?” Chu Yang’s gaze remained cool like an autumn pond as he asked casually.

“Yes, Black Saber clan!” Dong Wu Shang showed a look of surprise. He did not expect a person from Lower Three Heavens to know about the name Black Saber clan.

Everyone in the Dong clan used sabers dark as ink so they were called Black Saber clan.

“Very good!” Chu Yang did not that expect among the future twelve powerful characters, two of them appeared in front of him right now. Plus, they were his martial brothers!

“This person is Rui Bu Tong. He found me; I didn’t find him!” Gu Du Xing pointed to a thin youth in black standing next to him, “We knew each other, and I had helped him before. This punk had remembered and followed to pay me back; it’s really annoying! When I announced that I was recruiting people, he came to join without a second thought.”

“Rui Bu Tong…” Chu Yang’s brows twitched; he was elated. Today, good fortune came continuously. This Rui Bu Tong would become a notorious bandit roaming all over Middle Three Heavens. According to stories, besides Lone Traveler Gu Du Xing, he did not respect anyone else. He was the Grinch of the generation.

No one knew his background or where he came from. He always remained a loner. But whenever Gu Du Xing needed help, Rui Bu

Tong was the first person to stand beside him.

Of course Rui Bu Tong was a quiet person of few words; he only looked at Chu Yang, smiled, nodded, and bowed. In this group, he was the only person that did not express a rebellious look toward Chu Yang.

“Well, I am honored to introduce our boss, Chu Yang!”

Gu Du Xing bone-piercing, icy gazed aimed at the four, “Remember! Whoever disrespects the boss, disrespects me! Brothers are brothers, but rules are rules! If anyone dared to not follow the rules of Heavenly Armament Pavilion, don’t complain that my sword has no mercy!”

“Rest assured boss Gu. Just one word from you, I guarantee that anyone who does not listen will not have even an underwear to put on the next morning!” Rui Bu Tong smiled and replied.

The other three weakly snorted as a show of compliance.

In Middle Three Heavens, they did not respect anyone and fought fiercely with each other. On many occasions, someone would be severely beaten. They never thought that Gu Du Xing would gather them all in one place… this was an incredibly absurd thing.

In fact, Dong Wu Shang was explicitly told by his clan that in this outing, he must deal with Luo Ke Di’s clan.

And the Ji clan was also an opponent that the Dong clan and the Luo clan wanted to deal with.

The target of the Luo clan was the Dong clan and the Ji clan.

With such relationships, how could they live together in one place?

“We don’t have clans here, only brothers!” Chu Yang saw through their hearts. He thought to himself: This Gu Du Xing is really talented; he said that he was going to invite these type of

Second little ancestors, and now all he has brought are Second little ancestors.

None of these guys are dumb either.

“According to my knowledge, when young people like you go out, the clans would send King level masters as bodyguards. Why don’t you have any?” Chu Yang asked.

These words hit directly at their hidden pain, making the three Second little ancestors furious.

“King level bodyguards? With my strength, why would I need bodyguards?” Ji Mo replied angrily.

“Yes! Whenever I go out, I never bring bodyguards with me!” Luo Ke Di spat and answer condescendingly.

“What are bodyguards? Since I have been running rampant, I have never used them!” Dong Wu Shang glared.

“Shut up all of you! Is this the attitude you use when talking to the boss?” Gu Du Xing glared, and revealed everything, “They don’t have the status to bring bodyguards. While they were able to become second young masters with their strengths, in their clans, they are all lower-born…”

“Oh…” Chu Yang sighed deeply. The three faces immediately reddened.

“What’s lower-born?” The moment Rui Bu Tong asked, the other three glared at him. Without any signals, they rushed him all at once and wrestled him to the ground. Then his pitiful body was pounded with countless punches.

The three at already disliked Rui Bu Tong since the beginning. On the way, he had helped Gu Du Xing harass them. They had been annoyed but did not dare to say anything; but now that they were making their move, all three rushed up.

His words had provoked a shared pain of these three. With such a

heaven-sent opportunity, how could they pass it up? This was the first time the three of them cooperated with each other.

After they were done with the beating, Ji Mo rolled his eyes and said, “Lower-born is a child born from a concubine. Motherf*! I am the child of that bastard and his concubine! My mother is a concubine! Understood?”

“Do you hate him?” Chu Yang rubbed his chin and asked. He felt that these people were really interesting.

“Hate? No!” Ji Mo sighed and replied sadly, “With him, I don’t think I would be able to hate! All sons are given names for their destiny. And he gave me the name Ji Mo! (TLN: Mo means ink; dark) Does he want me to be alone for the rest of my life? But somehow I still manage to have a lot of friends!”

“These brothers, because of their birth, have no hope in their clans. Therefore, I brought them together in hope that they will follow you and make a future for themselves!” Gu Du Xing replied solemnly.

“If you beat the eldest young masters, wouldn’t everything change?” Chu Yang was annoyed; he remembered that Mo Cheng Yu said that the Mo clan was the same way.

“That is only the case for legitimate children.” Gu Du Xing explained, “Children of concubines are not counted. The highest position they could achieve is second young master; they cannot advance further! Even if the eldest young master dies, they would choose one of the legitimate descendants to replace him; they would never choose illegitimate children!”

Chu Yang said “oh”, and he really wanted to ask: How did you, Gu Du Xing, manage to climb to the position of clan leader in the previous life? Did you kill all the legitimate descendants?

“Well, let’s cut to the chase! Hey, Chu Yang!” Dong Wu Shang coldly said, “We could join Heavenly Armament Pavilion, but the

ranking needs to be renegotiated."

This punk opened his mouth and called him Chu Yang; no respect at all.

Luo Ke Di and Ji Mo's eyes also brightened. Perhaps the three of them had discussed about this already.

"What did you say?" Gu Du Xing growled with anger, feeling a loss of face. His face reddened like a persimmon. His eyes flashed fiercely and his hand was on his sword hilt; a murderous aura poured out.

"Boss Gu, we already said this! We wanted to see this boss." Dong Wu Shang took a step back, but there was not the least bit of fear in his eyes as he calmly continued, "This is just curiosity. We never said that we would definitely work for him! Of course, if you are the boss, I, Dong Wu Shang, would have nothing more to say!"

Chapter 156: Based on what?

“That’s right! Whether it’s age, cultivation or background, he does not have a say in this!” Ji Mo laughed and continued, “Gu Du Xing! I, Ji Mo, am not a coward who clings to life and is afraid of death! Don’t think you can threaten me! The reason I came is to see if this Chu Yang is what you said he is! If he could convince us that he is capable of leading us into Upper Three Heavens, then I, Ji Mo, will recognize him as the boss! Otherwise, even if you chop my head off, I will not yield to him!”

“Yes! The two of us feel the same way! In terms of age, he is youngest; in terms of cultivation, he is lowest. Based on what is he our boss?” Luo Ke Di shouted.

“Good! Good! Since you are heartless, don’t blame me for being ruthless!” The cold light in Gu Du Xing’s eyes became stronger and stronger. The killing aura he emitted grew thicker. His face turned blue from anger. “Shiiing…” the Black Dragon sword came out like lightning, ready to stab.

“Wait!” Chu Yang immediately intervened.

These guys are all talented people! Gu Du Xing is currently using force to talk to them; this is not sound. Moreover, I am the boss; if I don’t show a little skill, how can I get their respect?

While they were childish, these guys were not the type that would willingly be inferior to others.

“When it comes to qualifications, I guess I have to show you a little!” Chu Yang replied calmly, “Based on what? You all are thinking that I am the youngest so what makes me your boss? Every one of you has a much more powerful background than me. Your cultivation levels are also higher than mine. But, when you arrived here, you are all ranked below me! Why?”

Chu Yang smiled and looked over at all the people in front of

him, “My qualification is very simple! I am stronger than all of you!”

The three smiled condescendingly.

“I, Chu Yang, am a commoner with a humble background. I was tossed away when I was little. My master raised me. In this aspect, I am stronger than all of you!” Then Chu Yang raised his index finger, “I have a master who loves me! In my heart, he is my father! He would give his all for me! In this alone, you are no match for me! While you were born into privilege and had powerful masters, you don’t have a master like mine!”

Chu Yang continued, “Second, I have good martial brothers! My junior martial brother is my good brother, but he is currently not here. Here, I have Gu Du Xing!” Chu Yang said proudly, “You guys are probably wondering why Gu Du Xing listens to me, right?”

This was the thing that had been bothering them; it could even be said that it was the reason they came here.

“It is because we see each other as martial brothers! Gu Du Xing would do anything for me, and I would do the same for him! I would be willing to exchange my life for Gu Du Xing’s. And he would also be willing to do the same!” Chu Yang arrogantly looked at the three and replied proudly, “This boast-worthy thing, do you have it? Such a martial brother, do you have one?”

The three people remained silent.

If they did, they would not have been wandering in Jiang Hu all by themselves like this.

Youths of Jiang Hu, who did not dream of a martial brother who would live and die with them? Only in Jiang Hu could there be such friends. But they had grown up with infighting in their clans, and had learned to trust only themselves since they were young!

They could not afford to have martial brothers because they were afraid of betrayal. Their positions in the clans were precarious

ones and had doomed them to not have any friends in the clans.

Martial brothers! This was the desire of all young people in Jiang Hu, but was also the heartache of all descendants of great clans.

“Third! I was born a commoner. My background could not be any lower. But from the secular point of view, I am successful!” Chu Yang looked indifferently at the three youths in front of him and said, “I have fame and power in this Iron Cloud. I can have countless people kill with one word. I can create big waves with one gentle stomp!”

“Everything I just told you, I have achieved them in three months! Can you people do that?” Chu Yang looked at them icily and asked.

The heads of the three were covered in sweat.

“You said you have power in Iron Cloud. Who are you?” Luo Ke Di asked in a low voice.

“Who am I?” Chu Yang smiled and said, “My surname is Chu; people call me King of Hell Chu!”

King of Hell Chu! The three were now horrified! While they were people of Middle Three Heavens, the famed King of Hell Chu seemed to have created a stir in the whole world. They went to Lower Three Heavens to train, how could they not know about the name King of Hell Chu?

The miraculous leader of Bu Tian Pavilion had purged Iron Cloud Citadel with blood. He went head to head with Golden Horse Riders Department with just a measly force and still did not fall on the losing side.

They had already been well-versed with all the legends of King of Hell Chu.

But the three of them never knew that this legendary King of Hell Chu was the smiling and talking young man in front of them! He had such accomplishments in just three months, King of Hell Chu

was worthy of anyone's admiration.

This might have sounded simple enough, but... Ji Mo and the others knew that they were not capable of it!

"Fourth! A year ago, I was the third grade Martial Pupil. But currently, can you see what my cultivation is?" Chu Yang breathed out and lightly activated his martial energy. A light blue mist appeared on his hand.

"Martial Artist!" At this moment, all five people exclaimed. Even Gu Du Xing's eyes widened.

"Sorry! Peak fourth grade Martial Artist!" Chu Yang pulled back his aura and ginned widely, "Twenty-one grades in just one year! It is nothing worth boasting!"

The five wiped off their cold sweats at the same time.

Twenty-one grades in one year, and there was nothing to boast? What they did not know was that Chu Yang was really being modest. His real advancement time frame was actually about half a year.

"The amount of time that Gu Du Xing spent finding you people was one month and six days. When he left, I was a sixth grade Martial Warrior." Chu Yang smiled and continued, "If your cultivation speed is quicker than mine, I will concede!"

The four people turned toward Gu Du Xing almost at the same time. They could only see his widened eyes looking at Chu Yang. With a look of terror on his face, he murmured, "How could this be... How could this be...?"

The four became even more shocked.

All four of them knew Gu Du Xing's temperament well. He looked down on lying, and would sooner use his sword than to join forces with Chu Yang in deceiving them.

Plus, his action just now was as if he saw a demon!

Such a demeanor could not be faked!

Could there be such a monster in this world? Advancing twenty-one grades in one year? No… seven grades in one month?

This guy… how can he be so monstrous?

“Fifth! I am stronger than all of you because I have ambitions and aspirations! I already said that the target of Heavenly Armament Pavilion is to advance to Upper Three Heavens. Not only to advance there, but also to take over Upper Three Heavens!”

Chu Yang’s eyes radiated an arrogance as he looked at the three people, “Do you have that ambition? Have you ever thought of this? You want to go there, but you never thought about what you would do once you get there, or how you would achieve it!”

The four hung their heads in shame.

“You are unhappy with your clans and just want to go out to relax! You have all said that your clans treated you unfairly. And while you are bullied, you never bothered to fight back. You people just want to go out for a while and then come back to your clans to continue living under their control…”

Chu Yang scolded, “You are a bunch of cowards who don’t have the guts to fight for themselves! You are too afraid to do anything! You can only go around Middle Three Heavens and earn yourselves the lame title of young master! You shamed your reputations so those damn eldest young master could feel assured and not deal with you. You just want to live in shame with whatever life you have left…”

Chu Yang smiled coldly, “Anyone is in the position to question my authority, but you people don’t have such rights! While my background can’t match yours and neither can my cultivation level, I depend on myself and use my bare hands to kill and take what I have!” (TLN: Oh, my bare hands and Nine Tribulations Sword.)

“Did you know that there is a disabled veteran camp next to those mountains over there? There are groups of poor disabled veterans there, and you people can’t even compare to them! It is because they fought on the battlefield with their own lives, and they are capable of living in poverty! But you people cannot!” Chu Yang’s gaze was as sharp as a saber as he looked straight at the three.

He coldly smiled and continued, “Me calling you elder brothers? Do you have the guts to receive that position? Do you dare?”

“Second young master, only second young master!” Chu Yang looked up and laughed, “Are you even worthy of being men? Are you in the position to ask for my qualifications?”

The three faces reddened from ear to ear. With eyes burning, they said, “Chu Yang! You can look down on us but you don’t have the right to insult us!”

“Don’t have the right? I don’t have the right?” Chu Yang sneered, “I am insulting you! What are you going to do about it?”

“If you people want to prove that you are not useless, then you can stay! I will give you the opportunity to arrogantly walk in Jiang Hu!” Chu Yang paused a little then continued, “If you don’t want this, you can leave right now! My place does not take young masters or big brothers!”

“Because you were willing to be second young masters, you are not worthy of being boss!” Chu Yang yelled.

“Motherf*! I will stay!” Ji Mo said loudly, “When I am stronger than you, I will challenge you!”

“Yes! I will be the one to defeat you and Gu Du Xing!” Luo Ke Di yelled, “Don’t be mistaken that you have convinced me!”

“I am staying because I want to see what gives you the audacity to say that you will lead us into Upper Three Heavens!” Dong Wu Shang sharply glared at Chu Yang.

“I want to stay because boss Gu is here! Even if you kick me out, I

won't leave!" Rui Bu Tong laughed. He was probably the most relaxed out of the four of them.

Gu Du Xing breathed a sigh of relief. He thought to himself: Chu Yang is definitely convincing; he clearly scolded these punks into staying.

"You want to stay? Is it that easy?" Chu Yang sneered, "What kind of place do you think my Heavenly Armament Pavilion is? You get to stay because you want to stay? You get to stay because of your second young master titles?"

Chu Yang intentionally emphasized the words "second young master," as he asked sarcastically.

The three immediately turned purple and replied, "Perhaps you despise us?"

"If you want me to value you, you have to show me your strength." Chu Yang sneered, "Do you think that just your current cultivation level is enough?"

"I am a Martial Great Master!" Ji Mo practically screamed in his face; he was so angry, he wanted to spit up blood, "My cultivation level is sixth grade Martial Great Master, the same as Gu Du Xing!"

"Sorry! I am already at seventh grade! Thank you very much!" Gu Du Xing glared.

Ji Mo's face lost its color, "Seventh grade? You broke through?"

"Yes, one day before I saw you!" Gu Du Xing folded his arms, looked at Ji Mo, and said slowly, "You are finished, Ji Mo!"

"We are also the same!" Luo Ke Di and Dong Wu Shang said in unison, "We are also Martial Great Masters!"

But the two of them were third grade and fourth grade Martial Great Masters. There was a great gap between them and the two people in front of them so they did not yell out loudly.

Chapter 157: A gamble

“What I want is the heart of a powerful person!” Chu Yang emphasized, “It is not an issue of cultivation. A person could be a Martial Pupil; with the heart of a powerful person, he could rise step by step and advance toward the pinnacle of martial arts. But if a Martial Great Master does not have the heart of a powerful person, he would just be a strong piece of meat!”

“A heart of a powerful person?” The three seemed a little enlightened.

“There is more, if you want to remain here, you will have to see me as boss and listen to me!” Chu Yang mockingly, “At Heavenly Armament Pavilion, I don’t need second young masters or little ancestors!”

“No matter what, I will stay. I will stubbornly squat here!” Ji Mo immediately plopped in front of Heavenly Armament Pavilion’s entrance, unwilling to stand up.

“Are you willing to listen to me?” Chu Yang frowned.

“Of course!” The three said in unison. At this moment, the three of them all felt that if they were to be kicked out they would surely lose face!

“Well, I will take a chance and accept you; I suppose it could be a charity!” Chu Yang said reluctantly, “But be warned, if anyone does not follow my orders, I will kick him out; don’t be so thick-skinned and try to stay. I hate that kind of person most of all!”

The four thought: Of course, if you’re not going to follow orders, why would you be so thick-skinned and remain here? Then they looked at each other as if wanting to say: You must be the first one to be kicked out!

The unspoken competition between them had begun.

“Good! Let’s start. I will give your three clans a chance to see who

will win and who will lose!" Chu Yang said slowly, "In this period, all the great clans of Middle Three Heavens are getting ranked against one another. But such an important responsibility would naturally not be up to you people!"

Chu Yang rubbed salt on their hearts once more. He squinted his eyes and looked at the three faces twitching, "At least, in my place, there will be a first elimination round amongst you second young masters! In a general sense, you will represent your clans and battle here!"

The three straightened up and looked at Chu Yang with burning eyes.

"Within a month, each of you must advance by one grade in cultivation. Gu Du Xing will be here to oversee this." Chu Yang said carelessly, "One month later, anyone who does not advance will be considered a failure, and must leave my sight at once!"

"What is this? You don't even care about our skill level at all?" Luo Ke Di jumped up, "That's not fair!"

"If you don't agree, you can leave and admit defeat!" Chu Yang sneered, "Fair? You want to talk about fairness with me? I will let you know something; in life, there has never been such a thing called fairness!"

"I do not care how you cultivate. This place is relatively big; if you die because of cultivation, it's your problem. I will only say one thing; if you don't advance, you are not worthy of being my brother!" Chu Yang said slowly.

"What about you?" Ji Mo called out, "You don't mean just us cultivating? Will you just stand by and watch the actions?"

"Of course I will also cultivate. I am currently a fourth grade Martial Artist! In a month, I will break through Martial Master! If I can't do this, I will abdicate my position." Chu Yang grunted and asked, "What do you think?"

The four remained quiet.

Breaking through Martial Master from fourth grade Martial Artist in one month? Do you think you are a god?

“We’ll take that bet!” The four people gritted their teeth and agreed. It would be stupid not take a gamble on such terms.

Three of them rubbed their hands together, getting ready for a month of fighting for the boss position! Only Gu Du Xing was sitting on the side looking at the three people pitifully and thinking: You three are really stupid! I have witnessed him continuously increase three grades in four hours. Do you people really think that increasing six grades in a month would be difficult for him?

If he says he could directly break through Martial Great Master, I would not find it strange!

From the moment Ji Mo and the rest of them appeared to the moment Chu Yang managed to keep them here, the time period was very short. Chu Yang dealt with everything very simply! In fact, Chu Yang did not intend to trick them at all. He dealt with these guys in a very clear and straightforward manner!

At a glance, one could see that Chu Yang wanted them to stay. This was not a covert conspiracy, but an overt design!

But it was that clearly seen intention that made the three people voluntarily stay.

They did not even mind paying a great price to remain there!

This particular point, Gu Du Xing would not be able to see until he thought about it more carefully tomorrow.

Chu Yang’s method was quite simple: shock and awe. Then he used the youths’ desire to win and the conflicts between their clans to create a trap.

If it was just one person, he would not have even bothered.

Because no matter what Chu Yang said, that person would never see him as the boss. But currently, there were three people from opposing clans; the situations was completely different!

These people were competing opponents; how could they accept being weaker than another? They would sooner die than accept it.

Therefore, Chu Yang achieved his purpose easily while establishing his authority as well. He had managed to get a group of second young masters from superpower clans to stay. Plus, he even got to scold them.

This was incredible to Gu Du Xing.

When the three started to rebel, Gu Du Xing was sure that things were irreparable! He never thought that they could be solved so easily like this.

“Good! If that’s the case, let’s start our bet!” Chu Yang smiled and said, “To enhance your enthusiasm, Heavenly Armament Pavilion will have a competition. In one month, whoever does not advance can leave. Amongst the remaining people, whoever breaks through the slowest will have to wash underwear for a month, including shorts and socks. And if one thing is not clean, he would be punished for another month.”

Everyone looked at each other.

Is this too cruel?

After passing the qualification, they would still have to wash other people’s underwear?

“Ji Mo, do you want Gu Du Xing to wash your socks?” Chu Yang asked.

Ji Mo’s two eyes immediately shined like flood lights. Thinking about Gu Du Xing washing his socks, he could not avoid laughing. His confidence increased by a hundred folds and he replied powerfully, “I will make sure that he washes my underwear every day!”

“Very good! Dong Wu Shang, would you like Luo Ke Di to wash your underwear?” Chu Yang continued to stoke the fire.

Dong Wu Shang bitterly looked at Chu Yang’s animated expression and snapped, “I want you to wash my underwear! For a whole month, I will not bath at all! I want to stink you to death.”

“No problem; you people just need to beat me!” Chu Yang smiled coolly.

“Attention! This first month is just a trial so there will be no set duties.” Chu Yang smiled, “I hope you will pass this trial!”

“Du Xing, please bring out the reward I have prepared for everyone to see!” Chu Yang added, “They are all heavenly weapons, you can just bring out one sword!”

Gu Du Xing understood. He went in and brought out a sword. He flung it in front of the four people and said, “You can look a little!”

After a little while, the four people became wild.

“How could there be a heavenly weapon of this level in this world?” Ji Mo shouted in surprise. He was a swordsman so he went crazy the moment he saw this sword, “It’s minnneeee...!!!”

“Get out!” The three others unceremoniously snapped, “You want to take it with your efforts?”

Chu Yang clapped in approval; all eyes were on him.

“We are not lacking in heavenly weapons like that here. We even have sabers!” Chu Yang winked at Dong Wu Shang and his blood started to boil upward.

There are sabers as well!

“As I said, this is a reward!” Chu Yang said, “Only when you officially join Heavenly Armament Pavilion and do something great to win everyone’s admiration can you get this reward!”

“This is my bribe, you can just ignore it if you want!” Chu Yang said bluntly.

Who can resist this kind of temptation? Ignore? Motherf*, we're not stupid...

The four people looked at each other and then looked at the sword. They all felt that compared to this sword, their weapons were just garbage...

"Ah, Dong Wu Shang! I heard that your Black Saber has always been famous for being sharp. Let's give it a try!" Luo Ke Di picked up the sword, ready to fight.

"Get out! You have to use your own sword!" Dong Wu Shang answered with annoyance. While his saber was not an ordinary item, fighting with this sword would probably cause his saber to at least chip.

"This is my sword!" Luo Ke Di looked lovingly at the sword, mesmerized.

Gu Du Xing immediately took the sword back and said, "Yours? Beat those guys first!"

Then he put the sword inside.

Looking at Gu Du Xing's, Luo Ke Di and the rest could barely breathe. Their entire bodies trembled, and hearts ached...

"There are many rooms here; each of you can pick out a room for yourself! I am busy with many things, I can't play with you for much longer!"

Chu Yang said a few words to Gu Du Xing and went out. Seeing that the sun already high in the sky, he had to check on things at Bu Tian Pavilion!

These people are only remaining here temporarily. But they just need to remain here, I could make them stay permanently!

Walking into Bu Tian Pavilion, the Saber King was already sitting there waiting. These past few days, he would come to rush them once a day. It was not because Chu Yang did not try or that Bu Tian

Pavilion did not give it their all; they just could not find that person.

The Saber King could not fault them on this. He already knew that the opponent was severely injured and would not be able to go far; he even knew that the person might have died in the citadel. But they had no way of investigating whether the person was alive or dead. This made him feel annoyed these past few days.

King of Hell Chu became angry because of this once and even roared. The Saber King saw this clearly.

Chu Yang truly did try hard! But this Yin Wu Fa seemed to have evaporated out of Iron Cloud Citadel. After search for a long time and not yielding any results, Chu Yang had gradually come to that conclusion!

“It seems that there are numerous King level masters in the citadel!” Chu Yang solemnly looked at the Saber King, “Senior, we shouldn’t... this lowly official suddenly feels that our searching approach is wrong!”

“Wrong?” The Saber King stroked his beard and became pensive. He had also thought about this. After searching for a long time and not finding any clues, it was probable that another gigantic spy network covering him. It was just that the Mo clan only came down to Lower Three Heavens a few months ago, how could they create such a spy network?

Perhaps the Mo clan knew that they would be hunted in Iron Cloud Citadel? This is extremely preposterous!

“This lowly official thinks that this is probably not the Mo clan like senior has suspected!” Chu Yang hinted, “In this matter, there are many hidden things that we don’t yet know!”

Chapter 158: The “intelligence” of Saber King

“This is not done by the Mo clan?” The Saber King pondered and frowned. Then he murmured, “If that is the case, then who is it? Did we offend someone else? We didn’t make our move against the other clans yet.”

“That is true. But then which clan in Middle Three Heavens does such a powerful King level master come from?” Chu Yang sighed. His eyes looked as if he was racking his brain thinking about this.

“Huh? What if he is not from Middle Three Heavens?!” The Saber King could not help but follow Chu Yang’s lead. After a long time, he suddenly smacked his thigh and shouted out, “Could he be…”

“Who?” Chu Yang was startled and asked hastily.

“Could it be Golden Horse Riders Department?” The Saber King’s eyes flashed with wisdom as he put out his deduction.

“Could… could…” Chu Yang hesitated a little then he replied, “Sir, I would like to say that person was sent by Golden Horse Riders Department because that would lead to you fighting with them and Iron Cloud would benefit. But Golden Horse Riders Department doesn’t seem to have any issues with you; your deduction is a bit… forced!”

“This is not it; that is not it. Are King level masters in Lower Three Heavens as numerous as dogs?” The Saber King was very satisfied with Chu Yang’s frankness, but he still snapped back, “Even if it is in Middle Three Heavens, how many King Level masters could there be?”

“If it is Golden Horse Riders Department, then what is their reason?” Chu Yang frowned, trying to find a solution, “Golden Horse Riders Department is not even done dealing with Iron

Cloud; why would they want to add a powerful enemy?"

"Dealing with Iron Cloud..." The Saber King pondered once more.

"Your grudge with the Mo clan is not a secret, correct?" Chu Yang said hesitantly.

"What are you thinking?" The Saber King asked and then replied, "It was a secret before, but now it is no longer one."

"Then that makes sense. In other words, with his spy network, Diwu Qing Rou would have already know about your grudge with the Mo clan..." Chu Yang said mused, "Perhaps... I think..."

"Speak already!" The Saber King became annoyed. He felt as if he grasped something, but still did not figure it out. When he saw Chu Yang hesitating and wanted to force it out and yelled, "Golden Horse Riders Department is your enemy, why do you try to explain on their behalf?"

"I was thinking... that if it is Golden Horse Riders Department then... then there must be some ugly reasons..." Chu Yang pretended to frown then spoke decidedly, "You are all currently in Iron Cloud Citadel, correct?"

"Besides Iron Cloud Citadel, you have not gone anywhere else, right?"

"If I was Diwu Qing Rou, I would wonder why Hei Mo appeared in Iron Cloud and not Great Zhao!" Chu Yang acted as if he had found the reason, and his words gradually grew more coherent.

As for the Saber King, he listened tentatively and nodded repeatedly like a pecking chicken.

"Then, I would check to see if Hei Mo has some contract with Iron Cloud. With the resources of a country, hiring a powerful clan is not impossible..." Chu Yang idly tapped his fingers on the table as he contemplated.

“That’s right!” The Saber King’s countenance grew solemn; he even sat up straight to listen.

“If Hei Mo is truly helping Iron Cloud, it would be big trouble…” Chu Yang continued to reason, “With Diwu Qing Rou’s character, he would always nip danger in the bud…”

“In this period, the heavens have given him a great opportunity!” Chu Yang yelled out and clapped his hands as if he had figured out the problem.

“What heavensent opportunity?” The Saber King started breathing heavily as everything was becoming clear. He understood all of a sudden and smacked his thigh, “Our grudge with the Mo?”

“Exactly! Please continue.” Chu Yang praised.

“If Diwu Qing Rou thinks that way, he would sent people to pretend to be the Mo clan and attack. Whether they are successful or not, our biggest suspect would still be the Mo Clan!” The Saber King’s eyes shined with brilliance and wisdom as he spoke.

“Yes!” Chu Yang looked at him with the admiration of someone looking at his idol; he praised, “Senior… You are a master of cunnings in the political arena. Your analysis so thorough not one little thing could escape your sight. You are the light that shines through endless layers of fog… truly…”

The Saber King stroked his beard and showed a look of humility, “It was nothing. From the outside looking in, everything is much clearer!”

“Yes… yes! You are right!” Chu Yang continued to flatter him. Then he suddenly smacked his forehead and said sadly, “This is embarrassing! I am the one on the outside, you are the one on the inside! I am so ashamed, I could die!”

“Haha.” The Saber King laughed loudly and replied, “Truly brilliant! I cannot believe a prime minister of Lower Three

Heavens dares to take advantage of the grudge between us the Mo clan. Not bad! Not bad!”

“Huh?” King of Hell Chu looked confused and anxiously asked, “Senior, you mean…”

“You see…” The Saber King did not mind explaining to him. In his entire life, the Saber King had never been as patient as he was right now, “Diwu Qing Rou attacks us, and we suspect the Mo clan. Between the Mo clan and us, we would rather die than retreat!”

“That’s right!” Chu Yang replied innocently.

“Therefore, whether we find the culprit or not, we would still attack the Mo clan.” The Saber King continued to explain, “And that way, Diwu Qing Rou will never have to worry about getting exposed. Moreover, at that time, we will place more importance on dealing with the Mo clan and not helping Iron Cloud becomes a low priority.”

The Saber King wisely said, “He is truly worthy of being called a top intellect. When he suspected that we were helping you, he immediately came up with a strategy. Plus, no matter what happens, he would benefit. This type of mind, this type of strategy… is not bad!”

“Yes. Senior, I still have one question.” Chu Yang acted like a little student, and humbly spoke.

“Speak!” The Saber King was in a very good mood.

“While this strategy is perfect, it’s a little risky. If that martial master got caught, killed during battle, or exposed, then would we not know the truth? In that case, Diwu Qing Rou would have an additional powerful enemy instead!” Chu Yang continued to question, “With my limited understanding of Diwu Qing Rou, he is a composed and cautious person. He would normally not take such risks.”

“That’s right! This is something I am thinking about as well!”

The Saber King frowned and replied.

Idiot, just a little thing like this and you still can't figure it out! Chu Yang mentally cursed as he still looked up pretending to be thinking. He muttered, "Could it be that he has some exit strategy? But what method would he use? While he is currently not exposed, but after a few days, when the three sides face each other and talk, how could he cover this up?"

You are really an idiot! You still can't figure out such a simple thing. Chu Yang mentally cursed once again.

The speaker might have been unintentional, but the listener was full of thoughts. The Saber King was inspired by Chu Yang's muttering and immediately shouted, "This issue is really simple!?"

"Please enlighten me!!" Chu Yang gave the Saber King a clueless look.

The Saber King was filled with a sense of accomplishment and explained right away, "If I am not mistaken, once exposed, they would come to find me and explain that it was a misunderstanding. After that they would give a little compensation!"

As he said the word misunderstanding, the Saber King gritted his teeth making creaking sounds that made people's hair stand on ends.

Chu Yang looked at the Saber King completely dumbfounded. Then he argued, "How is this? How could such a grievous incident be erased with the word misunderstanding? Unless Diwu Qing Rou has medicines that could bring people back from the dead! But while such mysterious medicines are rare even in Middle Three Heavens, Diwu Qing Rou might have them!"

"Even if he has such medicines, I would not be surprised!" The Saber King looked condescendingly at Chu Yang. His eyes showed a look that said 'little boy, you are still too naïve'. Then he said, "He is the prime minister of Great Zhao, how could he not have at least

a few lifesaving medicines? You're joking me!"

"If this is the case, then Diwu Qing Rou's mentality is too terrifying!" Chu Yang took a deep breath shook his head in despair, "I really can't compare... can't compare to him!"

"But... senior, if he explain... would you accept his medicine... Plus, that guy is currently not exposed! How would he explain?" Chu Yang took another deep breath and continued to raise more questions.

"What did you eat that made you so stupid?!" The Saber King scolded, "Did you ever think that because that person is not exposed that he would have people bring the medicine to heal the Sword King? He wants me to see his sincerity and accept his friendship. At that time, wouldn't people ridicule us if we go against him?"

Chu Yang gritted his teeth, "That's how it is! Diwu Qing Rou! Good, very good! I worked so hard to find a friend, and you, you..."

Chu Yang's voice grew louder and louder. Finally he yelled in anger, "Diwu Qing Rou! I, King of Hell Chu, will not share the same sky with you! There can only be one of us!"

His voice came out like angry waves. Everyone who heard it felt his anger and hatred in it. This kind of hatred was for either someone who killed his father or stole his wife. It was a hatred so great that it terrified the heavens, shook the earth, made demons cry and made saints sad.

"Senior..." He said with a trembling voice, "You must not be fooled by him!"

"Rubbish, how can I be fooled by him? Punk, do you think I am just an ordinary person?" The Saber King angrily replied.

"No, no. How could this lowly official would ever dare to think that way? Senior, you are wiser than others, a dragon among men; how could you be so easily fooled? I am just too happy that you

have helped me lift this burden!” Chu Yang quickly corrected himself.

Chu Yang felt totally elated.

Motherf*! Leading this idiot here killed so many brain cells! I am exhausted!

Chapter 159: Grieving Saber King arrives

He finally succeeded. Chu Yang stealthily wiped the sweat on his forehead and thought: I am so tired! This was not easy at all!

But in the Saber King's eyes, this was interpreted as fear and he quickly comforted, "Don't worry kid; I won't just sit there and let them do whatever they want!"

"Ah, what will you do, senior?" Chu Yang rolled his eyes and asked.

"Well, do you have to ask? Of course we will annihilate them!" The Saber King said murderously.

"That's a pity!" Chu Yang hastily replied, "If they indeed have these intentions, then they would naturally bring good medicines with them. The Sword King is so severely injured..." He voice let out as he became emotional.

The Saber King was touched, and praised him with a kind voice, "This kid is really conscientious!"

"It is best to meet them under a false pretense; then pretend to reconcile with them and take the medicine to guarantee that the Sword King will avoid death. After that... haha, we can work together and capture them as easy as grabbing a turtle from a cage. That way, Diwu Qing Rou will not only lose medicines but also manpower. Let that bastard know hurt for once; and at the same time, let him know that there are people better than him in this world. He might think of himself as smart and resourceful, but at the Hei Mo clan, that is nothing!" Chu Yang said viciously.

"That's right!" The Saber King stood up and replied smugly with a proud voice, "Diwu Qing Rou will definitely lose to my strategy! Haha, if Diwu Qing Rou knows that I discovered his schemes, I wonder how he would feel. Hahaha..."

After he was done talking, he looked up and laughed, feeling

extremely happy.

Lose to your strategy? Underneath his mask, Chu Yang's mouth twitched as he mentally cursed: Until today... I have not seen such thick skin like yours!

If Diwu Qing Rou learned of this, would he spit up blood a hundred times, then cut his own throat and castrate himself? And maybe after that, he would dig his own hole and jump into it.

It was too unjust for him...

"Minister Chu, I will have to go back and set this up quickly. The other people from the clan who have just arrived also want to join in as well." The Saber King's eyes became crazed with killing intents, "Diwu Qing Rou played with our Hei Mo clan as if we are fools. Haha, who does he think he is? Motherf*! If I don't obliterate them this time, I will no longer have any face in this world!"

"Senior, I completely empathize with your feelings!" Chu Yang's voice was filled with anguish, "I feel so ashamed! The fight between Iron Cloud and Great Zhao is just a Lower Three Heavens matter. Why does Diwu Qing Rou want to get other innocent people involved? This lowly official finds that repugnant. Involving innocent people, could he still be called the world's greatest mind?"

"Greatest mind?" Hahaha..." The Saber King thought about the fact that he had discovered the scheme of "the greatest mind," and became extremely proud. He started to think that "the greatest mind" should be him!

"Very good! I have to go back and prepare! You should also prepare well here. But it seems that you don't have anything important to do here!" The Saber King smiled.

"Yes, of course! With your powerful skill, this lowly official just needs to follow and cheer in support. Getting a little bit of your glory rubbed off on me is already a great honor!" Chu Yang

laughed cheerfully and replied.

“Senior, I need a little help from you...” Minister Chu took advantage of the favorable atmosphere to put out his request, “This time, Diwu Qing Rou sends people here with the intention of rescuing an important person, but this person is already dead. If... haha!!!”

“You want me to find someone to pretend to be that person, and attack those who come to rescue him?” It seemed that the process of talking with Minister Chu had gradually opened the Saber King’s mind and made him wiser! He had become different from before; when talking to King of Hell Chu, he had learned to answer.

“Yes! You are truly wise!” Chu Yang was filled with admiration, “I have such thoughts, but I am not nearly as thorough as you!”

“It’s nothing! Hahaha...” The Saber King laughed and comforted Chu Yang, “Everything in life needs to be learned; human life can be seen through books. You are still young; there are some things that you would not consider!”

“Yes, yes! You are too wise; I am completely in awe, completely in awe!! Hahaha...” Chu Yang quickly asked, “If that’s the case, I will have to depend solely on you for this matter!”

“I promise!” The Saber King immediately answer, solving the problem that had been bothering our Minister Chu, “Just wait a little; I will quickly send someone here to help you. Ah, would a seventh grade Revered Martial Artist be adequate?”

“Adequate, more than adequate!” Chu Yang laughed, “Using a seventh grade Revered Martial Artist for a trap, this is like killing chicken with a knife for gutting cattle; it will be as easily as flipping over your palm!”

“Hahaha... In that case, I feel assured!” The Saber King immediately stood up; as if there was some reluctance, he added, “I

have to leave now!”

He really could not bear to leave here! It was here that he was more talented than anyone else; it was here that his thinking became so quick that he could not believe it himself...

“Please take your time!” Chu Yang did not forget to kiss up once more, “Your wisdom reaches the heavens, and your planning is thorough without any flaws. It is regrettable that such talent stays hidden in Jiang Hu. You see our Iron Cloud Nation’s prime minister...”

“Haha, stop dreaming!” The Saber King shook his head, but he was feeling very pleased; his inner poet was suddenly inspired and he immediately said some verses:

“A person in Jiang Hu

After death, is a ghost of Jiang Hu

Killing without blinking

That is who I am!”

After that, he immediately shook his thighs with satisfaction.

“Good poetry!” Chu Yang called out in praise, “While this poem only has four short lines, it carries the wild mentality of one that is free and cannot be tied down. Not just that; it also sums up the Jiang Hu’s fierce and mighty blood. More majestic than any one individual great accomplishment and beyond any generations of youths, it is brighter than the sun and the moon and soars past the heavens. Anyone who hears this would unconsciously bow in reverence.”

“Hahaha..., you are not bad either. You are flattering me again!” Hearty laughter rang out in an extremely harmonious atmosphere. One old, one young were looking at each other with unspoken understanding. The Saber King was exceedingly elated as he walked out laughing.

As for King of Hell Chu, he was thousands of times more elated; he laughed loudly as he walked in.

When Wu Qian Qian entered the room she immediately witnessed King of Hell Chu holding a children's book to cover his mouth as he tried to keep from laughing out loud. Tears and mucus ran down his face and his whole body was convulsing.

"Are you okay?" Wu Qian Qian was startled; she asked with a trembling voice.What could make King of Hell Chu that happy? This is truly abnormal!

Just earlier, I heard him crying as if someone in his family died; he even cursed Diwu Qing Rou to no end. Did I hear wrong?

His discussion with the Hei Mo Saber King was top secret so Chu Yang and the Saber King were the only ones there. If not, little miss Wu Qian Qian, who had so little life experience, could easily ruin King of Hell Chu's plans with just one sound of laughter!

"Hahaha" Chu Yang used his "quiet laugher" to show the he was extremely happy. He shoulders shook nonstop like a naked person standing outside in a harsh winter.

A long while later, unable to laugh anymore, he gradually regained his normal composure.

"What really happened?" Wu Qian Qian was scared by his laughter!

"Hahaha" Her question made King of Hell Chu start to laugh at a deafening volume. Wu Qian Qian covered her ears in annoyance. Her face still looked confused from not understanding what had happened.

The more King of Hell Chu laughed the more he lost control. One of his hands slapped his thigh while the other one banged on the table. His whole body shook, and tears ran down his face, "Hahaha... motherf* is so stupid... Hahaha..."

Wu Qian Qian was so angry blood drained from her face. She

angrily stomped out of the room while mentally cursing: This basket case is hopeless.

I was being nice and he cursed me. And with that kind of language as well.

While the Hei Mo clan people and Minister Chu were nursing the hope that at some early evening Diwu Qing Rou would send a group of his men into Iron Cloud Citadel...

In the darkness of the night, a group of people snuck into Iron Cloud Citadel unseen. They went straight to Yin Wu Fa's hiding place.

Diwu Qing Rou's spy network was truly deeply rooted in this Iron Cloud Citadel after many years of work. This location was truly secretive.

Inside, the Third King, Yin Wu Fa, was on his last breath. The people watching over him were the two Revered Martial Artists; they, too, were living in struggle! How could such a secretive hiding place have any special medicines?

Moreover, they could not get a physician. The only thing they could do was secretly buy a few medicines and quickly go back. They were constantly at risk of being exposed, and danger surrounded them all the time.

Unable to do anything else, the two Revered Martial Artists took turns using their own energy to prolong Yin Wu Fa's life. These days, the two of them were as exhausted as Yin Wu Fa.

Being able to help Yin Wu Fa hang on to this point was already a great miracle! If support continued to be delayed, then Yin Wu Fa would die and those two would follow due to exhaustion!

The moment Kong Shang Xin (TLN: Shang Xin means grief, hence the title.) saw Yin Wu Fa, his heart stirred. He was so hurt that there was almost tears in his eyes. Yin Wu Fa was currently no different than a set of bones that could move. The wounds were

still raw and bleeding, but the edges of each one were already dark purple.

His breathing was shallow without any strength. Clearly he was in a critical state!

Kong Shang Xin looked to be a little over forty years old; his body was small and swift. He was a thief from Middle Three Heavens. He later offended some untouchable people and had to flee. He, Yin Wu Fa, and Yin Wu Tian ran down to Lower Three Heavens. Then the three of them eventually joined Golden Horse Riders Department as King level leaders.

The affection these three had for each other was deeper than the ocean. In this moment, witnessing Yin Wu Fa in that pitiful state, how could he not feel sad and angry?

I will never cry, but my whole life will be in grief (TLN: Play on word, Shang Xin – sad, grief, etc.).

This spoke to the feelings between the two. Kong Shang Xin had now cried because of his martial brother.

Without seeing tears fall, I will not cry; the moment I feel sad, I am already grieving!(TLN: Need I say it again?)

Shang Xin Saber King, the name made it sound as if he was a compassionate person. But those who understood the true meanings knew how cruel Kong Shang Xin was.

He did not cry, but he made others cry. In his lifetime, he was afraid of grieving so he made his enemies grieve instead. Kong Shang Xin was a vengeful person.

“Third brother!” Kong Shang Xin quickly ran over; his two eyes were red.

Chapter 160: Diwu Qing Rou's miscalculation

What Kong Shang Xin feared most in life was grieving, but today, he had tasted just that. When he had reached the end of his ropes and everyone in Middle Three Heavens was hunting him down, Yin Wu Fa and Yin Wu Tian had helped him. Therefore, his feelings for these two were very deep. Not only were they his martial brothers, they were also his saviors.

At this moment, looking at Yin Wu Fa's pitiful appearance with his life hanging by a thread, Kong Shang Xin's heart quivered in pain.

Since the time he was hunted, his personality had completely changed. He used to be reckless, but now he had become mature and cautious; before doing anything, he calculated carefully first. If something was uncertain, he would never take the risk. In everything, his own safety was the top priority. It was with such cautiousness that he had step by step climbed up to the position of Golden Horse Riders Department's King level leader.

But the moment he saw Yin Wu Fa's sad state, his blood boiled violently. With this kind of hatred, he could not share the same sky as his enemy!

"Uh... uh..." Yin Wu Fa's eyes opened wide looking at his second martial brother. He seemed to want to say something but was unable to speak.

"Don't overexert yourself! The prime minister sent Jade Spirit Ginseng for you to use. Let me feed it to you!!" Kong Shang Xin hastily ran back out. He currently felt very lucky. Lucky that he had been quick enough in coming here. If he had traveled with Cheng Yun He... the result would be unthinkable.

Upon hearing the words "Jade Spirit Ginseng," Yin Wu Fa

trembled in his critical state. His lifeless eyes sudden brightened with hope.

After a long while, Yin Wu Fa's white face started to show a faint trace of color. His horrifying deep wounds were slowly closing. Some time after, he gradually recovered to a normal state. There was more strength in his breathing and fell into a gentle sleep.

From the time he was in the hands of death to the moment he slept, he never uttered a word! He was so completely drained of all his strength that he could not even speak!

"I finally managed to save you from the hands of the King of Hell!!" Kong Shang Xin sadly took his hand and felt Yin Wu Fa's forehead. Then he removed his cloak. He laughed to himself and muttered, "I really did save you from the King of Hell, King of Hell Chu..."

He let out a sigh and closed his eyes to meditate.

When he came to, everyone was gathered around him looking very worried. Three Command Horse Riders and fifteen Black Horse Riders total.

Command Horse Riders had cultivation levels of sixth grade Revered Martial Artist and higher. In this group, two of them were eighth grade and one was ninth grade.

This particular group was quite powerful. The fifteen Black Horse Riders were ninth grade Martial Great Masters and above. Among them, fourteen had already reached Revered Martial Artist.

This was only the first wave sent here by Golden Horse Riders Department. Cheng Yun He was coming after them with another group. Golden Horse Riders Department was simply crushing their enemies with sheer manpower. They planned to rescue Tang Xin Sheng and solve the problems in Iron Cloud in one shot!

Bullying others? Yeah, we're bullying you! You people don't have as many martial masters as we do; I am bringing a lot of martial

masters to deal with you; you got a problem with that?

Killing little ants with an elephant! Don't you feel privileged?

Thinking about this, Kong Shang Xin felt so very cool.

"Sir, what should we do next?" One of the Command Horse Riders asked cautiously, "Should we wait for Official Cheng to come or..."

"Did you people find out where they are keeping Number One?" Kong Shang Xin snorted, eying Yin Wu Fa. He had slightly calmed down when hatred flooded his heart once more, "Where is King of Hell Chu keeping Number One?"

"Sir, we have not found out yet!" That Command Horse Rider replied, "We have heard that King of Hell Chu has been really concerned with the justice department's jail. Plus, he has mobilized many martial masters to keep watch there. From the time Number One disappeared until now, the justice department's jail has become more and more tightly guarded. It seems that the number of martial masters keeping watch increases each day."

"According to our speculations, it is very likely that Number One is currently being held there!" The Command Horse Rider's eyes shined with certainty as he replied to Kong Shang Xin. His voice seemed to carry a fierce thirst for battle.

"Regardless if he is there or not, I will go and take a look!" Kong Shang Xin said arrogantly, "I want to see if King of Hell Chu's heavenly dragnet could trap my Water Dragon!"

"Hahaha...!!!" The Dark Horse Riders and the Command Horse Riders laughed loudly.

"Can you guys guess the cultivation level of the martial masters that King of Hell Chu put on guard?" Kong Shang Xin asked pensively.

More than a dozen of his subordinates along with the two subordinates of Yin Wu Fa looked at each other and shook their

heads. One of them had a constipated look on his face as he anxiously answered, “I think that they would be at least Martial Warriors!”

Another person immediately snapped, “You underestimate this King of Hell Chu! The prime minister had said never to underestimate your enemies! I think that they should be at least Martial Artists!”

Someone else said with concern, “I feel that there is the possibility that the enemies are Martial Masters or higher. After all, Martial Masters are difficult to deal with!”

“That’s right! That’s right! I think that there might be even Martial Great Masters!” Another person quickly added his thoughts.

“You have a point! But I feel as if… does this King of Hell Chu know what a Martial Great Master look like?” Kong Shang Xin raised his question with sympathy.

“Maybe this King of Hell Chu has never met one!” One of the Command Horse Riders shook his head and sighed, “In any case, Martial Great Masters are as rare to them as dragons!”

“Hahaha!!!” Everyone laughed out loud looking extremely joyous. The two Revered Martial Artists with Yin Wu Fa laughed loudest. Since coming here with Yin Wu Fa, the two had lived in comfort. Then they were turned into turtles in hiding; they dared not make any little movements until now.

“We should fulfill this little wish for King of Hell Chu!” Kong Shang Xin kindly said, “It would be pitiful for a person to die without having met a Martial Great Master!!!”

“Ahhh…” The Command Horse Riders gave a pretense of sympathy, and one of them sighed, “You guys are doing a good deed!” Then he looked at the Martial Great Masters and said sadly, “This is a great deed!”

They broke out in laughter!

“We should not delay! We should take a tour at midnight to see what sort of traps King of Hell Chu has set up!” Kong Shang Xin laughed, “If we wait until Official Cheng comes here, we will not be able to do our good deed. We should not let the opportunity pass us by; we might not have another chance!”

“You are truly wise!” Everyone said in admiration.

Once they had a plan, Kong Shang Xin started questioning the two Revered Martial Artists, “How did Third King level leader get so severely injured? He said that King of Hell Chu caused these injuries; is this true?”

“Yes!” The two Revered Martial Artists hastily replied.

“Haha, absolutely not!” Jing Meng Hun had already talked to Kong Shang Xin about Diwu Qing Rou’s deductions. Therefore, Kong Shang Xin was feeling especially confident, “Your leader was fooled by King of Hell Chu!!!”

“Huh?!?” The two Revered Martial Artists were shocked.

“But don’t tell about this just yet!” Kong Shang Xin sighed, “We want to avoid giving him any shock while he is recuperating!” Looking at the wounds on Yin Wu Fa’s body, Kong Shang Xin cursed silently, “These moves are too cruel; each stab pierced right through the body, clearly without any intention of letting him live. This is done by a Sword King!”

He thought about Diwu Qing Rou’s words: “eliminate this misunderstanding at all costs.” These words made Kong Shang Xin felt trapped.

Before coming here he had only one intention which was revenge. But since Jing Meng Hun passed down the order from Diwu Qing Rou, Kong Shang Xin had to bear with it.

During this mission, saving his third brother and bringing him home safely was enough for Kong Shang Xin. That Number One

was of no consequence to him. But after seeing Yin Wu Fa and his pitiful appearance, Kong Shang Xin became furious!

The moment he saw Yin Wu Fa's wretched state, his objectives changed! He had originally thought that Yin Wu Fa was to top King level master. While he was injured in Lower Three Heavens, how bad could those injuries be?

However, he had now believed that a King level master could be killed in Lower Three Heavens!

Another important thing was, while he understood Diwu Qing Rou's judgment, Diwu Qing Rou's order did not seem right to him: He was not allowed to do anything until Cheng Yun He arrives! No matter what happened later, he had to discuss with Cheng Yun He before taking action.

He's clearly saying that Cheng Yun He was the leader of this mission! Motherf*... what is Cheng Yun He? He dares boss around a King level master like me?

It was especially bothersome that Diwu Qing Rou had repeated this over and over again. So at this moment, Kong Shang Xin could no longer bear it. As the vanguard he had arrived first. While Cheng Yun He was still dragging behind for another two days, he was going to do something substantial!

If he could kill King of Hell Chu before Cheng Yun He arrives then...

I am going show the prime minister! Even without that Cheng Yun He, I, Kong Shang Xin, can also do great deeds!

Kong Shang Xin's fighting spirit boiled to the heavens. He wanted to follow his own plans and quickly deal with this blood debt once and for all.

While Diwu Qing Rou's plan was flawless, he had miscalculated one thing. He might have taken into consideration the affection Yin Wu Tian had for his brother Yin Wu Fa, but he did not bother

to think about the friendship that Kong Shang Xin and Yin Wu Fa had.

Perhaps this was because Diwu Qing Rou, himself, was not one to care about friendship. He probably understood the affection between biological brothers, but he probably never had any sort of friendship and never understood it...

He only knew that Kong Shang Xin was a seasoned person who acted calmly and, therefore, the best candidate for this job. But he absolutely did not expect that Kong Shang Xin, who was experienced and composed, would be so affected by Yin Wu Fa's injuries that the fury in his heart would awaken.

This was Diwu Qing Rou's mistake. The kind of mistake that was not related to intelligence, but human nature!

Chu Yang was currently returning to Heavenly Armament Pavilion.

When he got there, he was frightened. In the front court, he saw five figures fighting each other violently.

The fight went as follow: Gu Du Xing and Rui Bu Tong fought with the other three. After a little while, Gu Du Xing and Ji Mo fought with the other three. Then the fight changed to Luo Ke Di and Ji Mo against the other, Gu Du Xing fought with three people, a second later, Gu Du Xing fought against four people!

From the front court to the island, from the island to the water, then to land, they continued to fight with each other.

Each of them was panting, and their eyes were red, but none of them showed any intentions to retreat.

Chu Yang could feel that the situation was not good and quickly went over to stop them. In the worst case scenario, he would be washing their underwear!!

Chapter 161: Extreme breakthrough is that easy!

How could these proud and arrogant young masters ever accept failure? Not only that, they were competing with each other to be number one.

In their minds, comparing with others outside had no meaning. They had to be compared with each other! It was because they all had equal status; they only considered themselves successful if they defeated the others! In some ways, it could be looked upon as a contribution to their respective clans!

These guys were never valued in their clans. Each time the word clan was mentioned there would be a discontent appearance of their faces. But, strangely enough, their devotion to their clans ran very deep.

While they were a bunch of hooligans, they became concerned whenever the interest of their clans were at stake. They were descendants of great clans with pride in their heritage.

“You guys want to have an extreme breakthrough?” Chu Yang slowly walked forward and asked with a smiling face.

Gibberish, the five people looked at him with annoyance; they thought:According to your bullshit regulations, we would have to have an extreme breakthrough every two days to increase one grade in a month!

Extreme breakthrough every two days? We’re going to train to death!

“But, if you guys keep training like that, how can you break through?” Chu Yang folded his arms and smiled derisively, “Are you all idiots?”

“Then how would you have us train?” Luo Ke Di grunted coldly as he wiped sweat off his forehead.

“You are all, at the lowest, Martial Great Masters! If you keep fighting like this, how much time would you have to waste? Not to mention you do not have that life or death urgency. Plus, at your level, you don’t need that much time to recover your stamina; your recovery speed might not be as fast as the exhaustion speed, but it is certainly enough to stretch out your endurance time!”

“This is a concern for most martial artists!” Ji Mo replied sadly, “But what can we do about it? Only when we reach an extreme state and pass through that near death exhaustion where our dantian is dried up can our cultivation advance one step further! But you are saying that we have no hope of it?”

“There is great hope, but you guys are stupid and are unable to see this key point!” Chu Yang sneered, “In a day, I can have three or four extreme breakthroughs! I have just been so busy with official business. Otherwise, if I could dedicate all of my time to training, then... I can train my body to the point of destruction! Do you know what training until destruction means?”

“Three or four breakthroughs a day? Are you a saint or something?” Ji Mo sneered condescendingly. He absolutely did not believe Chu Yang’s words. For an ordinary person, one breakthrough was possible. But he was a Martial Artist, his energy was more powerful; having one extreme breakthrough was already hard enough. How could he break through three to four times a day?

“It is pressure! You all have lived pampered lives, how could you know what pressure is?” Chu Yang said with a look of pity.

“Then you think you could give us pressure?” Ji Mo glared.

“Easy!” Chu Yang turned to Gu Du Xing, “Gu Du Xing, give me your socks!”

Gu Du Xing was caught off guard, but he still did as Chu Yang asked. He took off his shoes, and tossed his sweat-soaked socks over with some hesitation. Even though they were on the island,

but Luo Ke Di, Ji Mo, and Rui Bu Tong all held their nose and backed up three meters the moment he took his socks off.

After fighting all day, the smell sweaty socks was much more powerful than that of salted fish... Even though Gu Du Xing tossed the socks, they landed upright on the ground.

“Now, all four of you can train on your own! Swords, punches, whatever you want. In short, choose the one that would waste the most energy.”

Chu Yang looked at the socks standing on the ground, and could not help but twitch. He turned to the four men and said, “I am going to give you one hour. At that time, if you have half a drop of energy left in your dantian, you have to kneel in front of Gu Du Xing’s socks and lick them twice. Then you have to turn to everyone and say, ‘I... Luo Ke Di, am not even comparable to these socks!’ After that, you would have to wash the socks clean in front of everyone!”

“Why did it have to be my name?” Luo Ke Di said unhappily, “Why not ‘I, Dong Wu Shang, am not even comparable to these socks!’... That would make a more appropriate example!”

He tilted his head and looked Dong Wu Shang glaring back.

“An hour? How could we use up all of our energy in an hour?” Ji Mo screamed.

“A few days ago, someone was chasing me down trying to kill me. In two breathing cycles, my body reached its extreme limit!” Chu Yang continued frankly, “Since then, I have discovered that I only needed a short amount of time to reach my extreme limit! The most important factor was pressure! Alright, you can start!”

“Du Xing, you can keep time. After an hour, if any of them do not reach their limit, you can deal with them as I stated. If all four of them are not successful, still do the same! You just need to give them a few more pairs of socks!”

The four became muted. He drained his energy in two breathing cycles? What kind of pressure was this Chu Yang under? They had no doubts in Chu Yang's words because he did not need to lie to them!

"Yes!" Gu Du Xing happily replied. Then he enthusiastically waved his socks across the four people's noses!

A shout rang out and the four dived right into training. If they did not achieve the goal this time, it would not only mean failure, but it would also be a great humiliation!

If it was just one person and Chu Yang gave such a condition, he would surely fight to the death with Chu Yang instead. But there were four of them here, and each one of them wanted to see their opponents as laughingstocks.

So with each move, they gathered energy from their entire body. Luo Ke Di was especially determined to use all of his strength. With each punch, his entire face turned fiery red as he continually cursed: This is for using my name as an example! How could I, Luo Ke Di, not be comparable to a pair of socks? Gu Du Xing's socks at that!

In less than fifteen minutes, Luo Ke Di used the last of his strength to make his final punch. His eyes rolled, and he seemed to have fainted as dropped to the ground like a soft noodle.

Chu Yang darted toward Luo Ke Di and checked his meridians. After a little checking, he saw that this guy had really used up all of his energy; he turned around and yelled out, "Luo Ke Di has reached his extreme! He passed the inspection!"

The moment the other three heard Chu Yang called out, they became more anxious than ever. Motherf*, in only fifteen minutes?

"Stand up! Continue to train! Continue like before!" Chu Yang kicked Luo Ke Di's body and grabbed his neck yelling, "Quickly!"

“No, I can’t!” Like a dog that’s been hung, Luo Ke Di’s eyes were all white, his limps drooped, and his tongue hung out; he murmur, “I am dying…!!”

“Gu Du Xing, quickly bring the socks and stuff them in his mouth!” Chu Yang snorted coldly.

“Right away!” Gu Du Xing happily replied; he immediately grab a dried branch to pick up the socks and ran slowly over.

“No…!!!” Luo Ke Di’s eyes were filled with extreme fear; some unknown strength came to him, and he was gone from Chu Yang’s grasp in a flash. He ran with great speed.

“After him! If you catch him, stuff the socks in his mouth!” Chu Yang yelled loudly.

Gu Dun Xing shouted and used all of his power to give chase. As for Luo Ke Di, his legs seemed to have turned to mush, his vision became blurry, and foam was coming out of his mouth. He did not even have the strength to curse at them. His mind became hazy, and he could only depend on his basic instinct to run!

Suddenly… Luo Ke Di, in his unconscious state, became stronger. The legs that were mushed, came back to life in seconds. His running grew faster and faster. He had run a great distance before he even became conscious of it. His eyes were still opened wide as he panted and ran.

Chu Yang gave Gu Du Xing the signal to continue giving chase. Gu Du Xing immediately understood and waved the smelly socks as he chased Luo Ke Di like an angry war god…

Luo Ke Di’s eyes were blank, but his speed continued to increase…

This situation left Ji Mo, Dong Wu Shang and Rui Bu Tong with wide eyes and gaping mouths! Besides Luo Ke Di, who did not know what was going on, to the ones on the outside one thing was clear: Luo Ke Di was going to have an extreme breakthrough!

Not only had he reached his extreme limit, he had an extreme breakthrough! All in a little over fifteen minutes!

The three had difficulty swallowing their own saliva and immediately dove back into training. If Luo Ke Di could do it, why can't I? Thinking about this the three practically turned mad. They dumped all of their energy into training fearing that they might have held back half a drop of it with each move they made.

In less than an hour, the other three fell down in exhaustion. Then they were kicked by Chu Yang and were forced to continue training...

After an hour, the four of them fell to the ground breathing heavily. They had trained to their extreme limit without breaking a sweat. But now that they had stopped, sweat poured out like waterfalls. Each of them looked as if they just crawled out from the water.

"I already told you I could have three or four extreme breakthroughs in a day; do you believe me now?" Chu Yang snorted and asked calmly.

The four panted with difficulty, but there were rays of bliss in their eyes!

"Luo Ke Di achieved extreme limit three times and had two extreme breakthroughs!" Chu Yang continued, "The three of you cheated, but only achieved extreme limit two times and had one extreme breakthrough! You guys are far worse than him!"

Ji Mo and company showed a look of frustration.

How could you cheat with this?

Three quietly listened to the scolding. The time was the same for everyone; there was nothing to say about it. Failure was failure!

The most important thing was the discovery of a method to quickly increase their power; everyone was very excited! While it was a bit cruel, but in the fighting and killing of Jiang Hu, what

was not cruel? At the very least, this method did not kill anyone...

Chu Yang nodded and stopped paying attention to them. He slowly returned to the front court and took position.

The four were shocked. Chu Yang was preparing to cultivate; they stared without blinking.

They only saw Chu Yang slowly moving, then his entire body started to violently tremble. He suddenly screamed out and sent out an extremely powerful punch! With this punch, they heard the clacking sounds of the bones in his body.

Chapter 162: Initial persuasion

Borrowing the momentum of the punch, Chu Yang shot forward. He jumped up in the air and then suddenly kicked down.

Compared to Ji Mo's group, Chu Yang's martial power was, of course, weaker. Because of this advantage, they were able to see Chu Yang's attack clearly.

What astonished them was that Chu Yang had almost drained all of his energy with just three moves, and went into a state of exhaustion.

But he showed no signs of stopping, each punch he pushed out perfectly combined all of his forces together.

The wind from the punches pushed through the atmosphere. Without a sound, he punched thirty to forty times in the blink of an eye. His posture was firm; the only worrisome thing was his heavy breathing. If this continued, it seemed that he would explode or cough out his lungs!

After thirty to forty punches, one of the punches carried with it a slight pop sound.

"Extreme breakthrough!" The four people exclaimed in unison. No one understood this feeling more than them. Break first, then build up. Failure, then success. The feeling was like a phoenix turning into ashes and then being reborn, becoming Buddha on the spot!

The sound of the wind whistled, growing louder by the minute. The strength of the sounds had passed its peak. After some time, the sounds gradually stopped. His punching stance remained firm as before, but the punches seemed to be without any force.

"Extreme limit again!" Ji Mo and Dong Wu Shang looked at each other in terror.

Chu Yang still quietly punched without resting. His breathing

became more labored and the blue veins on his temple throbbed as if they wanted to rip away from his skin. His countenance grew redder and redder.

Time continued to pass and another pop was heard. Ji Mo and company once again exclaimed, “Another extreme breakthrough!”

All in all, Chu Yang had three consecutive extreme breakthroughs. After the last time, his body slowed down, and his breathing stabilized as he remained firmly standing.

All five of them saw clearly. Sweat rushed from his body; head, forehead, face, chest, back... his whole body was bathed in sweat. Sweat poured down to the ground and gathered there. Within moments, a little puddle was forming underneath where Chu Yang was standing, and it seemed to be spreading wider and wider...

After standing still for a while, Chu Yang opened his eyes and shook his head, “After all that and no breakthrough!”

Ji Mo and the rest almost fell to the ground!

After not even an hour, he had three extreme breakthroughs. This number is enough to scare anyone, and he actually complained that he did not break through!

How do you want to break through?

In an hour, they all had extreme breakthroughs, but they knew well that their breakthroughs were due to pressure from this monster; but Chu Yang pressured himself to break through.

Forcing yourself versus being forced by another! The difference between the two, how could they not know?

“Bo... boss!” Ji Mo stuttered, “Boss, how did you do it?”

Ji Mo, Luo Ke Di and Dong Wu Shang’s eyes shined as they stared at Chu Yang.

“It’s very simple!” Chu Yang smiled coolly, “Each time I train, I think of a person lying dead in the wild of Jiang Hu without any

arms or legs. I tell myself that if I don't break through now, tomorrow, the person rotting on the ground would be me!"

"I don't want to be the one rotting on the ground!" Chu Yang laughed and continued, "Therefore, the only thing I could do is break through!"

Such a simple rationale, but it made Ji Mo and the rest think. Even if you are going to pressure yourself, you don't have to be that cruel.

"Being a man, you have to be able to be tough on yourself!" Chu Yang seemed to understand their thoughts and said solemnly, "If we are not cruel to ourselves, the enemy will be cruel to us. If we are not cruel to ourselves once, it's acceptable. But the enemy only needs to cruel to us once... once is enough!"

"As for this method of extreme breakthrough, you already know. But I want to warn you; with your body strength, you should never do this more than five times a day!" Chu Yang said solemnly, "Us martial artists, especially those who have reached the ranks of Martial Great Master like yourselves, might have greater endurance than ordinary people, but you are actually in the critical period conditioning your bones!"

"Once you get to the Revered Martial Artist state, you will be conditioning your organs. But before that, you need to go through the foundation of conditioning your bones. If you have more than five extreme breakthroughs per day, your bones would not be able to handle it. While this will not be obvious, once your organs get shocked, you will find that your bodies could no longer endure it all! At that time, you can train to death, but you will never be able to advance another step!"

"You must remember this!"

The four solemnly nodded.

"Good. Let's get some rest!" Chu Yang did not say anything

further. These guys were all smart enough to understand and did not need so many words.

Looking at Chu Yang disappearing from sight, the four fell into silence. If a little Martial Artist could do this, why couldn't a bunch of Great Masters like them?

This was unbearable! Too shameful...!!!

"Oh... there is one more thing I forgot to tell you. After training each day, you must keep the court clean and level. Any little thing out of place, all four of you must wash my socks and underwear!" Chu Yang's voice faintly rang out from inside.

"Damn! Besides washing socks and underwear, do you know anything else?" Luo Ke Di shouted out in discontent.

"I will bet with you that when the boss comes back out and sees a mess, I will bow down to anyone who escape socks and underwear washing duties!" Gu Du Xing mocked as he pointed to the little court, "There is one thing I still did not tell you guys. The boss never jokes; he will definitely do whatever he says!"

"Aaah...!!!" The four looked at each other and shrieked loudly.

"Where are the tools" Ji Mo shouted, "How do we clean without tools?"

"Your arms and legs... are they not tools?" Gu Du Xing asked with an abnormal innocence, "How could you train if you use tools?" (TLN: "Wax on, wax off!")

The four immediately looked up at the heavens and sighed feeling extremely odd. I may not be the heir in the clan, but I am still a young master! How did I turn into a laborer here?

While they thought so, none of them dared to stand still. Each one was anxiously moving about, using all of their power, arms and legs to quickly level the little court. Some of them even activated their martial power and palmed the ground, preparing so they could stand out a little at training the next day...

Either they were ignorant, or they might still have conflicting feelings in regards to Chu Yang's boss position. But currently, they did not realize that they were doing everything Chu Yang asked! Moreover, they were very concerned with how Chu Yang looked at them. In fact, they were even scared...

This was a beautiful beginning! Gu Du Xing casually leaned against the door frame and watched over the laborers with satisfaction. He admired Chu Yang even more. How could such a young person be capable of having so many strange and fantastic ideas in his head?

"Damn you! Gu Du, you don't feel bad just standing there watching us work?" Ji Mo cried out angrily. The other three joined in with accusations...

Gu Du Xing laughed and quickly got into a verbal battle.

Chu Yang went straight down to the secret chamber. The moment he came in Mo Cheng Yu hastily ran toward him and asked, "Did the Hei Mo people come?"

"Ah! No!" Chu Yang was surprised.

"Was there fighting above earlier?" Mo Cheng Yu had a serious countenance.

"Ah... ah... just my little martial brothers having a match!" Chu Yang finally understood.

He suddenly remembered that the Hei Mo were essentially neutralized; he could let Mo Qing Wu and Mo Cheng Yu out to get some fresh air now.

He immediately acted on it. As a habit, he picked up Mo Qing Wu, who was holding her nose. He smiled and said, "Xiao Wu, let big brother carry you outside to play, okay?"

"Good!" Mo Qing Wu's face was filled with happiness. These past few days have been suffocating. The most horrible thing was Chu Yang only had one temporary latrine in there. And while Mo Qing

Wu was young, she was a neat freak...

Mo Qing Wu held her nose and shook her head, “Brother Chu Yang, you are too stinky!”

Chu Yang smiled shamefully. He was in such a rush that he did not change clothes or wash up before running in here...

When Mo Cheng Yu came out, he glanced over the situation in the court and was in shock; he could barely believe his eyes.

In the court, five people were working with full force. They were pressing with their hands and stomping with their feet to get the ground leveled. Each one was covered in mud like little monkeys playing with dirt. Upon closer observations, Mo Cheng Yu found it was impossible to close his mouth.

The punk with his butt in the air exerting great energy and pushing dirt with his hands, isn’t he Luo Ke Di of the Luo clan? Isn’t he the second young master famous being idle? Isn’t he the one with the nickname Coyote?

And the one... carefully stomping on the ground with his feet, isn’t he the second young master of the Black Saber clan, Dong Wu Shang?

The one lying flat on the ground and squinting to check if the ground in front of him is leveled, isn’t he the second young master of the Ji clan, Ji Mo?

And... and... the punk using his feet to smooth out ground, isn’t he the number one heavenly talent of the Gu clan, Gu Du Xing? As for the frail kid, I don’t know. But... he does not seem to be weaker than these other kids...

Could it be that Chu Yang is gathering all the second little ancestors of Middle Three Heavens to come here and do hard labor for him?

This... this is too inhumane!

According to Mo Cheng Yu's knowledge, even if their birth fathers asked them to do these menial chores, they would ignore it. But Chu Yang was clearly able to get them to obediently do manual labor...

This was proof of real skill!

Is Chu Yang not afraid of the clans finding out about this and killing him?

Mo Cheng Yu was an important King level martial master in the Mo clan. He was also Mo Qing Wu's guardian and guide; so, of course, he recognized these talents! These guys were potential future allies of the Mo clan; not recognizing them was not an option!

While these second young masters did not have the right to be heirs, they only needed to maintain their second young master positions and they would become important people in their clans in the future!

Chapter 163: Cousins

Normally, characters like these were called “guardian angels” of the clans! While they did not have the chance to be the center of power, they were nurtured by the clans at all costs!

In other words, these people would be the ones at the battlefronts for the clans in the future! These were the future fighters and elders of the clans.

Such important characters, if Mo Cheng Yu did not know them... that would be a joke!

The five were working with full force when they suddenly got an abnormal feeling. The moment they turned around, they immediately saw a middle aged man with a shocked face and a gaping mouth. The same thought came to their minds: Why is this King level master from the Mo clan here?

“Why are you here?” All six mouths spoke at the same time, said the same thing, and closed their mouths at the same time. This was a headscratcher.

“I found them and brought them back here to be nurtured! At the time, one old and one young were homeless so I gave them food and a roof over their heads!” Chu Yang held Mo Qing Wu in one arm and stepped out.

“Homeless?” Ji Mo and the rest sounded as if their jaws were dislocated. A King level master of the Mo clan is homeless?

Luo Ke Di was eyeing Mo Cheng Yu with a faint trace of hostility. While there was no open fuel between the Luo clan and the Mo clan, and they had always treated each other with due decorum, there was an endless underlying friction between them.

It was because these two clans were located too close to each other...

There were two clans within a five hundred mile radius. To the

Luo clan and the Mo clan, this was like having a bone stuck in their throats. But time and time again, they could not do anything to each other with their given strength…

At this moment, Mo Qing Wu pushed from Chu Yang arm and jumped down. She cried with joy, “Brother Ji Mo…”

Ji Mo was shocked. He rubbed his eyes and spoke with disbelief, “Xiao Wu? Why are you here?”

Mo Qing Wu laughed and hastily ran forward. Ji Mo picked her up with one arm and spoke with indescribable joy. As he was talking to Xiao Wu, Ji Mo suddenly felt fierce and evil gaze felt upon him!

Right after, Chu Yang had rushed forth and grabbed Mo Qing Wu from his arm. Then he asked with the most unfriendly voice, “Do you know each other?”

Ji Mo was furious! They were just reunited after a very long time and this punk robbed her from him. He glared at Chu Yang and said, “My mother is her aunt; do you think we know each other?”

“Ah… so that’s it!” Chu Yang immediately ceased his jealous rampage and said, “That’s okay, then!”

Then he scratched his head and placed Mo Qing Wu back on the ground with an embarrassed grin.

However, he still had some doubts: Ji Mo’s mother is a concubine… He was born from a concubine, but she is also Mo Qing Wu’s aunt; that makes her a lady. How could the sister of the Mo clan’s leader be a concubine of the Ji clan’s leader?

This is a little unbelievable… is there something hidden behind this? Chu Yang thought to himself.

During this time, Mo Cheng Yu was explaining why he was staying here.

After hearing this, Ji Mo had cold sweats all over his body. He

walked toward Chu Yang and bowed. With a very sincere voice, he said, “Boss, thank you for saving my little cousin!”

“It should be done... Hahaha...” Chu Yang was in an extremely good mood.

“What did you just call him? He is your boss?” Mo Cheng Yu’s eyes widened as he pointed to Chu Yang and asked with disbelief.

“Yes, he is my boss... so what?” Ji Mo’s eyes rolled as he spoke with a malcontent voice. He seemed as if he was going to cry, “Senior Mo, please don’t ask anymore. Don’t I have the look of a subordinate?”

“You are all staying here... to do what?” Mo Cheng Yu remained just as surprised as before.

Ji Mo thought of what happened and sighed. His eyes rolled as he thought to himself: This is not the only thing! If we don’t do well we have to wash stinky socks... But this could be kept secret at least for now. We’re really losing face!

“Good, very good!” Mo Cheng Yu suddenly laughed cheerfully. He pointed to Luo Ke Di and said to Chu Yang, “Kid, let me give that punk some rough training! I will take responsibility if he dies!”

Chu Yang sweated.

Mo Cheng Yu was a King level master; of course he would not want to just sit around for a long time. After some greetings, he immediately walked over the water’s edge to take in fresh air and recover.

Ji Mo was still in a great mood talking with Mo Qing Wu. Every now and then, they laughed seeming to be very chummy. Chu Yang’s gaze grew more fiery; the he looked the more he wanted to beat up Ji Mo.

“Brother Ji Mo! I want have a match with you!” Ji Mo quickly felt regretful. Mo Qing Wu was absolutely cocky as she pointed to

his nose and said, “I want to test out your blade!”

“Blade?” Ji Mo mouth remained opened.

“Yes, blade! Do you still remember last year you brought a sword over to my home? Hmm! You were very impressive then… You chopped my sword and my second elder brother’s sword…” Mo Qing Wu pouted, “I want revenge!”

Ji Mo’s mouth was gaping.He swallowed and looked up at the heavens. He did not know what the best response would be.

“Yes! Yes! Blade match! Teach him a lesson!” Luo Ke Di and Rui Bu Tong incited from the sideline. Dong Wu Shang also waved his fist cheering Mo Qing Wu on.

Such a cute little miss was adored by everyone. Even Luo Ke Di, from an opposing clan, could not feel any negative sentiment toward Mo Qing Wu. The people were all siding with Mo Qing Wu waiting for Ji Mo to act like a fool.

“How can I have a blade match with you?” Ji Mo said cautiously, “Xiao Wu, how about I tell you a story?”

“Sure!” Mo Qing Wu clapped with joy, and everyone else sighed with disappointment. This little child got coerced too easily… It seemed that there would not be a “comedy”…

“It was said that…” Ji Mo only said a few sentences.

“I heard that already!” Mo Qing Wu pouted, “Brother Chu Yang already told me that one.”

“That… this…”

“He told me already!”

“…”

“He told me already!”

Ji Mo broke down…

“Brother Ji Mo, you are so useless!” Mo Qing Wu contemptuously

pointed her little nose at Ji Mo, “You know so few stories, and Brother Chu Yang already told them to me!”

Ji Mo was dumbfounded.

He was so young, how many stories could he know? In truth, it was already very good that he could remember three or four stories. And these stories were especially prepared for Mo Qing Wu. Whenever he met her, he would immediately wanted to offer these because he knew that Mo Qing Wu loved to hear stories.

But he could not imagine that all his stories were now outdated goods...

Ji Mo was crestfallen. He straightened himself up and looked at Chu Yang, “Boss, how are you so well read...”

Chu Yang sighed sympathetically suddenly feeling bad for Ji Mo; they were on the same boat. He thought to himself: How am I so well read? You will have to ask your cousin!

“Brother Ji Mo, do you have any other stories?” Mo Qing Wu tugged Ji Mo’s hand.

Seeing such situation, Chu Yang immediately turned and walked away.

Ji Mo helplessly put out his hands, “No, I don’t have any more...”

“I want to match blades with you!” Mo Qing Wu shouted angrily, even more imposing than before.

Ji Mo staggered and almost fell to the ground, “Xiao Wu, this... a blade match is no joking matter...”

“Then you better tell me a story right now!”

“I am out of stories...” Ji Mo anxiously jumped toward Gu Du Xing and Luo Ke Di and kowtowed them repeatedly, “Big brothers, please help! This is a Jiang Hu emergency... Tell... tell a story. Aah...”

“Never!” Gu Du Xing and company tried to hold back their

laugher. They did not hide the fact that they all wanted to see him as a laughingstock.

“You must match blades with me!” Mo Qing Wu would not be appeased.

“A blade match, would that be okay?” Ji Mo asked, looking hopeful.

“Um, I think it will be okay!” Mo Qing Wu bit her nails as she thought carefully before answering with certainty.

“Good! I will match blades with you!” Ji Mo had a tragic martyr’s expression as he grabbed the sword. He thought to himself: It would be fine if I just make contact a few times and declare that she is the winner.

Little did he know… Mo Qing Wu jumped up in a flash holding a tattered scabbard and swung.

A red glow blurred Ji Mo’s vision… In shock, he was unable to control the force of the saber, and could only raise his sword to block…

Crack!

Ji Mo froze! Luo Ke Di froze! Gu Du Xing froze…

Everyone froze.

Both sword and sheath in Ji Mo’s hand had turned into four pieces!

“What kind of saber is this?” Ji Mo’s head was covered in cold sweat. He looked at the red glowing saber in alarm.

“Brother Chu Yang gave it to me!” Mo Qing Wu proudly held onto the saber, “Brother Ji Mo, would you dare chop my sword and second elder brother’s sword again?”

It seems that Xiao Wu and Second Elder Brother Mo Tian Ji have great affection for each other… Chu Yang thought.

“No, no, I would not dare!” Ji Mo wiped his sweat, but the feeling of fear was still lingering, “Luckily, I used Luo Ke Di’s sword. Otherwise, if I had used my sword, it would have bad…”

“What? My sword?” Luo Ke Di was laughing heartily over the misery of another when the situation suddenly took an unexpected turn. Ji Mo used my sword?

In a flash, his face became contorted. As if his heart was stabbed, he roared, “Ji Mo! You dead pig; you are a rogue who deserves to be slashed ten thousand times! I… I… my sword! Aaah…”

Ji Mo quickly ran. He looked back and said, “Isn’t it just a sword? Look at yourself; you look like a bear…”

“This is a birthday gift from my fiancée!” Luo Ke Di was filled with anger as he jumped forward. One gave chase and the other one tried to escape. In a moment, they had circled the tiny island a few times.

“Xiao Wu, come here!” Chu Yang’s face became serious.

“Brother Chu Yang…” Little Loli became anxious and bit her nails.

“From now on, you cannot do that to your family. Understood?” Chu Yang said gravely, “You see, Brother Luo is hurt!” He suddenly thought about how Mo Qing Wu kept finding people to match blades in the previous life. It was only matter of time that it would bring trouble.

“Brother Chu Yang, I won’t…” Mo Qing Wu eyes became teary and she started crying.

“It’s okay; just remember!” Chu Yang coaxed.

The little Loli energetically nodded. Then she looked up and asked, “Brother Chu Yang, what is a fiancée?”

Chapter 164: I want true martial brothers

“A fiancée is…” Chu Yang said half a sentence and became muted. What is a fiancée? A fiancée… what can she be? How do I best answer this question?

“Hey Du Xing, what is a fiancée?” Chu Yang turned and asked.

“This…” Gu Du Xing scratched his head and answered with embarrassment, “This is really hard to say! Hey, Dong Wu Shang, what’s a fiancée?”

Dong Wu Shang was caught by surprise and countered, “What do you think a fiancée is?”

“What is a fiancée, Brother Chu Yang?” Mo Qing Wu asked anxiously.

“A fiancée is…” Seeing how none of the other guys could answer, Chu Yang had to use his own brain and replied, “A fiancée is a future wife! Yes, that’s it!”

“Future wife?” Mo Qing Wu blinked with confusion.

“This is like…” Chu Yang’s forehead was sweating beads. His arms started flailing everywhere and he suddenly became very animated. He got an idea, “Like your father and mother. Ah, when your mother was young, she was your father’s fiancée. Understood?”

“So it is like that…” Mo Qing Wu was suddenly clearheaded, “Does having a fiancée means being together always?”

“Yes, yes. In the future, they would be together always!” Chu Yang wiped off his sweat and replied, “Plus, a fiancée should be taken care of, and not made angry or sad. In short, your fiancé is the person who loves you most and treats you best.”

“That good? Brother Chu Yang, can I be your fiancée?” Mo Qing Wu asked shyly. He two rows of lashes fluttered as she looked at

Chu Yang dreamily.

“Ack, ack!!!” Gu Du Xing was overhearing and snickering on the side when he suddenly choked and started coughing. Rui Bu Tong and Dong Wu Shang broke out into loud laughter.

“Okay! Good, good!” Chu Yang was elated as he replied, “From now on Xiao Wu is my fiancée... Hahaha, I am here fiancé... Hahaha!!!”

Mo Qing Wu laughed with satisfaction, “You are not allow to make me angry. You are not allow to make me sad. If you have yummy food, you have to feed me. If there is any fun things, I have to be the first to play. If there is a good story, you have to tell it to me first.

Cold sweat poured out of Chu Yang’s head. So this was why the little Loli chose him...

After the laughter, Dong Wu Shang suddenly asked, “Little sister, can I look at your saber?” Dong Wu Shang was from a clan that used sabers after all. So he was especially passionate about sabers.

Gu Du Xing, Ji Mo, and Luo Ke Di refrained from asking when they saw the saber, because they did want to be rude and ask about its origin.

While Luo Ke Di’s clan was an enemy of the Mo clan, he could have pretended to not have seen Mo Qing Wu’s saber... But Ji Mo understood his thoughts and intentionally led him away.

Otherwise, with such a precious saber in front of his eyes, how could the two second young masters have controlled their curiosity?

In their minds, they were currently starting to view Chu Yang as their boss!

“This saber is Brother Chu Yang’s gift to me!”

This statement from Mo Qing Wu made Luo Ke Di abandon any

trace of the thoughts that he originally had in his head.

If this was a gift from the boss, and he sold out this secret, would he not be betraying the boss? That was an absolute offense in Jiang Hu!

However, Dong Wu Shang had long been under the influence of his clan and loved sabers to the point of obsession. With such an exceptional saber in front of his face and not being able to hold it for even a little was truly excruciating!

He had been restraining himself for a while and could no longer hang on; he started begging.

Mo Qing Wu turned to Chu Yang and asked, “Brother Chu Yang, should I let him see it?”

“Let him!” Chu Yang smiled internally. Dong Wu Shang only needs to see this saber; then he could never leave in this lifetime! He is just like Gu Du Xing; they are obsessed with these things.

Mo Qing Wu handed the saber over to Dong Wu Shang. He became so excited, his face reddened. He wiped the blade with his sleeves. Seeing that there was still some dust, he immediately rushed over to the lakeside and washed it clean. Then he hastily rushed back.

Seeing that he took a long time, Mo Qing Wu became angry and almost took the saber back from him.

With Dreaming of a Gentle Dance Saber in his hand, Dong Wu Shang carefully held it with a possessed look in his eyes. He gently caressed the saber; then he swung it a few times. He looked at the saber as if looking at a lover that he had longed for days and night.

A little later, Dong Wu Shang softly sighed. He turned the blade and made a light cut on his arm. Blood immediately spilled out. Mo Qing Wu screamed in terror.

Dong Wu Shang’s countenance was in reverence as he let one drop of blood fall on the blade. He raised the saber up and the drop

of blood easily slid down; when it got near the hilt a red light flashed. The saber was turned downward and the drop of blood slid down to the tip of the saber.

The blood gently dropped down to the ground. The saber blade glistened without any residual blood on it.

Dong Wu Shang looked up and let out a long sigh, “Truly a masterpiece of a saber; incomparable!”

This ritual of watering a saber with fresh blood was the ultimate show of respect a saber master has for a saber! It was also the most ancient ritual in saber arts.

“Wu Shang, you like?” Chu Yang smiled and asked.

“I love it as much as my own life!” Dong Wu Shang answered with an annoyed sigh. Then he reluctantly handed the Saber back to Mo Qing Wu. Seeing Mo Qing Wu carelessly put the saber back into the tattered scabbard, Dong Wu Shang’s face twitched in agony.

“If you can stay here, I will find you a saber no less than this!” Chu Yang said casually.

“Really?” Dong Wu Shang stood up and stared at Chu Yang, “You mean this?”

“I, Chu Yang, keep my words above all else!” Chu Yang replied seriously.

“Boss!” Dong Wu Shang face flushed with excitement. He knelt down and cried, “Boss... please, you must find me another one! After seeing this saber... I will not be able to sleep at night!!!”

Chu Yang was scared! He never thought Dong Wu Shang would react so fiercely like this!

“You don’t use sabers so you don’t know how important they are to a saber master!” Dong Wu Shang proudly looked up, “Sabers are the king of all weapons! The first metal weapon in history was the

saber! Sabers are the ancestors of all weapons!”

“Sabers rank supreme! In term of weapons, the saber is always number one!” Dong Wu Shang gaze became heated, “A saber master is most distinguished! In all of history, no one has ever been able to reach the peak of saber arts! Sabers remain without a peak! You will never understand the allure of a precious saber to a saber master. To a saber master, the saber is his entire world! The saber is his father, mother, wife, lover, and child; it is his blood, his soul!!!”

“I, Dong Wu Shang, since I was young, has vowed that I would be the first person to bring saber arts to its peak!” Dong Wu Shang continued fanatically, “But to find a saber that could join with my life, my soul, is as difficult as climbing to heaven!”

Dong Wu Shang said, “If you can find me a saber like this, my life is yours!”

“Don’t talk so seriously; your life?” Chu Yang replied solemnly, “What I lack are martial brothers, not subordinates. I need martial brothers to reach the top with me. Then we can control the rain and wind and write our names in history! I hope that I will always have good martial brothers in my life, never parting, working together, and sharing a destiny!”

Chu Yang said dreamily, “I hope to have the kind of martial brothers that would be willing to sacrifice without any regret! This is true brotherhood!”

“I also hope that when I stand at the top, my martial brother would be there so I would not be alone. And even more, I hope that when any of my martial brothers stand at the top, I would be keep him from being lonely as well!”

“I hope that when I am down, helpless, and destitute, there will always be martial brothers by my side!”

Chu Yang was speaking really sincerely. There was

determination and yearning in his voice. In his previous life, what Chu Yang lacked most was affection! This was also what he wanted most in this life!

“I hope to build a glorious life with all of you and leave an eternal legend! I hope that a hundred thousand years later, our legend would still be told. You will be in my legend, and I will be in yours! And we will never let down the word brother!”

When Chu Yang was speaking these words, Gu Du Xing and Rui Bu Tong was standing still next to him; their eyes shined!

If I become a legend later, I hope you be in it!

If you become a legend later, I hope I will be in it!

Never let down the word brother!

Never shall we let down the word brother!

Chu Yang sighed. With eyes full of burden, he looked toward the faint horizon. After a long time, he let out an breath.

“Martial brothers are built from hard work. Together through thick and thin, with hard work, we will head forward together! That way, we will be tough as steel with a love as strong as stone!”

“I did not understand your intention in creating Heavenly Armament Pavilion, but I am starting to.” Gu Du Xing said slowly.

“Haha, people of all kinds flocking together, living together.” Chu Yang quietly replied, “People often say, when I am successful, and you are a beggar, you are still my brother.”

Chu Yang shook his head and smiled, “But this is only a saying. You should know, when you are successful and your martial brother is still a poor and struggling, you are no martial brother of his. In other words, you might still think of him as a martial brother, but in reality, you are not worthy of being a martial brother to this poor person! Not the other way around!”

“When you are working hard, your martial brother is working

hard as well. When you become successful, he stays poor as before. Why didn't you help him a little before then? You would be just lending him a hand without using too much effort; but you did not bother. So, what is the point of you thinking of him as a martial brother? On the contrary, your martial brother becomes a tool for you to show off your wealth and success. Can such a person be called a martial brother?"

Chu Yang answered himself, "Being martial brothers is sharing hardship; being martial is sharing success! You must go through hardship and success together to be real martial brothers!"

"This is how I think!" Chu Yang continued, "Currently, I am still not worthy of being your martial brother, and you are still not worthy of being my martial brothers. Therefore, I hope that we will work together from now on, and build this brotherhood together!"

Chapter 165: I hope to have...

The night was long and quiet as white clouds gently floated by in the sky. A gust of wind quietly blew past them. Under the moonlight, Chu Yang's youthful face did not cease to change. A faint smile appeared on his face as he quietly spoke.

The other young men were sitting around him wrapping their arms around their knees and listening quietly. At some point, Ji Mo and Luo Ke Di had also returned and were quietly sitting on the edge of the group. Everyone's eyes were shining brightly.

The surface of Emerald Flow Lake gently moved as waves continued to lap against the lakeshore, an action time immemorial, meaningful but warm, ordinary but eternal.

"Martial brothers are formed from blood and tears, not just words!"

"Finding good martial brothers is more difficult than finding a good wife!" Chu Yang smiled gently, "I hope I will have this. What about you guys?"

"We also want to have this!" The young men said in unison, and smiled with great anticipation.

This night, everyone felt it was incredibly beautiful.

They all sat quietly. Mo Qing Wu had conveniently sat on Chu Yang's lap without stirring. No one had the heart to break such a beautiful atmosphere filled with hopes and dreams.

Mo Cheng Yu was quietly sitting on the roof. He heard Chu Yang's quiet voice and could not help but smile from the depth of this heart. He remembered when he was young and was also cultivating with his own martial brothers.

Side by side, they took their steps in Jiang Hu. They marched together, got drunk together, made mischief together... did everything together...

Mo Cheng Yu sighed softly. How many years has it been? How many people have disappeared? How many are still around?

At this moment, Mo Cheng Yu came to a sudden decision. Once he returned, he would definitely seek out his martial brothers and eat and drink until they were satisfied. That would be good... peacefully reminiscing about old memories.

A long time later, Dong Wu Shang suddenly laughed loudly. He pushed himself up and jumped to the little court they had just finished fixing up. Saber light shined, Black Saber clan's sharp and fierce moves came out in slashes. He was pressuring himself.

The others looked at each other and chuckled. They launched their own moves, each one looking extremely fierce in the eyes of the others.

If they wanted to become martial brothers, then they could not be any less than them. Each did not want their martial brothers to be at peak while they were the ones to look up from the foot of the mountain.

Chu Yang looked at them and smiled; there was a feeling that rose up in his dantian and flooding toward Nine Tribulations Sword.

"You finally understand what brotherhood is all about!" The sword spirit's voice gently rose up in his head, seeming to carry with it a trace of happiness, "While it is still a little one sided, but in a world so lacking in affection, you just had a taste of the meaning of brotherhood. I will tell you something today: Love is the most important part of cultivation!"

"Love is the most important part..." Chu Yang softly repeated, as if understanding something a little more.

In his dantian, Nine Tribulations Sword rose up fiercely. A strange aura suddenly shot into Chu Yang's meridians. The sword spirit was somewhat happy and spoke with an easygoing voice,

“You have earned a reward today. I will no longer constrain your advancement in cultivation. Brotherhood is also a kind of enlightenment in martial arts. You, have learned enough about that!”

In the court, five people were exhausted, but they remained stubborn and fierce. They refused to fall and used sheer physical power in hope of achieving an extreme breakthrough.

Suddenly, there was a faint fluctuation that reverberated through the court.

Given that they were heavenly talents of the great clans, they naturally were very well acquainted with such a phenomenon. Because they, themselves, had went through it many times. Each time, they were proud with a great sense of accomplishment.

Everyone looked about trying to find the origin of the aura.

That aura calmly moved a little, then it suddenly became fierce like ten thousand galloping steeds, boiling and roaring.

Everyone turned in surprise.

They only saw Chu Yang hold Mo Qing Wu in his lap. His face was calm as he sat peacefully. That all-encompassing aura was fiercely pouring out of his body.

Breakthrough?

Chu Yang broke through?

Everyone’s mouth fell open in shock; the only exception was Gu Du Xing, who was not the least bit surprised. He only smiled.

This weirdo, today’s events must have affected his state of mind. I can’t believe he managed to break through so fast.

The intense and thick aura suddenly disappeared. Fifth grade Martial Artist!

Ji Mo and Dong Wu Shang could not help but sigh. Fifth grade Martial Artist. Who knows how long he has been stuck there? A

breakthrough is no big deal.

Everyone looked at each other and continued training.

However, not long after, that shocking aura once again faintly flooded the court. Ji Mo's group was now in shock! Who is it this time? Chu Yang just broke through; surely it cannot be him!

But after doing a round of searching, they discovered: It was Chu Yang!

It's Chu Yang again!

Ji Mo's mouth opened wide; after a while, he managed to spit out, "F*!"

Luo Ke Di and Dong Wu Shang also became dazed. Is breaking through really that easy? To breakthrough each grade, you need a lot of power. And such power needs be accumulated over time!

The faint aura grew gradually grew clearer. Finally, it exploded with a sound that seemed to resonate loudly in people's mind.

With this noise, everyone's jaws seemed to have dropped to the ground.Another breakthrough... breakthrough again!!

Sixth grade Martial Artist!

On the roof, Mo Cheng Yu could not help but smile wryly. He was a King level master; so while he was currently seriously injured and was still healing, his senses were still more keen than those below. From the moment Chu Yang broke through fifth grade Martial Artist, he had been paying attention. After that, he immediately found that Chu Yang only stopped at low-level of fifth grade Martial Artist for a moment.

After that, his body gradually grew stronger, and he advanced to mid-level of fifth grade. At that moment, Mo Cheng Yu was already stunned.

But Chu Yang did not stop there; he continued to advance. As time passed, he was at top-level, and, a little after, he reached the

peak. Finally, he did not stop but broke through sixth grade!

Monster...!!!

Looking at Chu Yang break through like that, Mo Cheng Yu felt even more anxious.

“Don’t be so surprised; the boss is always like that! Each time he breaks through, he does it continuously!!” Gu Du Xing smile mockingly and spoke.

After Gu Du Xing finished speaking, everyone regained their composure and continued to torture their bodies to their extreme limits.

After about an hour passed by, that faint shocking aura suddenly burst out once again.

“Foo... foo...” Ji Mo once again searched all around and once again discovered it was Chu Yang. He finally fell to the ground. His whole body shook, his mouth twitched, and his eyes rolled as he spoke with a trembling voice, “This... motherf*... this... motherf*...!!!”

As for Dong Wu Shang, he was tongue tied. Looking at Chu Yang, his mind was no longer able to process what was going on.

As for Luo Ke Di, his eyes rolled and his jaw dropped...

He broke through again...

He continuously broke through three grades in a row. Moreover, he seemed to show signs of continuing on to the peak of seventh grade before stopping.

On the roof, Mo Cheng Yu almost stumbled to the ground.

He consecutively broke through three grades! If a person ate all of the all the numerous precious herbal elixirs and maintained control so that he would not get killed such a powerful force, then he would surely be able to do that.

But through cultivation, taking each steady step and breaking

through like this, it was the first time he witnessed such a thing!

Moreover... when this kid broke through, he was holding a little figure in his arms: Mo Qing Wu!

For normal people, when they broke through, a little disturbance would be enough for things to go wrong. In fact, the sound of a dog barking would have a serious side effect. This “grandfather” turned everything upside down, and broke through three grades while holding a little girl!

While Mo Qing Wu was very well-behaved and was sitting quietly without moving when Chu Yang broke through, she was still a living, breathing human being!

“Well... Ji Mo, with your qualifications, you are considered a heavenly talent in the Ji clan. I heard that year your quickest speed was breaking through one grade in three days, correct?” Gu Du Xing’s icy countenance showed a mysterious expression. It was the first time he smiled and spoke to Ji Mo with an extremely enthusiastic tone like this.

“Get lost! Thank you for your damned concern!” Ji Mo yelled furiously. In front of him was a freak who broke through three grades in less than an hour; how could he boast that he broke through one grade in three days...

Gu Du Xing, you are really a genius when it comes to mockery...!!

“From now on, I will fight to the death with anyone who boasts that I am a heavenly talent!” Ji Mo held his covered his face and sprawled on the ground; his legs curled up to his chest in a fetal position.

He was so embarrassed he could die!

In front of this Chu Yang, any kind of genius would just be embarrassed and envious.

“Brother Chu Yang, you are finally done with your breakthroughs?” Seeing Chu Yang opened his eyes, curled up on

Chu Yang's lap, Mo Qing Wu looked up and asked shakily.

"Uh, I'm done!" Chu Yang smiled calmly and gently stroked her hair.

"I was afraid to bother you, and did not dare to move!" Mo Qing Wu pouted, "My stomach hurts, my legs ache, my arms are uncomfortable, even my butt is sore!!!"

"Ah... Let me massage them for you!!" Chu Yang smiled coaxingly.

"Yes! Here... here... massage gently, here, here as well!" Mo Wu continued to instruct Chu Yang while feeling very pleased. She suddenly giggled, "That tickles!!"

Finally, all of her arms and legs were massaged. The little Loli suddenly stood up and lay over Chu Yang's lap and pointed to her butt, "This hurts too..."

Chu Yang started sweating profusely!

Massaging her butt, Chu Yang suddenly had a different vision in his head.

If seven or eight years from now, she asks me to massage like this, then...

With such throats, Chu Yang's throat suddenly became dry, and he silently cursed himself: Animal! You actually have this kind of thought! You will be struck down by the heavens!

"Brother Chu Yang, that's enough!" Mo Qing Wu said in annoyance, "What are you holding that's poking my stomach like this? It hurts!"

Then she reached out in an attempt to grab it...

"Ah... cough cough..." Chu Yang hastily put the little Loli aside and stood up. He laughed loudly and walked into the court, "How is everyone's training coming along? Ah, why are you looking at me like that? Did a flower grow on my face?"

Everyone stared at him bitterly and then groaned helplessly.

Ji Mo said with a funeral face, “We were fooled…”

Luo Ke Di nodded in agreement, “We were fooled…”

Chapter 166: Kong Shang Xin in action

They all remembered that Chu Yang had once made a bet with them that he could go from a fourth grade Martial Artist to a Martial Master within one month. At the time, they thought he was joking. But now, they all thought: Would one month be too long?

This punk broke through three grades in an hour. He is now already at seventh grade!

Thinking about that, the four could not help but feel dejected.

“Don’t look at me like that; I am shy!” Chu Yang laughed so hard that his body shook as he walked, “Time to go to sleep; breakthroughs are truly refreshing!”

Behind him, four people, with their eight eyes, looked at each other.Breakthroughs are truly refreshing? Could they ever be uncomfortable? If we can breakthrough like that, we would be dying from joy.

“Oh hey, Dong Wu Shang! If you are the first person to break through, I will immediately give you the saber of your dreams!” Chu Yang suddenly stopped walking; with his back still turned toward Dong Wu Shang, he said solemnly, “But you have to find the Black Iron needed to make a Black Saber!”

“No problem!” Dong Wu Shang’s whole body shot up with excitement, “I will definitely break through this month, and then I will go home and get some for you!”

“Stop! First to break through? Dong Wu Shang, who do you think you are?” Luo Ke Di, Ji Mo and Rui Bu Tong glared at him and asked with a look of hostility.

“Ah… I feel as if I am about to break through!” Gu Du Xing stood on the side and suddenly spoke up with a strange expression on his face.

The four simultaneously vomited blood, “You, you will…”

“Really!” Gu Du Xing sincerely nodded, “It looks like I will have to go in closed door cultivation! Everyone, I am so sorry! It looks like no one will be in the position to compete with me for this second elder martial brother title!”

Then he casually waltzed away.

Behind him, Ji Mo screamed until his voice was hoarse, “Gu Du Xing! You are not human! You just broke through seventh grade Sword Great Master…!!!” (TLN: Actually said Martial instead of Sword here and next line. I don’t know why the author distinguish them before, but not now. Perhaps, Martial is more general like biology vs marine biology?)

Gu Du Xing suddenly paused and replied regrettably, “I have to correct your mistake; it has been half a month since I broke through seventh grade Sword Great Master!!!”

Ji Mo cried but no tears came; he swatted on the ground, completely traumatized!

Both of them were sixth grade Great Masters with equal strength. Currently, Gu Du Xing was already preparing to break through to eight grade? This was unbearable for Ji Mo’s large ego…

During the night, Ji Mo and company remained restless. At some point, an abnormal aura emanated from Gu Du Xing’s room. All four people were in tears; they wanted to cry out, “He really broke through!”

Chu Yang slept soundly that night.

Around midnight! A dozen shadows moved toward the prison like clouds in the wind.

Golden Horse Riders Department had finally made its move.

Kong Shang Xin had told them before leaving, “Make trouble! Make maximum trouble! Even if you cannot save Number One this

time, you must turn everything upside down. I will go to Bu Tian Pavilion to check for any movements! Once word gets out, King of Hell Chu will, of course, come to see the situation. That will be the opportunity for me to kill that King of Hell Chu!”

King of Hell Chu’s death is much more important than Number One’s situation. Number One is a spy who got captured, so his outlook is not that great anyway.

It would be a waste to rescue a disabled person like him anyway!!!

At least he provides an excuse to kill King of Hell Chu; that could be considered Number One’s contribution.

This King of Hell Chu always hides. Getting our own people close to him is impossible. The only method left is to scare the snake out of its hole.

It was not that Kong Shang Xin never thought about directly attacking Bu Tian Pavilion and killing King of Hell Chu! But without knowing where King of Hell Chu would be, how could Kong Shang Xin kill him? King of Hell Chu would probably escape at the first sign of trouble. Plus, King of Hell Chu would only need to take off his mask to become unrecognizable.

This move to scare the snake out was not exactly good. Therefore, Kong Shang Xin used the fake excuse of rescuing Number One to kill King of Hell Chu!

The prime minister had said to avoid King of Hell Chu at all costs, but he also once said that if a good opportunity arrives, then take a chance! Kong Shang Xin understood this very well.

Tightly guarded Iron Cloud prison.

The traps had been set a day ago. From then to today had not been that long; but calculating the time when Great Zhao started making their move until now, Great Zhao’s force had traveled at great speed to get to Iron Cloud.

Starting today, everything was in a state of war!

A great battle could break out at any moment!

While they did not know who the prisoner locked inside was, they were certain about one thing: This person was certain an important character of Great Zhao. Otherwise, King of Hell Chu would have never bothered putting in so much effort; and the prince would not have fully cooperated like this!

Thinking of this, all of the guards became even more cautious. While there were countless guards, who would dare to sleep? If they fell asleep for a little, there would be no guarantee that their heads would still be attached to their necks in morning!

Right at the moment everyone was vigilant, the great battle finally came.

Without any warning, the largest torch at the highest guard tower suddenly died out. Immediately after, all of the torches in every directions died out as well!

The prison quickly drowned into the darkness of the night!

“The enemies are attacking!” A sharp voice rang out anticipating the horror to come in the mournful darkness.

With a sudden unified cry, all of the martial masters and soldiers waiting in the Iron Cloud prison poured out and quickly took up all the key locations. But the night remained quiet without half a sound. Everyone was tense! The enemies had arrived, but where were they hiding?

Each person had their blade drawn and was on guard!

In the shadow, three Command Horse Riders looked at each other. In this mission, the three of them led a team; Kong Shang Xin was in a secret location and was not participating.

“Look at their defense; the door of the left room is very carefully guarded!” One of the Command Horse Riders whispered, “Given the layout of this prison, there is likely many traps. This will be troublesome!”

All three nodded at the same time.

The incident earlier was caused by them. When people are caught off guard, they show their true selves and pay attention to what was most important to them.

Currently, the three Command Horse Rides made use of this trait. They used their opponents' reactions to determine where Number One was being held. Finally, they would concentrate their forces at this key position to achieve their purpose.

Only those who were seasoned used such methods!

"Act according to our established plan!" One of the Command Horse Riders quickly issued an order.

In the silence of the night, there was suddenly three horses galloping quickly toward the prison. The wind and hoof beats ripped through the silence.

"Who goes there? Halt!" Someone yelled out at the gate. The atmosphere returned to silence and countless archers aimed at their target. The arrowheads shined so brightly that the night glowed in a faint and mysterious manner.

"Who is in charge tonight? Come out and answer!" All three horses stopped; the two people in the back wore the uniforms of the prince's bodyguards while the person in front was dress in ordinary attire. His eyes were sharp like those of a hawk as he stared at the main door of the prison.

In the darkness, a person asked with a low voice, "Thunder pushing forth?"

"Iron Cloud forever!" The new arrival immediately replied without any hesitation; then he asked, "Is it Commander Li or Commander Zhou?"

"It's Li! Were you sent from the prince's manor? You are unfamiliar!" Within the great door, a person asked suspiciously.

“You don’t need to know who I am! The prince has sent words that Great Zhao will make their move tonight, and their forces will be extremely powerful! The prince is worried that there will be trouble at the prison and sent me as a precaution!” The horse rider yelled coldly, “Open the door!”

“The prison is a high priority area; ordinary people cannot enter or leave! Even if you say it’s a verbal command, it’s still the same!” Commander Li said severely, “If you want to enter the prison, you need the prince’s authorization or Minister Chu’s seal.”

“I don’t have Minister Chu’s seal, but I do have the prince’s authorization!” The person sneered and pulled out an envelope.

“Bring it here!” Commander Li remained on guard.

The other person’s eyes flashed as he said, “Catch!”

He tossed the envelope over. The thin paper unexpectedly spun in the air; it made a whistling sound as it flew for five or six yards before landing in front of the door.

The door still did not open, but a sound was heard as the steel chains along the wall were lowered. A hand grabbed the envelope, and the chains were pulled up.

As the chains were pulled half way up, a saber flashed and severed them. At the same time, seven or eight dark shadows appeared from all directions. Within seconds, five or six people appeared at the front.

The sound of bows being released was heard, and arrows rained down in front of the door.

Iron Cloud’s signature weapon, second to none! The prison guards reacted right away without any hesitation. While this was unexpected, there was no chaos!

But five people made it past and began killing!

The three people on horseback were not to be outdone. They

jumped out and were in front of the five in a flash!

Inside and out were filled with loud noises.

The sharp sounds of horns stirred up the prison! Countless soldiers gathered from all directions. The surrounding barracks also sounded their horns. Only a little after, thundering hooves were heard from all directions as they approached the prison!

The five people rushed into the room and immediately discovered that there was a large pit and under it was a large net filled with shining sharp blades!

This was the only entrance to the left of the prison. From this point on, there was great fortification with many meticulous traps. The five people in black seemed helpless as they kept close to the wall for fear of dropping down and getting cut into pieces.

At the same time, cross bows were aimed at them from all directions. One wrong move, then their lives would be taken.

This situation was extremely bad for the men in black! If they continued, not only would they would not be able to go any further, they would probably also have to leave their bodies here.

Chapter 167: Prison raid

Outside, the battle raged on and Iron Cloud was on the weaker side. Three martial masters fought with five people; their strength was far weaker. They were losing the moment they started fighting.

“Bam!” a guard in Iron Cloud uniform was palmed in the chest; he immediately spat out blood and rolled out like a ball. One of the men in black grinned and went after him. He kicked him a few times but did not kill him. He was just torturing him for fun. The guard cried out painfully, and cursed him in anger. He was once again kicked as if he was punching bag, unable to defend himself.

Inside the situation became somewhat stabilized, and everyone breathed a sigh of relief; but their emotions were stirred when they witnessed the scene outside.

A middle-aged person in plain clothes was blocking the attackers and calling out angrily, “Commander Li! You absolutely cannot open the door! They are trying to provoke you! The moment you open the door, you will give them their opportunity! We are not afraid of dying. The prison is important; it cannot be lost.”

His speech was hasty and his tone was strong. Together with the fresh blood pouring from his body, they created a heroic appearance!

Inside the door, the soldiers looked anxiously at the brutal fighting outside; their eyes on the verge of tears. Among them was a big man who turned away. He punched the wall hard and cried out, “Good man!”

At this moment, the sounds of footsteps rang out loudly. The orderly Iron Cloud military had finally arrived.

“Pull! ...Fire!!!”

A shout rang out. Five black-outfitted people at the wall flew up

at the same time. Arrows rained down in the direction of the five. At this very moment, a person radiating sword light flew towards them. He slashed all the arrows and yelled loudly, “Leave quickly! I will hold them off!”

Without turning back, the five jumped higher. One of them angrily punched the middle-aged man and kicked the guard so that his body flew up and dropped back to the ground once again. Fresh blood spilled furiously.

Then all the men in black disappeared from the scene in a flash.

The military had finally surrounded the prison.

In the end, there were only three badly beaten bodies on the ground.

“Quickly, bring them in. Let’s see if we can still save them!” Commander Li screamed at the top of his lungs.

The soldiers hastily laid down clothes and carefully carried the three people in. They were all unconscious and bleeding... The door only cracked open enough for two people to squeeze through at a time. The soldiers carried the injured in.

Just then, misfortune emerged!

The three people being carried in suddenly jumped up and attacked the soldiers, slitting their throats; blood spilled and bodies fell.

One of them palmed the door making it open wide.

Bam...!!! The sound was so loud and fierce that the shock made the ears of the soldiers bled and their eyes blurry.

The three entered and killed anyone they encountered like crazed tigers.

“Quick... drop the heavy door!” Commander Li yelled out with regret. He did not expect the enemy to be so treacherous and use this type of scheme.

“Too late!” A middle-aged man in fine attire laughed. He ran past the door and, with his right hand, pulled out a strange looking saber from behind his back. Then he jumped up and sliced a large hole in the metal net. The other two each held one side and pulled it out with all their might.

The metal net creaked loudly and was ripped into two. The two halves were tossed at the advancing soldiers.

Loud screams rang out once again. Fifteen shadows like fairies from the heavens jumped into that large opening in the net.

As it turned out, they never left. It was all part of the ruse.

Furthermore, they did not show their full strength earlier!

Commander Li glared with anger and rushed forth. But he was kicked in the chest by one of the people in black and flew out with saber still in hand. A few yards out, his large body suddenly split into multiple pieces in midair.

“Third, take people with you to keep them back. I will go in with Second and look around!” One of the people in black shouted.

“Good!” A masked person with a short stature laughed loudly and turned to block the entrance. Six other people in black stood alongside him in a V formation with blades in hands.

This spot was the narrowest. Moreover, there was a bend so arrows could be easily avoided without any worries.

Iron Cloud military continued to pour in.

The other twelve people divided into two groups and went in.

The leader was the most brutal. In a short amount of time, he managed to catch four to five guards. With each one, he only asked one question, “Where is your most recently captured prisoner being held?”

After asking, if they don’t answer he would kill them and moved on to another.

“In... in there... turn left... there will be a solitary cell... have mercy...”

When he got to the seventeenth person, he finally made the person shakily talk.

“Very good!” The person in black icily cut off his head and then spoke casually, “As a repayment, I am letting you die comfortably!”

Then he jumped out as quick as a whirlwind and shouted, “Over here!”

The six on the other side rushed toward them. The twelve people was like a sharp sword as they shot forth into the depth of the prison.

The number of obstructions on their path gradually increased. Plus, the guards’ cultivation was a few times greater than at other places.

While the twelve were feeling a little tired, they grew happier.

It seemed they had found the right place!

“Be careful!” As they were rushing forward, a person in front called out loudly, and, like a flash, he jumped backward. It turned out that there was suddenly a large pit about two meters wide in front of them.

If he had jumped forward, then he would have made it. But the ones behind him would not all be so lucky. Therefore, instead of quickly running ahead, he backed up to warn his colleagues.

Everyone in Golden Horse Riders Department were very in sync; this much was evident.

Before he even landed, the two walls suddenly burst and a gooey liquid poured out.

“Oil? F*!” The Command Horse Ride leader cursed, “Everyone, jump over quickly!”

All twelve people jumped, but the moment they did, countless

torches were thrown out. Fire burst out behind them. The heat was extremely hot, as if it was cooking their backs!

In front of them, there were endless traps and obstacles. Oil poured out from many places creating a thick layer on the ground.

Ahead, a Command Horse Rider shot out one palm and sent the oil flying as he desperately rushed in.

Suddenly, the three people in front went limp, almost falling to the ground. The ground was so ordinary looking; they did not expect that there was a trap!

The three were terrified. The fire shined brightly and they clearly saw foot prints there. Why did a trap suddenly appear? But before they could think any further, one body had fallen down.

They had fought their way through, and even with their Great Master cultivation, they would take their last breath here. They were out of energy before their body could replenish it; before they could jump up, they had fallen down!

“Bang!”

The passage way was filled with a yellow smoke. From the traps came a mournful cry, “There are many poisons in here... I have been poisoned, you two can walk on me... Hurry!”

Apparently this person had suffered from a highly toxic poison. Even his last words were labored.

The yellow smoke was flooding in; the two men rushed forth with teary eyes. Below them, their colleague was silent...

This poison was truly powerful!

Before they even reached Number One, they had lost one person.

“There are poisons in there! Even aphrodisiac!” One of the people in black called out in terror.

“Vile! King of Hell Chu, you are truly vile!” The eleven remaining people in black cursed. If they were not injured, the poisons would

not contaminate their blood. They could still use their martial power to stop the poisons. They could even use fighting to push the poisons back out.

But that was not the case with aphrodisiac!

All of a sudden, one of the people in black “erected a tall tent.” His face reddened and his eyes were filled with lust.

Aphrodisiac!

Everyone had discovered that the cruelest thing here was not poison, but aphrodisiac! This was too tough to deal with! If they got hit with aphrodisiac here, how would they deal with it?

With an iron crotch, where would they go? Their blood would be boiling.

“Hang on a little longer, we will rescue Number One soon!” The Command Horse Rider leader tried to control his rising “excitement” as he carried his bulginess and rushed forward. But his eyes unconsciously searched the entire prison. F*, why aren’t there any female prisoners...???

Smoke gradually grew thicker...

Within ten meters, left, right, and even above their heads, traps had sprung a dozen times! Each one, very hard to detect and extremely cruel!

Such concentration of traps made the two Command Horse Riders curse endlessly. Whoever set up these traps is a base and vile master! We’re going to rip this scoundrel to pieces!

These are traps? They are a collection of the most vile and cruel thoughts in the world, but ten thousand times more shameless...

The “benefit” of the aphrodisiac manifested at this time...

Chapter 168: Fighting “hard”

Normally these vicious traps should have killed at least two people, and those who remained should have been riddled with injuries. But they were without a scratch. In fact, after they were hit with aphrodisiac, while feeling uncomfortable, their speed greatly increased.

Currently, they were not at the final swelling state that could kill them. So, instead, the aphrodisiac helped increase their fighting strength and helped them get past all the traps that would have been challenging normally.

The phrase “eating aphrodisiac makes a fierce tiger” was fully reflected here. More accurately, they were so fierce, it was terrifying. But they did not take it on their own accord; they were forced to inhale it.

King of Hell Chu never could have imagined that adding aphrodisiac could have created such a flaw in his plans.

If King of Hell Chu was here, he would probably rolled his eyes and yelled, “Motherf*, this world is too incredible! Eleven guys fighting with three legs; this is too spectacular! This is truly fighting with everything!”

That was indeed the case; eleven masters were busting through a sea of danger with red faces and such an excited mentality that their hair stood on ends. They shouted nonstop, “Attack! To Tang Xin Sheng’s cell!”

“Bam!”

The first Command Horse Rider brutally pushed a palm, sending a piece of metal filled with poisonous nails flying. They finally got to the cell! There, a person curled up in a corner tried to lift his head and look in their direction.

The two Command Horse Riders were extremely elated.

This person's face looked exactly like the picture of Tang Xin Sheng drawn by Diwu Qing Rou.

"Number One! The prime minister sent us to rescue you!"

When Tang Xin Sheng heard this he became extremely emotional. His mouth opened wide but no sounds came out. He tried to move his body but he could no longer stand up. He probably was severely injured and could no longer make any big movements.

Number One definitely had to suffer countless tortures!

The Command Horse Rider quickly raised his sword and swung hard at the steel padlock; it broke into many pieces. He kicked open the door and rushed in. Then he swung his sword many times to chop up all the chains around Tang Xin Sheng's body. Finally, he crouched down, placed Tang Xin Sheng on his back, and roared, "We succeeded; let's go!"

Eleven joyful people jumped out from the thick smoke.

None of them were really happy about being able to rescue Number One. They were all more concerned with where the closest brother in Iron Cloud Citadel was!

Their nether regions were about to explode!

Suddenly, the martial masters from Bu Tian Pavilion and the prince's manor came out from all directions and started punching and kicking.

The moment they appeared, they burst into nonstop mocking laughter.

The others were all wearing tight-fitting outfits; and now there were obvious tents erected under their waistlines.

"Hey, boss! Look at these guys showing off. How did their nether region get so inflated?" One person mocked as he was fighting, "Damn, how are they so big; they must be at least half a pound

each!”

Of course they took the antidote so they had nothing to worry about.

“Yes, yes. They seem to be very uncomfortable!” Another person jumped in, “But why are they uncomfortable?”

“Nonsense! The minister used twenty pounds of aphrodisiac; they did not want to waste any and inhaled everything! If it was you, wouldn’t you be uncomfortable? There are no sows in here; it would be strange if they were not uncomfortable! This is the first time I ever heard of aphrodisiac being weighed in pounds!”

While their martial strength was not equal to that of the intruders, and they were all covered with injuries, they did not cease to mock.

“Strange, they could take care of it and get out at the same time; why do they have to be so uncomfortable?” One person said as he was fighting and spitting out blood. These words actually distracted his opponent and made him slow down. Take care of it and get out at the same time? How?

“You can’t take care of it; it’s aphrodisiac!” One another voice cried out, “How could a guy deal with it alone?”

“This is very simple!” The other person continued, “They just need to take off their pants. Ah, no. They just need to use their energy to make a hole. Then the first guy can sacrifice himself and everyone else behind him will no longer be uncomfortable!”

“How?”

“Think about it; the first guy only needed to stick up his butt and the person behind him would have a place to solve his issue! Then another one can connect; they can be like a dragon flying into the clouds! They are all martial masters; they would only need a moment. Plus, they would still have two free hands to hold their weapons and fight with us!”

This guy's mouth was unbearably dirty; as he was still being beaten and spitting blood everywhere, he continued to laugh, "This path is not that long; they only need to run fast to get out! Haha, martial arts can do lots of things! Do you guys see? This is what they call a concerted effort!"

His words immediately caused a burst of laughter, "Not bad, not bad! Haha, one person after another… so romantic! Once they have a taste, they might get addicted! Hahaha!"

"Perhaps we don't need to fight with them! We'll just wait until they reach their peak and reach cloud nine, then we can just deal with them as we please! Oh, f*! I got injured again! You think you're so great with your big junk?"

His words infuriated the martial masters of Golden Horse Riders Department. They all aimed for him, and he became more and more pitiful. When he reached the point where his life was in danger, he smiled strangely and said, "Friends, my suggestion is not bad; you should give it a try!"

"Try, your grandfather!" Before he finished speaking, a master from Golden Horse Riders Department stabbed his heart. Yet, he still managed to laugh before dying.

While Chu Yang planted many martial masters for the ambush, but their quality was not comparable to the Golden Horse Riders. After fighting for a while, the eleven opposing martial masters had reached the door with only half of them injured.

The moment they almost met up with their people on the outside was also the moment the aphrodisiac's effect was at its maximum. Their eyes were bloodshot, and their mouths were panting.

Their current unfortunate situation was truly indescribable.

A ninth grade Revered Martial Artist along with a few subordinates were still blocking and dealing with endless waves of soldiers outside. They were on the verge of not being able hold

their ground any longer when they saw their buddies came out. They cried out in joy, “Hurry! We can’t hold them anymore!”

Suddenly, their happy voices turned to shock, “What is this? Why are you guys like this?”

“Their grandmother! The inside is full of aphrodisiac!” The Revered Command Horse Rider who was carrying Tang Xin Sheng roared angrily. He was so angry, his face changed appearance, “We are all affected!”

“Pooh!” The Command Horse Rider that was outside could not help but spat and cursed, “Motherf*! This is really...!” Looking at their red faces, he knew they could not delay any longer!

Seeing one guy eyeing his ass lustily, he could not help but shudder. He lamented silently, “Damn King of Hell Chu; how much aphrodisiac did he use?”

“Rush out! Kill!” Knowing things could not be further delayed; the three Command Horse Riders ordered in unison.

Just that moment, the Command Horse Rider carrying Tang Xin Sheng suddenly felt a strange sensation on his back. He turned his head to find Tang Xin Sheng smiling strangely. Right after, he felt pain in his nether region.

“Aaaah...!!!” Two Command Horse Riders cried out in pain.

This man had grabbed the crotches of the two Command Horse Riders with his two hands... and twisted.

This move was completely unexpected, and the two Command Horse Riders did not have time to react. They did not imagine that the critically injured Number One could make a move. Plus, his action was as quick as a ninth grade Revered level master like themselves.

In addition, they never dreamed that such a position would be attacked.

That was the most vulnerable location; while it was hard at this time, there was no way of protecting it from a surprise attack.

He twisted and pulled; if someone had seen this, they would have exclaimed, “Wow, so long! You have such long steel!”

Unfortunately, there were no steel bars.

The faces of these two Command Horse Riders twisted and changed beyond belief. Their eyes popped out and their bodies curled up as they convulsed.

“Bam! Bam!” Number One quickly sent out two powerful palms on the heads of the two. Before they could make a sound, they fell and blood poured out from their orifices.

Then Number One moved forth as fast as an electrical current, punching and kicking. Each move aimed directly at the uncomfortable spot of the martial masters from Golden Horse Riders Department.

Caught off guard, seven people were hit. They immediately clutched onto their family jewels and screamed in pain.

“We have fell for their trap! This guy is not Number One! This is the most dangerous trap of all!” The remaining Command Horse Rider finally reacted; he shouted, “Bastard! I will chop you to pieces!”

Chapter 169: How could this be?

“Haha...” The Hei Mo Revered Martial Artist laughed with elation. He was originally doubtful of this assignment. Never did he imagine that he could successfully attack two ninth grade Revered Martial Artists who were one grade more powerful than him. Plus, he even managed to cause serious injuries to seven other Revered Martial Artists!

He never dared to dream of such glorious achievements.

Seeing the remaining ninth grade Revered Martial Artist rushed toward him, the Hei Mo Revered Martial Artist laughed and greeted him without any hesitations.

Right at this moment, he suddenly felt his legs were held tight. Looking back, he discovered that the two fallen Revered Martials Artists were holding onto them tightly. Plus, they were fiercely biting his thighs with four eyes looking crazed! As for the remaining people, they were holding their crotches with one hand and beating him with the other...

“Bam! Bam!”

While he managed direct hits on his two opponents, it was still two against one; his power was inevitably dispersed. Moreover, the two Revered Martial Artists from Golden Horse Riders Department were one grade above him. In a normal case, they would have been able to make him faint from fear. But currently, they were under the influence of aphrodisiac and could not demonstrate their full power.

His two palms were not able to render the two Revered Martial Artists unconscious! Therefore, they were now able to make him feel the pain they were feeling.

“Aaah...!!!” The Hei Mo master screamed to the heavens in pain; his voice resonated throughout the entire surrounding.

While he was screaming, his two hands continued to fight as fast as lightning.

“Third… hurry up… We can’t hang on much longer…” One of the Command Horse Riders of Golden Horse Riders Department was crazily hitting the Hei Mo master as he bored the blows. As time passed, he gradually lost consciousness, and cried out, “Hurry! Third… hurry…”

“Eldest martial brother! Second elder martial brother!” Tears poured out of Third’s eyes like rain.

On the outside, battle cries rose up. A new wave of attacks started.

Mister Third of Golden Horse Riders suddenly roared loudly, and grabbed a spear with his hand. He cleared a bloody path like a demented tiger and ran to his two dying martial brothers, “Let’s break out together!”

On the inside, the masters guarding the cells had rushed out.

The seven Martial Great Masters who were seriously injured all chose to put their lives on the line to stop these guards.

Their most important manhood item had been destroyed by the eighth grade Revered Martial Artist. Their future no longer had any meanings, and as far as they were concerned, their lives had ended.

Therefore, they chose to stay back!

The rest of the people from Golden Horse Riders Department were all in tears; they let out a loud cry and rushed out… When they arrived, there was a total of nineteen people; but now, there were only nine people leaving. Even the two Command Horse Riders stayed back.

They could not have foreseen such a tragic defeat even in their wildest dreams!

At the entrance of the prison, two Command Horse Riders used their last breath to stop the Hei Mo master. The crazy fight led to the Hei Mo master's white bone being exposed from the biting...

Currently, the three were all crying in pain; flesh flew, and blood sprayed like rain. The tragic scene was enough to make onlookers' blood run cold. In the end, all three of them took their last breaths at the same time.

There was also the seven Martial Great Masters who were severely injured. After fighting for a while, they were chopped apart by blades and died. Since they were already suffering from serious injuries, they barely had any combat power left. Their strengths were only about thirty percent of what they normally were. Being able to hold back the enemies for so long was already satisfying for them.

Looking at blood and flesh splattered on the ground, even the bravest of men would be rendered speechless.

If it were not for the traps, these Revered Martial Artists would have managed to successful attacked one or two people and escaped easily!

Not only were the members of Golden Horse Riders Department power, they were also fierce and fearless. After today's battle, everyone would finally understand how powerful the Golden Horse Riders were!

The opponent's manpower were a dozen times more than that of Bu Tian Pavilion. In fact, with soldiers numbering at a few hundred times of Bu Tian Pavilion's soldiers, they only manage to detain ten enemies.

The prison had martial masters as numerous as locusts. Yet their opponents managed to make a big ruckus and left; this was too shameful. Therefore, they furiously gave chase.

Right after, all of Iron Cloud Citadel was in an uproar. Soldiers

were searching everywhere, upsetting the peaceful night.

There was a large flaw in Chu Yang's plan; otherwise, none of the martial masters of Golden Horse Riders Department would have been able to escape.

But it was not actually Chu Yang's fault. When Chu Yang and the Hei Mo Saber King discussed everything, the Hei Mo people were supposed to assist and kill all of the people of Golden Horse Riders Department.

At the time, the Saber King happily complied. The thing was, he underestimated the arrogance of the Revered Martial Artists in his clan. Why would they follow the orders of a secular state's official? Who did he think he was? Plus, if they were to so, wouldn't that make them nothing more than lackeys?

Therefore, while their leader gave the order, they dawdled for two days; it was within those two days that these events occurred.

Not only were the Hei Mo people not able to keep the enemies from leaving, they also caused an eighth grade Revered Martial Artist to die in battle.

*****

After his subordinates took off, Kong Shang Xin went to Heaven Reaching Tower in Iron Cloud Citadel to watch the night scene. To passersby, he looked truly regal.

Three ninth grade Revered Martial Artist leaders and more than a dozen high ranking Martial Great Masters, while not invincible, they were certainly hard to stop. King level leader Kong totally believe that any force capable of stopping them would not appear in Iron Cloud Citadel!

And even if such a force appeared, it would not be working for the royal court.

Therefore, King level leader Kong was very assured; he was currently relaxing at Heaven Reaching Tower and quietly waiting

for the good news.

The moment the citadel suddenly went into an uproar, there was a quiet and knowing smile on King level leader Kong's face. His eye were like that of a hawk, filled with contempt as he looked in the direction of the mobilizing soldiers in the citadel. His gaze was proud and arrogant!

You bugs want to keep my people?

Laughable!

If they were to face each other in the open battlefield, his people would, without a doubt, ground the soldiers of Iron Cloud to dust.

But this was within the citadel, any trees or building structures would make for a good stage for his people to make their move.

Fighting in such complicated terrain, normal soldiers would not stand a chance against martial masters!

So the more chaotic, the better. It would be best to put all of the citizens in the citadel into total panic. Then, Tie Bu Tian and King of Hell Chu would have to make an appearance. Then, their lives would be completely in his hands.

Of course assassinating Tie Bu Tian was not an easy thing. There were always two extremely powerful guards next to him. But there were no such people next to King of Hell Chu!

With his skill, he could kill King of Hell Chu and immediately escape. By that time, there would be no one in Lower Three Heavens capable of hunting him down.

A short time after, the citadel was in a complete uproar. Soldiers everywhere were mobilized and the entire citadel was lit up brightly.

Moreover, there were shadowy figures appearing in droves. Every brothel customer was being carefully checked; even civilians' homes did not escape the search.

“It seems they have successfully withdrew.” Kong Shang Xin smiled with satisfactions and disappeared in a flash.

When King level leader Kong came back to their meeting place, he witnessed a scene that infuriated him. He roared, “What happened? Are you still martial artists? Shameless!”

In contrast to a few subordinate standing quietly outside, there were panting and moaning sounds coming from inside the room… Kong Shang Xin opened the door and discovered bodies coiling with each other like worms!

Besides his subordinates, there were also a group of women in heavy makeup…

“We robbed a few brothels… to find these women… but they are all of the lowest rank.” A Command Horse Rider standing outside said with a sad voice, “Currently, all the brothels in Iron Cloud Citadel are closed. These women are cheap prostitutes who work in the slums…”

The Command Horse Rider understood why King level leader Kong was so angry. In the continents of Nine Heavens, robbery was not a major crime, but this kind of base sexual behavior was looked down upon by the world!

This was a matter of morals in Nine Heavens!

“Brothel? Lowest rank?” Kong Shang Xin felt dizzy and smacked the Command Horse Rider on the face, “You brought them here? And the cheapest ones, too?”

“They felt into King of Hell Chu’s traps… and inhaled a large amount of aphrodisiac…” The Command Horse Rider explained in a low voice. He did not dare to even notice that slap on the face and acted as if he was never smacked, “Even the brothels are all closed; I am afraid King of Hell Chu had ordered…”

“Aphrodisiac…” Kong Shang Xin ground his teeth and said, “Bastard! King of Hell Chu, you are a lowlife!”

Unable to watch the scene any longer, he walked out and closed the door. After looking outside for a while, he asked, “Where are the rest?”

“They’re dead.” The Command Horse Rider remained stiff as tears ran down his face, “Dead; they’re all dead…”

“What?” Kong Shang Xin was horrified. He felt as if everything was spinning; he staggered, barely able to stand. He grabbed his subordinate’s shoulders and asked, “What happened?”

“Number One was not in the prison; it was just a trap. It was filled with danger; poisons and aphrodisiac were everywhere. Plus, they had an eighth grade Revered Martial Artist pretending to be Number One…”

The Command Horse Rider became lost as he continued, “Eldest martial brother and second elder martial brother both fell for the traps and were under the influence of aphrodisiac. In the end, they even carried the guy pretending to be Number One out. At a key moment, he attacked them…”

He plopped on the ground, and held his hands to his face. Tears poured like rain between the cracks of his fingers, “Eight other martial brothers died in there as well…”

“How could this be? How could this be?” Kong Shang Xin stood there stupefied. At this moment, his tall stature seemed to droop a little. He continued to mutter to himself, “How could this be…”

“Sir! Sir! You must avenge our brothers…” A big man standing next to him suddenly burst out in tears. There were still many wounds on his body still bleeding, but he did not body to wrap them up and just left bleeding like so.

“Sir! You must avenge our brothers.” The remaining survivors suddenly knelt on the ground and called out in unison.

“King of Hell Chu! King of Hell Chu!” Kong Shang Xin’s hands became two clenched fists; he ground his teeth and roared, “If I

don’t kill you, I will not be human! If I don’t kill you, may the heavens not spare me!”

Chapter 170: Battle report

At this time, the moaning from inside had gradually subsided, and the atmosphere became silent. After that, three people got dressed and walked out. They solemnly knelt down in front of Kong Shang Xin and banged their heads on the ground not daring to look up.

Kong Shang Xin looked at them, and after a long while, stomped his foot. He sighed and said in a low voice, “Everyone stand up... This is not a big deal. They are prostitutes... These things are unavoidable for men...”

The three men remained kneeling with their bodies trembling.

For these three martial masters, finding beautiful women would not have been a problem. But now that they needed to vent their lust, they had to find prostitutes; the lowest ranking ones at that! For them, this was a great insult!

“Sir...” The three burst into tears.

“Don’t cry!” Kong Shang Xin flashed a ferocious look, “One we capture King of Hell Chu, I will put him... put him in a brothel! I will pay a hundred silver taels to anyone who would be willing to watch him! I will play him to death!

The three looked up; their eyes shined.

Only by dealing with King of Hell Chu like that would their hatred be satiated!

“Kill those women!” Kong Shang Xin said cruelly, “From now on, no one will speak of this!”

“Yes!”

*****

When Iron Cloud Citadel fell into chaos, Chu Yang immediately woke up. He knew that the people of Golden Horse Riders

Department had come to raid the prison.

However, he did not come out right away and stayed in bed for a little bit longer instead. He closed his eyes and thought over his plans carefully. Then he muttered, “Two nations fighting each other… is there such thing as good and evil? Is there? Isn’t there?”

After thinking for a long time, Chu Yang finally sighed heavily.

“There is a problem with your mentality!” In Chu Yang’s consciousness, the sword spirit spoke, “Enemies are enemies. There are no heroes amongst enemies, just people who want to take your life. With enemies, you can do what you want, but your ultimate goal is only… to kill them!”

“If you remain stubborn in such a moral view like this and… respect the enemies and feel guilty toward the enemies, then your path will become extremely difficult. It might even be impossible to reach your goal!”

Chu Yang remained silent for a long time, then he spoke in a low voice, “In any case, I am still a martial artist, not an official or someone with political ambitions! If I become unscrupulous like Diwu Qing Rou, would I… still be Chu Yang?”

The sword spirit sighed and did not say anything else.

What the sword spirit said was very true. Enemies were enemies; regardless of how he dealt with them, that truth remained. As long as the enemies die, in a thousand ways, there was no wrong one.

But Chu Yang’s mind was still partly that of a Jiang Hu person.

Thinking about the cruel nature of the traps he arranged, he felt a little uncomfortable. Although if he had the chance to do it all over, he would make the same troubling choices.

Chu Yang had always believed in being honorable. In his previous life, whether it was revenge or a match, his confrontations were always principled.

But given these harsh conditions and great responsibilities, to go against the famed Diwu Qing Rou, Chu Yang only needed to make one mistake to be beyond redemption.

Therefore he had to use all of his wisdom to make sure that everything was absolutely beneficial for his side but not for the enemies.

Chu Yang was still a little worried that if he continued to be like this and keep coming up with lowly schemes, would he not lose himself and become a person like Diwu Qing Rou?

Chu Yang thought for a moment before getting out of bed. As long as I remain steadfast, so what if I crawled out from a sea of blood? I will still be me!

With that thought, his mind immediately became clear.

He walked out and saw Ji Mo and company were also awake looking a bit depressed. Anyone would be bothered if they were roused from their restful slumber in the middle of the night.

Gu Du Xing yawned as he stood at the door, “If you are awake, you should train! What’s the point of just standing there and looking stupefied?”

The other four immediately glared at him.

“Ahh… I will go back to sleep!” Gu Du Xing swayed back and forth at the door and muttered, “I did just break through, ahh…, sleep would be nice…”

Right after, there was the creaking sounds of the bed; clearly he had lied down…

Too infuriating!

Ji Mo and company paled. Break through… you don’t have to be so arrogant!

“Might as well train a little…” Rui Bu Tong said weakly, “It has been over one month and one and a half day since I have been

stuck at this bottleneck…”

Ji Mo and Dong Wu Shang became somber. They thought of the serious implication of being expelled and became anxious. They quickly sat down and started to mobilize their energy…

“Wu Shang, I seem to recall a top general in Great Zhao named Dong Wu. Is he from the Dong clan?” Chu Yang asked as he wiped his face.

“No!” Dong Wu Shang said lightly, “There are many people with the surname Dong. If they are all people of the Dong clan, then our Dong clan could already advance into Upper Three Heavens!”

“Ah, is there a Chu clan in Middle Three Heavens or Upper Three Heavens?” Chu Yang asked casually, but a hint of secrecy flashed in his eyes.

“The surname Chu?” Dong Wu Shang thought for a little and said, “Never heard of it. If there are, they are probably insignificant. As for Upper Three Heavens… I am not sure!”

Not sure, insignificant… Chu Yang grinned and went out.

Chu Yang was not the only one asking that question; at this moment, Diwu Qing Rou also asked Gao Sheng the same thing.

“Ah, Gao Sheng, is there a clan with the surname Chu in Middle Three Heavens?”

“Absolutely not!” Gao Sheng answered conclusively.

“Ah…” Diwu Qing Rou let out a little sigh of relief. Gao Sheng had an inkling that Diwu Qing Rou just had a weight lifted off his shoulder…

Chu Yang was currently being extremely cautious. If an incident like Yin Wu Fa capturing him happened again, it would be too dangerous. Chu Yang did not want to be easily captured like that.

After a few turns, he followed the secret passage and entered Bu Tian Pavilion. Inside, everything was brightly lit.

Tie Bu Tian was waiting for him there.

“Minister Chu, Golden Horse Riders Department has made their move...”

“Ah, I already know. Your Majesty, you are too tired. Something like this, you don’t need to be concerned with!” Chu Yang said sincerely.

“I just want to know the result of Minister Chu’s arrangement!” Tie Bu Tian smiled. During this period, he had been overexerting himself. In the palace, his father’s condition remain a heavy burden on his heart.

In the battlefield, while Tie Long Cheng’s army did not have any big issues, it was having a few little run-ins with the opposing army. Just some harassment was enough to trouble people. Because given the current growing tension, a small fight could lead to a full blown war.

The royal court was also in chaos. King of Hell Chu’s eradication of all the traitorous officials had inspired total panic in the royal court.There were numerous complaints naming various crimes of King of Hell Chu each day, piling as high as mountains.

Tie Bu Tian often sighed: There are so few sensible people in Iron Cloud...

“I also want to know its result!” Chu Yang smiled confidently.

“Golden Horse Riders Department sent nineteen people!” Wu Qian Qian held up the battle report and spoke with a smile, “After they were ambushed by us, ten bodies were left behind. It could be considered a big win!”

“Ten bodies?” Chu Yang asked in surprise, “What about the rest?”

He thought to himself: It should not be; shouldn’t all of them have left their bodies there? Escape...?

“They escaped?” King of Hell Chu practically flipped, “Why were they allowed to escape?”

“This…”

Tie Bu Tian and Wu Qian Qian were both a bit puzzled. If you can’t hold them back, then they will escape, right? What are you so surprised about? We managed to kill ten out of nineteen martial masters; what else do you want? This is a big victory!

“How did they escape?” Chu Yang snorted and suddenly said, “The Hei Mo people didn’t guard the prison?” At the same time, he determined that it was a definite possibility.

With the power of his traps plus an eight grade Revered Martial Artist in disguise, and martial masters waiting in ambush… that was probably enough to kill seven or eight of their people.

But they actually killed ten people! In other words, his side had excelled normal expectations. If the Hei Mo people joined in, the result would not be so miniscule!

There was clearly a lack of a big force. He had counted on it, and now it was the reason for his unhappiness.

“Hei Mo people?” Tie Bu Tian asked, finally understanding, “You talked to them?”

“Yes. The Hei Mo Saber King agreed to help us eradicate these people!” Chu Yang said dejectedly, “I also arranged everything in the prison very carefully. If they came, they only needed to pull out my seal, and they would be let in immediately. But base on the result of this battle, I am sure they did not join in! What happened?”

“So that’s why…” Tie Bu Tian smiled, “In any case, the result is not bad. Minister Chu, even though your plan to chase tigers and swallow wolves was unsuccessful, the Hei Mo people still should have been waiting here for a while now!”

“Ah!” Chu Yang became pensive and continually gave out orders,

“Cheng Zi Ang, you and Chen Yu Tong can dispatch your people now and tighten the net in the shortest possible time. Don’t even let a mouse escape!”

Cheng Zi Ang quickly complied.

He was talking about the key people in Tang Xin Sheng’s spy network. The number was massive, almost a thousand people. To dig up the root, a little mistake would not be enough to cause problems!

“Mobilize two military groups; use the maximum force and give orders for all officials to cooperate in this effort. No one is allowed to get in the way of this Bu Tian Pavilion mission. It must be completely in your control. If anyone dares to interfere, immediately brand them as traitors! Take care to purge them all!”

The enemies had failed in their prison raid; if they were smart, they would not come one more time.

In other words… They probably guessed that Tang Xin Sheng was dead.

Chapter 171: Playing a little

“If Tang Xin Sheng is not dead, we can let them come and rescue him. Then we only need to follow them and gather them up all at once, total extermination. Too bad Tang Xin Sheng is already dead.”

“I will send a man with military control to go with you. He can mobilize any military group in the citadel.” Tie Bu Tian knew that Chu Yang was making a big move this time, so he acted decisively.

“This cannot be delayed! Go immediately.” Chu Yang yelled out his ordered and Cheng Zi Ang immediately went out with his subordinates.

“Investigate all the brothels in the citadel. Any place with missing prostitutes, concentrate your investigation in that area!”

“How is the eighth grade Revered Martial Artist who pretended to be Tang Xin Shen?” Chu Yang asked.

“He died together with two enemies!” Wu Qian Qian answered sadly.

“Died with the enemies?” Chu Yang asked in surprise.

“How could an eighth grade Revered Martial Artist die?” Tie Bu Tian asked with some distress.

In this Iron Cloud, an eighth grade Revered Martial Artist would have been a top ranking master. And yet he died in flash. Iron Cloud was truly not at the same level as Golden Horse Riders Department.

“He is a person of Hei Mo clan.” Chu Yang rolled his eyes.

“I see.” Since he was a person of the Hei Mo clan, the prince was less distressed.

“But this is strange; he was an eighth grade Revered Martial Artist and he died with the enemies? And in an ambush scenario?”

Chu Yang frowned, “Perhaps his opponents were King level masters? Or Command Horse Riders?”

“According to the report from the prison, his opponents were two ninth grade Revered Martial Artists.” Wu Qian Qian looked at the reported and spoke with certainty.

“That makes sense…” Chu Yang frowned and said to Tie Bu Tian, “Your Majesty, it seems Bu Tian Pavilion has to retreat into the shadow. Otherwise, the entire pavilion will become their target; we have become a very large target.”

Tie Bu Tian nodded in agreement, “Yes, Bu Tian Pavilion cannot remain here any longer! We don’t have any King level masters to watch over it; it is truly dangerous. Luckily, I have prepared ahead of time.”

He looked at Chu Yang and smiled, “Do you still remember the first time you came to Bu Tian Pavilion?”

Chu Yang’s eyes lit up.

“I will arrange for a military corps to protect that place; about thirty thousand soldiers…” Tie Bu Tian continued, “Thirty thousand soldiers will turn that place into a veritable fortress. That would be the most ideal place for Bu Tian Pavilion. Bu Tian Pavilion was not worthy of that place before, but now that they have you, it’s a different story.”

Tie Bu Tian laughed, “Minister Chu, when do you plan to move?”

“The sooner the better.” Chu Yang said, “I am a little worried those bastards from Golden Horse Riders Department will act crazy. We are still a very weak fighting force; I am afraid we won’t be able to withstand one confrontation! While we can use traps to preserve our lives, but the destruction of Bu Tian Pavilion is not exactly a good thing.”

Tie Bu Tian also understood Chu Yang’s concern. All of his efforts could not just be poured down the drain. Bu Tian Pavilion

was on the rise and was making a great impact; this was all because of Chu Yang.

“I want to go to the prison and see how the guards are doing their jobs. While I am there, I can see for myself how powerful Diwu Qing Rou’s subordinates are.”

Tie Bu Tian stood up waiting for Chu Yang to say a few polite words and go! But he did not expect King of Hell Chu to say curtly, “Huh? You want to go?”

Then he turned to Wu Qian Qian and asked, “Are there any movements at Cloud Gate Inn?”

“Still nothing, but with the citadel in such chaos, they should be able to guess.” Wu Qian Qian answered.

“No movements... That’s good...” Chu Yang nodded, “In this mission, they’re sure that there were no King level masters involved?”

“Yes!” Wu Qian Qian sifted through the documents once more and reasserted, “There were absolutely no King level masters involved! Otherwise, our damages would be much greater, and we certainly would not have been able to get ten of them like we did.”

“No King level masters...” Chu Yang frowned, “With a dying King level leader and there are no King level leaders involved... Why is this...?”

Wu Qian Qian was stunned. She suddenly thought of one possibility and asked with a trembling voice, “You mean...”

“Yes!” Chu Yang nodded, “This is a scheme to stir the grass and get the snake to come out. The first target is the prince and the second target is me. If something happened at the prison, then surely at least the prince or I would come to check the scene. And the moment we show ourselves, they would make their move.”

These words made Tie Bu Tian halt right at the door.

But after a little contemplating, Tie Bu Tian walked on determinedly saying, “All the soldiers and officials laid down their lives for Iron Cloud. If I can’t even give them moral support, I would rather not be a prince.”

“I am not opposed to you going, but I need to remind your two shadow guards that this cannot be taken lightly.” Chu Yang said casually.

From thin air, two faint figures appeared and nodded in Chu Yang’s direction. Then they followed Tie Bu Tian out. In the blink of an eye, they left Bu Tian Pavilion.

“I have to go out as well.” After Tie Bu Tian’s party left, Chu Yang fell into deep thoughts and muttered.

“It’s too dangerous!” Wu Qian Qian was terrified!

“I am not stupid enough to wear my mask out; I don’t want to be a tombstone for people to look at!” He laughed proudly, “I have my plans! But I need you to help me with one thing.”

“What is it?”

“I am sure that the King level master is hiding somewhere, and his target is me. While I do not know his exact location, I am certain that he is near here. You people should play with him a little and see how long this King level master could endure...”

Then he laughed and left...

*****

King level leader Kong had been hiding behind a large tree for four hours.

By this point, he was like a rock. Quiet and immobile for four hours!

This kind of hiding had become second nature to him.

He saw the prince of Iron Cloud enter Bu Tian Pavilion with his own eyes. He also observed all the people coming and going, but he

could not determine who King of Hell Chu was!

Then he saw Tie Bu Tian walked out the door and headed toward the prison. He thought that King of Hell Chu would follow the group, but after watching for a while, he discovered that was not the case. He also discovered that there was a thick aura of powerful masters next to Tie Bu Tian so he did not dare to act carelessly.

Therefore, he had to turn back to Bu Tian Pavilion and concentrate on his second target, King of Hell Chu.

King of Hell Chu will have to come out at some point!

His eyes suddenly brightened as he clenched his fists. The front gate of Bu Tian Pavilion suddenly became noisy as a group of people in black came out from inside. There sharp eyes carefully searched the surroundings checking every bush and corner.

Such a team was not commonplace. They were disciplined and vigilant. Even when Tie Bu Tian came out, there was not such a show.

Kong Shang Xin immediately realized that King of Hell Chu was getting ready to leave!

At this point, he did not care if the person coming out was wearing a mask or not, or if they were young or old; he just needed a person to come out... Kong Shang Xin would immediately make a move.

But after a long while, there was no movements at all. The people in black still stood in an orderly fashion in front of the gate. Then, as if nothing happened... they all went back in.

Pow!

His fist went into the tree trunk, and his face twisted with annoyance. All of that waiting was wasted. King level leader Kong could help but curse in his heart.

Before he could take in another breath, the sounds of footsteps

rang out loudly, and the people in black hurriedly ran out once again. They quickly lined up in a defensive formation. Their movements were quick with a hint of hastiness as if they did not prepare ahead of time.

King level master Kong was caught completely off guard and immediately activated his martial energy... He was in such a rush that all of his muscles shook. He gently pulled out the great saber from behind his back. His eyes carefully scanned for a good position to attack from.

Within Bu Tian Pavilion, there was suddenly loud sounds of horse neighing. These sound drew Kong Shang Xin's attention even more. He concentrated... this horse... it has to be him.

A horse really did run out.

Good steed; definitely a good steed.

The body of the horse was jet black and as powerful as a dragon. It was so fast it ripped through the wind as it shot out from inside Bu Tian Pavilion.

But Kong Shang Xin was so angry he was fuming. It was truly a good steed, but there was not even a ghost on its back.

"Hey...!" There was a loud roar.

Kong Shang Xin became alert once again! King of Hell Chu is finally making his appearance; he is probably planning to jump onto the running horse.

But from within Bu Tian Pavilion, a short person ran out like mad screaming, "Quick! Quickly catch that horse! It's acting up again..."

The people in black rushed out; after a few jumps, they managed to take control of the horse. The short man finally ran over and spoke breathlessly, "His grandmother! I was just a little careless and it ran all the way out here. Thank you, big brothers."

Then he led the horse back inside, and the people in black followed in as well.

As Kong Shang Xin watched, his mouth made a big O. He finally understood that the enemies was either putting a show on for him or practicing some kind of special exercise. But he had a feeling... this scene... seemed to be... for the purpose of toying with him.

The more he thought about it, the more annoyed he became. Was it possible that they were playing with him since morning till now?

He felt as if he was no more than the donkey to be toyed with like so and wanted to explode.

But he was still a powerful master, so no matter how angry he was, he still did not act rashly. Instead, he suppressed his anger. Kong Shang Xin knew that if he continued to wait today, he would just be a target for the enemies to play with.

Currently, he had two possible course of actions to choose from: First, fight directly with his sheer power. This kind of game was surely arranged by King of Hell Chu; therefore, it was certain that he was still inside. But how could he attack directly into there?

His second choice was to retreat and wait for another opportunity!

The sun was at its peak and Kong Shang Xin was still lingering indecisively. At this moment, a new situation occurred...

Under the stifling midday sun, on the main road leading to Bu Tian Pavilion, a figure in black suddenly appeared. The person was wearing a ferocious mask as he glided forward.

With each step that person made, the atmosphere on the road seemed to turn cold. While sunlight filled the surroundings, it was gloomy and cold around him. This was no different from a ghost appearing in the middle of the day.

Chapter 172: You are all currently in grave danger

Kong Shang Xin could feel his hair standing on ends.

Such attire, who else would dare to wear it? Plus he was walking haughtily in front of Bu Tian Pavilion; was there anyone who dared to impersonate King of Hell Chu?

King level leader Kong was getting excited…

*****

Earlier that day Chu Yang openly entered Cloud Gate Inn. He did not cover his face until he reached the Saber King's door. Then he proceeded to gently tap twice.

"Who is it?" The Saber King asked wearily.

"It's me." Chu Yang said cheerfully, "Senior, you don't recognize my voice?"

The door opened, and the Saber King rebuked, "You keep running around in this chaos; if you get discovered, then you would be dead for sure!"

There was hint of criticism in the Saber King's words, but his countenance was a little strange as if something was not right. After all, his people were not there during the prison raid so when he saw King of Hell Chu, he fell a little guilty.

"If I am discovered, then I would be dead even if I stayed at Bu Tian Pavilion." Chu Yang smiled, "I am sorry to bother you!"

"No bother. Come in quickly." The Saber King stepped away from the door.

After Chu Yang entered, he could not help but tremble in fear. There were seventeen to eighteen people in the room. No wonder, there was nobody guarding outside; they were all gathered in here.

“I hope you are all well.” Chu Yang politely greeted them.

The Hei Mo killers rolled their eyes and looked at the new arrival with distrust. Who is this? Why does he seem familiar?

“This is the minister of Bu Tian Pavilion, Official Chu.” The Saber King explained.

Everyone’s gaze immediately shifted to curiosity. So this is the ferocious masked King of Hell Chu.

“Ah, does Official Chu wish to impart us with some knowledge today?” The Saber King spoke very politely today. The truth was he could not afford not to be polite. The impact of last night’s incident was great and his people did not come; it really made him lose face.

Previously, he had promised that they would come, but when the fight happened, they were not there. Things were done, what could he say now?

In fact, the Saber King had already decided that if this King of Hell Chu brought up last night’s incident, he would seize this opportunity to scold his subordinates until they can’t even lift their heads.

After all, what they did was too much!

“This lowly official dare not!” Chu Yang sighed deeply. As the Saber King expected, he said, “I am sure you already know about last night’s prison raid.”

“Ah, I have heard.” The Saber King’s countenance became flushed as he glared at his subordinates.

“Last night’s situation was truly difficult.” King of Hell Chu’s countenance became grave.

“What’s the matter?” The Saber King asked anxiously.

“There is something that forces me to come and apologize to you in person.” Chu Yang said solemnly, “Last night’s incident was too

shocking. It's even more terrifying inside the prison; it's no different from hell. You have been so righteous and generous in sending us an eighth grade Revered Martial Artist, but I am ashamed..."

"That eight grade Revered Martial Artist had been most unfortunate... He had heroically died with the enemies." Chu Yang sadly dropped his head.

"What? Died?" The Saber King was startle and immediately stood up.

"I am truly ashamed. He was a hero; he placed chivalry above his own life; he was extremely courageous!" Chu Yang continued, "He went against two ninth grade Revered Martial Artists by himself. In the end, they died together... If it were not for him, I am afraid the casualties would be even greater..."

"He was a hero, but he had to fight two people at the same time. Reinforcements did not come in time, and he had to die with grief in that prison. It is too sad and unfortunate!" King of Hell Chu wiped the corners of his eyes with his sleeves as if he was crying.

"Dead, Third Brother Han is dead." The Saber King was stunned for a moment, then he suddenly became furious, "Bastards! I told you to hurry, but you took your time. Your asses are as heavy as mountains; you can't drag yourselves anywhere. Open your eyes and see. Because of you, Third Brother Han is dead! Third Brother Han is dead! Do you know that?"

"You bastards are a bunch of garbage! You are pigs and dogs; you are beasts!" The Saber King roared in anger, "Damn SOBs. Dawdling around, can't follow order. Are you that great? Are you royalty? Third Brother Han is your brother who fought together with you! Yet, you let him die in grief like that. Do you feel guilty? Do you feel ashamed? Do you feel sad?"

The Saber King continued to roar, "Now you see? This is all because you did not follow my orders! You are sinners! You have

caused your own brother's death! You have cause Third Brother Han's death! You... you bastards!"

The truth was it did not matter if the Saber King cared for Third Brother Han or not. The most important thing was these punks did not follow his orders; this was what made him furious.

Today, he had the perfect opportunity to give them a scolding.

On the opposite side, a man in black who had been calmly sitting in a big chair suddenly coughed. He icily looked at Chu Yang and slowly asked, "Minister Chu? Official Chu?"

"Senior, you are...?"

"Hmm, you don't need to worry about who I am. I just need to ask you one." The man gave Chu Yang a cold look and said in a deep voice, "Our man came to help you and died there; where were your people at the time?"

"You are right. Where were my people?" Chu Yang answered sadly, "During last night's battle, the fight between two sides was earth-shattering. Among our guards and soldiers, nine hundred thirty-seven people heroic died in the line of duty. Three hundred thirty-six people were severely injured. Four people suffered light injuries..."

The expressions of the Hei Mo masters changed at once!

More than nine hundred dead; more than three hundred severely injured; and only four people with light injuries. These numbers were enough to tell how brutal the battle was. Severe injuries outnumbered light injuries, and deaths outnumbered injuries. Only the fiercest fighting could lead to such results.

"At last night's battle, the enemies sent nineteen martial masters. Among them were three ninth level Revered Martial Artists, three eighth grade Revered Martial Artists, and the rest were at least third grade Revered Martial Artists." Chu Yang continued, "While the strongest one on our side was a ninth grade Martial Great

Master!”

“With such a large gap, but after the battle, two enemies died with your eighth grade Revered Martial Artist. There were also eight others who will forever remain there!”

Chu Yang’s voice was fierce, “Even though those nine people were lucky enough to escape, they were riddled with injuries! Until today, regardless if the bodies are theirs or ours, they are all piled in the prison. They have not been buried; it’s extremely pitiful! If you have any doubts, you are welcome to go and investigate.”

The inquisitor became pensive and said casually after a little while, “That’s okay!” Then he did not ask anything else.

“This is my third elder martial brother, Hei Mo clan’s King level leader Soul Catcher. My third elder martial brother is very powerful; he could be considered as one of the top five people in the clan.” The Saber King introduced.

“So it is Senior Soul Catcher. I am pleased to meet you.” Chu Yang said humbly and plainly.

“Ah..., if... your subordinates were there...” Chu Yang sighed deeply. Then he shook his head and laughed, “I have said the wrong thing.”

The Saber King grunted loudly and the martial masters around him became as quiet as clams.

“In fact, besides giving you the news, there is something of great importance I must tell you.” Chu Yang felt relieved having passed an obstacle. If he did not manage to pass it, his plan would not be successful.

“What do you need to tell us?” The Saber King asked.

“It is an issue of your safety.” Chu Yang said sincerely, “There is one thing that bothered me. The first time around they sent a King level master. This person was severely injured. And to follow up from that, they sent more people, but the most powerful one was a

ninth grade Revered Martial Artist. I find this troubling."

"It is troubling!" The Saber King frowned, "Utterly troubling. If even a King level master could get killed, why did they only sent Revered Martial Artists? Do they think that would be successful?"

"Exactly! That's why I am guessing that there must have been one or even two King level leaders hiding in some secret place, waiting for an opportunity to ambush!" Chu Yang said solemnly.

"Yes, your speculation is justified." King level leader Soul Catcher coolly nodded.

"If they were hiding near there and still did not come out when such a big ordeal occurred, they surely have bigger plans!" Chu Yang continued to add fuel to the fire.

"Yes, I agree!" The Saber King nodded.

"I think that they sent so many martial masters to raid the prison as part of their strategy to rustle the snake out of the hole!" Chu Yang continued to contemplate, "If we get shocked and went to see the situation, then this would be the chance for them to make their move!"

"That is very reasonable." King level leader Soul Catcher frowned, and carefully considered this situation.

"Currently, there are only three people who are considered a threat to them... or three kinds of people..." Chu Yang said shyly, "The first is prince Tie Bu Tian, second is you two seniors, and third is... is... me!"

"You?" King level leader Soul Catcher glared at Chu Yang with disdain. Are you saying you are that good? How could the likes of you be comparable to us?

"I... cough cough..." Chu Yang coughed twice with embarrassment and said, "But I think the prince is carefully guarded so they would not make a move on the prince."

“You two are next on the list of those who are a threat to Golden Horse Riders Department! Especially after this prison raid; you have become a thorn in their sight.”

“I am worried...” Chu Yang said cautiously, “They might be planning something against you! Therefore, you are in an extremely dangerous state! I came here to warn you about this myself in hope that you will be careful.”

“Huh? Haha...” King level leader Soul Catcher laughed icily and said arrogantly, “I am only afraid that they won’t show up!”

“Ah, I have given orders that the information about you staying at Cloud Gate Inn should be kept a secret.” Chu Yang continued, “So they might not show up here. Even if they want to make a move against you, they would have to work hard.”

“Why does it have to be kept secret?” King level leader Soul Catcher asked angrily, “I am waiting for them to come!”

Chapter 173: Two schemes to lure snakes out of their holes are deployed at the same time

“This youth has thought about this. With the strength of the two of you, you are probably not afraid of them. But there is one issue... it concerns the Sword King. He is severely injured; if the enemies come then...” Chu Yang slowly continued, “I am afraid it would not be good for his state...”

King level leader Soul Catcher was startled; he immediately replied, “Yes, you are very thorough...”

He thought of the Sword King who was hanging precariously at death’s door. Forget about fighting, a big shock would send him to see the ancestors.

This King of Hell Chu is being considerate of us... King level leader Soul Catcher could not help but feel a little embarrassed about being angry with him.

“Please prepare a little; as the saying goes ‘caution leads to less worries’...” Then Chu Yang said sincerely, “As long as you are safe and are not hurt, I will have peace of mind.”

“It has been tough on you!” King level leader Soul Catcher smiled warmly.

“Ah, this lowly official will take his leave now!” Chu Yang gently nodded.

The moment he reached the door, he halted and turned around, “While you are not concerned with those clowns, I humbly believe that the earlier you deal with them, the better.”

He hesitated as if wanting to say something, but shook his head and said, “Goodbye!”

Chu Yang pretended as if he wanted to leave, but he thinking: Call me back... Call me back...

“Minister Chu, please wait a minute!” This one sentence from King level leader Soul Catcher was enough to lift Chu Yang’s spirit. But he maintained his façade of hesitation as he turned and asked, “Senior Soul Catcher, what is it?”

“Of course we want to nip them in the bud, but how do we eradicate the enemies? Does Minister Chu have a good solution? They are like maggots that burrow to your bones and won’t give you any peace!”

Chu Yang looked hesitant; he wanted to speak but stopped.

“This…” Chu Yang wavered.

“It’s alright. There are no outsiders here; you can speak freely. Even if you say something wrong, I won’t fault you!” King level leader Soul Catcher encouraged.

“This… then I will speak freely!” Chu Yang replied.

“Go ahead!”

“This lowly official think that they want to deal with us high-ranking people by means of assassination. They would surely not dare to make an attempt on the prince because success is not certain. Therefore they are left with this lowly official and you!”

“Yes!”

“Because of that reason, I have placed a gag order on your location. Therefore, the easiest target right now is me. In other words, this lowly official is the easiest one to kill!” Chu Yang spoke frankly.

“Yes…” The two King level leaders nodded at the same time. They thought that this punk at least knows himself and recognizes that he was the most useless.

“They only need to set up an ambush around Bu Tian Pavilion and wait for me to appear!” Chu Yang sighed.

“That’s right!”

“That’s why I don’t dare make an appearance!”

“You don’t dare make an appearance?” The two King level leaders were dizzy. After a long talk and you give us ‘I don’t dare make an appearance’?

“Of course, if you want to make a move on them, there is a way; but it is a little dangerous!” Chu Yang sighed and continued, “I just need to be bait to lure the snake out… then I am sure they will appear!”

“This… is a good method!” The Saber King slowly nodded.

“But it also gives rise to another issue.” Chu Yang’s face remained unchanged, but he already cursed them a few dozen times internally. Then he added, “Because my cultivation level is so low, being bait… is truly difficult…”

“You’re right about that; you are so weak it’s scary!” Then King level leader Soul Catcher looked at Chu Yang earnestly and said, “If the assassin is a King level master then having you be bait is no different from just throwing your life away. You can’t even block one move from the enemy. He would take your life in the blink of an eye and run away after. Killing you is truly very easy… not a challenge at all…”

At this point, Chu Yang was already cursing eighteen generations of his ancestors. Such rotten statements, and you could still say them. Do you have anything more annoying to say?

But in the end, he had to reply with a sad accepting voice, “Your words are tough for me to hear, but I cannot deny the truth!”

“Yes, this is too difficult!” The two King level leaders frowned. They glared at King of Hell Chu with annoyance. After everything you said, can you do anything? You can’t even be bait, how can you talk about drawing the snake out of its hole?

“That’s why I have been sneaking in and out all this time; things have been really rough…” Chu Yang sighed and said, “It’s lucky

that I always were a mask at Bu Tian Pavilion; not many people know my true face. Otherwise, I would have been a ghost under their blades already!”

“Wait...” As our King of Hell Chu was lamenting over his pitiful situation, something sparked in the “brilliant” mind of the Saber King, “What did you just say? You always wear a mask, and no one knows your true face?”

“Yes, that’s right...” Minister Chu was wide-eyed as he replied with a look of innocence, “Is there a problem?”

“Big problem! Hahaha...” The Saber King laughed with excitement. He immediately brought up a plan with the person next to him, “Third Brother, this is really simple. Would it be enough if you just wear his clothes and mask? Anyway, they only know him as the person in the mask...”

Chu Yang internally sighed. Your grandmother! You finally thought of this tactic. Let me continue my dumb act then!

“Ah, this scheme is feasible!” King level leader Soul Catcher solemnly nodded.

“So all I need to do is wear your clothes and mask and walk into Bu Tian Pavilion?” King level leader Soul Catcher asked.

“This is difficult to say. But after last night’s earth shattering incident, we had a great loss while the enemies lost ten out of nineteen people. This is also a great loss for them! I imagine it would difficult for them to bear while sitting still!” Chu Yang smiled and continued, “So if they intend to assassinate me then... this period of chaos, they would surely not let it go!”

“Then what are we waiting for?” King level leader Soul Catcher stood up immediately.

The Saber King laughed and replied, “I finally get to see third brother in action. At that time, I will definitely be on the side admiring third brother’s glory and lend a helping hand.”

“Little brother, you only know how to kiss up!” King level leader Soul Catcher snorted and added, “Since I am here, I will help you this once, little brother. But I rarely get the chance to fight, so you should not get involved and ruin my mood!”

“Of course! With your strength, how can there be anyone worthy of being your opponent in this Lower Three Heavens?” The Saber King laughed and flattered some more.

“Only Lower Three Heavens?” King level leader Soul Catcher laughed arrogantly, “Even in Middle Three Heavens, how many people can stop my traversing Jiang Hu?”

Our King of Hell Chu looked dropped his head and thought to himself: Traversing, my butt! Martial expert, my butt!

The Saber King laughed; he stroked his beard like an intellectual and asked, “Official Chu, if you thought of this, why did you hesitate?”

Chu Yang smiled apologetically, “They are targeting me after all. If I ask you to help in my place that would be very cowardly!”

That was frank enough!

Chu Yang’s straightforward words made King level leader Soul Catcher look at him for a long time. Then he answered, “Being afraid of death is human nature; what is there to be ashamed of? Especially since you are getting powerful help to stop a great tragedy. The fact that you put everything out in the open like this has given you more weight in my eyes!”

After he finished talking, he immediately laughed loudly.

Chu Yang said a few tearful thanks while thinking: I know your character well! You like things to be tough not easy. I can beg you to death and you would still say no. But now you volunteered without me asking.

King level leader Soul Catcher hastily grabbed the mask from Chu Yang’s hand. As for the black clothes, there was no need for

unnecessary trouble. The Hei Mo black outfits were not so different from that of King of Hell Chu...

“Let’s kill them all without any further delays. Let’s go!” King level leader Soul Grabber walked out proudly as if the King level leader of Golden Horse Riders Department was just waiting out there for him and all he had to do was reach out and grab...

Chu Yang and the Saber King followed close behind him.

This scheme to get the snake to come out of its hole was extremely clever. King level leader Kong’s intention was to draw the snake out of its hole, and Minister Chu also had the same intention. The difference was when two snakes came out of their holes one of them became a fisherman!

As King level leader Soul Catcher walked out, whether it was attitude or posture, he was much more majestic than Chu Yang.

He walked with his head held high, an icy gaze, and his black robe fluttering in the wind. Along the way, anyone who witnessed this would felt a terrifying aura pouring out directly from hell.

King level leader Soul Catcher walked with his legs wide apart and showed even more air. But our King of Hell Chu frowned and thought: You have destroyed the brilliant image I have created for myself!

“This... it doesn’t seem too good!” Chu Yang said, “Senior Soul Catcher, this... can you pull it back a little?”

“Pull it back?” King level leader Soul Catcher frowned.

“Yes. When you go out like this, you look truly powerful and heroic. You move like dragons and tigers. It looks like you are flying on clouds. No matter who look at you, they would surely recognize that you are a King level master, a very high ranking one!”

Chu Yang smiled, “If that assassin saw you, would he dare to make his move? He would probably run away, so we...”

“That’s right!!” King level leader Soul Catcher smiled and nodded. He immediately pulled back his King level aura.

In the blink of an eye, the aura of a martial master that traverse the world turned into that of a high ranking official with the power to control life and death.

Anyone who looked would have believed that this person was capable of killing thousands with one command!

“Uncanny likeness!” Chu Yang was not kissing up to his this time. This man had learned his everyday appearance at Bu Tian Pavilion; he was like a second King of Hell Chu.

If Cheng Zi Ang and Chen Yu Tong were in front of him now, they would probably call him minister.

“Let’s pick up the pace!” King level leader Soul Catcher was becoming impatient. He was worried that he would arrive late and the assassin would be gone. He was like a hungry beggar going to a free feast.

Chapter 174: Intentional bump

Kong Shang Xin never dreamed that his tactic to lure the snake out of its hole was this ineffective. When he realized that he was being toyed with, he was so angry he wanted to abandon his position. Right at that moment, his target appeared.

Strutting with his ferocious mask and looking domineering, this was indeed King of Hell Chu; with such an air, it could only be him.

Kong Shang Xin was elated.

Heaven is fair to good people.

Since the moment he discovered his target, King level leader Kong could not help but feel a bit tensed; his heart was beating erratically.

He took a deep breath and quickly regained his composure. He closed his eyes, pulled his body together, and remained completely still. He was more like a rock than a person as he hid all signs of life.

King level leader Kong slowly opened his eyes and stared at the target. Everything around him suddenly became silent! His heart practically stopped, his body did not move, and his breathing was virtually nonexistent. In fact, even his pores closed.

Everything seemed to be immersed in silence.

In Kong Shang Xin's eyes, everything around him slowly faded away; only that figure walking in the distance was left. Even each of King of Hell Chu's slow footsteps was like a stomp in his heart.

About thirty feet away!

Kong Shang Xin continued to quietly stay hidden, but his entire body's strength was now concentrated on his thighs. He only needed to take one jump and he would be right next to the target.

One hundred feet from Bu Tian Pavilion will be the place your life ends, King of Hell Chu!

For anyone returning home, one hundred feet was the distance when they start to let down their guard. Whether it was an ordinary person or an assassin, it was the same. This was human nature. His many years of experience as an assassin had taught Kong Shang Xin this. His many successes had led him to this conclusion.

Kong Shang Xin decided that he would make his move at this distance.

While Kong Shang Xin could not see through the cultivation level of the person wearing the mask, it was not important. He was now directing all of his power into this one move, one move to kill.

Even if his opponent was an ordinary person, he would still do the same.

Three steps... Only three more steps!

Seeing a figure coming, everyone around Bu Tian Pavilion immediately alert and stopped what they were doing. Everyone became “honest” and turned toward the person wearing the mask. They ceremoniously greeted him, “Minister...”

King of Hell Chu remained quiet as he advanced. For the people who greeted him, if he felt like it, he gave them a grunt; otherwise, he just kept walking on. With his hands clasped behind his back, he really showed the mannerism of the owner of this place.

His arrogance and his haughtiness were both shown in his appearance.

This really is King of Hell Chu.

The attitude of the people from Bu Tian Pavilion eliminated any little doubts Kong Shang Xin still had.

Only two more steps left!

Closer!

A little closer!

King of Hell Chu lifted his leg for the third step, and his heel landed in the one hundred feet distance...

At this very moment...

Success and failure was to be determined at this moment.

Action!

Kong Shang Xin took a deep breath. His legs sprung up, and his whole body became an arrow. Using the tree branch as a bow, he shot himself forward.

Not a sound was made as his body moved like it was flying. In the blink of an eye, he neared the target.

The moment Kong Shang Xin's feet almost touched the ground, a sharp atmosphere ripping sound was heard from behind him. Following that was white smoke rising up. If one were to look at the airspace that Kong Shang Xin had passed through, one would see that the sunlight there had become distorted.

His speed was so fast that the friction between his body and the air created smoke. Moreover, his body ripped through the atmosphere, itself.

Space and time stood still in this moment.

He was as powerful as ten thousand soldiers, but Kong Shang Xin did not open his mouth to make a sound. There was only a flash in in hand, a thin and transparent saber appeared without a sound.

Its target was King of Hell Chu.

Kong Shang Xin used all of his might and slashed down...

At this moment, King of Hell Chu's foot also had just touched the ground.

The killing aura that Kong Shang Xin had hidden was now

manifested. It was like a tsunami, like water over a broken dam.

He speed was so fast that from the moment he pushed on that branch, it did not start to shake until now. Leaves flew and danced all over the air.

On the other side, Kong Shang Xin had shot himself toward his target and bore down his saber as if to conquer the world.

While the saber was unseen it carried with it the aura of a raging storm that surrounded King of Hell Chu. He could not advance or retreat; the only thing he could do was meet it.

King level leader Soul Catcher was startled! He was so surprised his soul almost flew away.

Even though he had expected the assassin's level to be very high, he did not expect the assassin to be that powerful.

This one blow, forget about ordinary people, even a king level master like himself was looking at a sixty percent chance of death. Plus, he did not sense the assassin's killing aura until he made his move.

Earlier, he was disappointed that the assassin did not appear; but now... he did not expect the assassin to make that earth-shattering move when he did appear.

King level leader Soul Catcher fell into a state of shock and quickly raised his hand to block. In his hand was a strange looking hook shining brightly.

"Keng..."

The two weapons slammed into each other, but a bizarre thing happened. The sound the made was really soft, almost nonexistent. It was as if the two were carefully placing their weapons together in one place and not trying to kill each other.

A keen-eyed person could see the shock waves created from the two weapons coming into contact with each other.

King level leader Soul Catcher roared out in anger. Unable to hold their ground, his two legs backed up creating five or six deep foot-shaped holes in the process. He took a few more steps further back before being able to jump backward. After he landed, he continued to back up a few more steps before being able to steady himself.

There was now a trace of blood coming from the edge of his mouth.

He was able to block the saber's slash, but its powerful momentum had injured him.

Kong Shang Xin was also shocked and rolled backward. After his feet touched the ground again, he had to take three or four steps back, but he did not make a sound. He immediately rushed forward and slashed down with his saber.

After the previous move, the distance between him and his opponent was about eighty feet, but his speed became even faster with this next move. When his saber was halfway down, he was in front of King level leader Soul Catcher's face. The moment the saber reached his target, it was at maximum power, speed, and killing aura.

No one watching would be able to figure out how he could have gained such a great distance in such little time.

Kong Shang Xin was also feeling terrified. He could not believe his opponent could block his killing move. Could it be that my opponent is a king level master also?

Perhaps the information Yin Wu Fa sent was not wrong?

These questions remained in his mind as his appearance remained as icy as before.

He only had one conviction: Kill the person in front of him.

Before King level leader Soul Catcher could regain his composure he came face to face with the saber again. He let out a roar and

used all of his might to block with his hook.

In the blink of an eye, that strange weapon was moved from right hand to left and from left to right a few dozen times. All of his moves were defensive.

King level leader Soul Catcher was famous for two hooks: one defensive and one offensive. But currently, he was only able to keep on the defense.

In fact, he could not even use two hooks at the same time. This attack move was so fierce that he could only concentrate all of his strength to block. As for the free arm, it was essentially invalid with not even a little bit of power.

Kong Shang Xin held the saber with one hand and attacked like thunder or an erupting volcano. One slash after another came down.

His saber technique seemed very simple at a glance, just slashing straight down. However, the gap between each slash was virtually nonexistent, as if he did not need time to gather power. One powerful slash after another until the opponent meets his end. There was no signs that the saber would stop.

“Sir, be careful…” Chu Yang watched from a distance and yelled out anxiously.

King level leader Soul Catcher almost vomited blood.

Damn it!

Earlier, he was full of confidence, and now the enemy had put him in such a state. In this moment, Chu Yang even spoke some words of concern. But in King level leader Soul Catcher’s ears, these words became mockery.

His face darkened!

He wanted to scream out, “Shut up!” But under the attack of this powerful offensive from the assassin, he could only concentrate on

blocking. Forget about one word, he did not even have time to breathe!

In the blink of an eye, the saber had slashed down ninety-nine times. King level leader Soul Catcher had been pushed back a great distance; he was now more than three hundred feet from Bu Tian Pavilion. Essentially, one step back with each slash. His body staggered like a little boat in a storm that could capsize at any moment. Such a result made King level leader Soul Catcher so angry he wanted to die. Even Chu Yang was surprised.

He did not expect that Golden Horse Riders Department would send such a powerful person like him.

“It’s you…” King level leader Soul Catcher stared at the assassin and ground his teeth. From the saber techniques, he knew the true identity of the assassin.

The elusive saber - World’s Sad Loner!

Sad Saber King - Kong Shang Xin! (TLN: Just to refresh your memory, Shang Xin - sad.)

This name caused a great stir in Middle Three Heavens. He was famous for being a lone thief.

“You must die.” Kong Shang Xin grunted coldly, “Knowing my identity would only mean a quicker death for you…”

“Kong Shang Xin! Today, I will make you become like your name and die in sadness.” King level leader Soul Catcher was very annoyed. This riffraff from Jiang Hu was forcing him into a corner.

Even worse was the fact that he was an eight grade King level master. Because Kong Shang Xin had the element of surprise he was pushed to the end of his rope. Ninety-nine slashes and he could only block. Not one offensive move! This was too shameful.

“Hahaha…” Kong Shang Xin let out three more slashes and suddenly stopped. He seemed to be distracted by something from

behind King level leader Soul Catcher's back. There appeared a flaw in his all-encompassing offense.

Opportunity!

King level leader Soul Catcher was startled. He roared out loud and raised his hook in the direction of his opponent.

The opponent's saber slash seemed to suffer from some psychological distraction and came down on his shoulder instead.

Two hooks ripped through the wind and flew forward. One went at the enemy's throat and the other one went right for his heart.

This was the best opportunity to reverse the outcome...

Chapter 175: Three King level masters lose together

With regards to the enemy's sudden distraction, King level leader Soul Catcher assumed it was the Hei Mo Saber King appearing behind him.

"Foolish!" Kong Shang Xin sneered, and his whole body suddenly twisted along with the saber creating a large arch. He avoided contact with the hooks while slashing directly at King level leader Soul Catcher's throat.

This one move was precise, deadly, unseen, and sharp. From a deadly flaw, it turned into a deadly attack.

This was a trap carefully prepared by Kong Shang Xin.

King level leader Soul Catcher was startled and fell backward with all of his desire for life. His waist bent to the point that the cracking sounds of his bones could be heard. And because of this, he was able to get outside the attack's range.

Blood splattered all over the ground. While King level leader Soul Catcher was able to avoid the life-taking slash, part of his shoulder was cut revealing a segment of white bone. Although he escaped a critical attack and kept his life, he had to pay a dear price!

The fight between the two King level masters was as quick as lightning and fire sparks. It was so fast that at this very moment the guards of Bu Tian Pavilion did not even have time to react.

"Not good! The Minister is fighting against an assassin outside the gate." The sounds of screaming reverberated, and all of Bu Tian Pavilion came alive. Everyone immediately grabbed their weapons and shot out the gate.

On both sides, two military groups sounded their alarms urgently. Soldiers flooded out from all directions.

Kong Shang Xin's countenance remained as calm and cold as before. His attack did not slow down; his saber flashed and even became fiercer than earlier.

The people of Bu Tian Pavilion ran forward, but they were only ordinary people not King level masters. While they ran really fast, the time it took them to get there was enough for a King level master.

One or two breaths was all that was needed.

In two breaths, Kong Shang Xin could kill King of Hell Chu and happily leave.

As long as he was not under a heavy siege, his chance of escape was great.

Kong Shang Xin decided to end it. His flashing saber suddenly seemed to turn into two and slashed down from two different places.

Divide Spirit from Soul, deadly double blades!

This was a unique skill that Kong Shang Xin had always kept secret. Once he made this move, it was the difference of life and death.

King level leader Soul Catcher screamed angrily and his hooks turned to the color yellow while a black aura surrounded them.

Life or death; he could only depend on himself.

While there were reinforcement coming from all directions, he knew that they would only be in time to avenge his death.

"Keng... keng... keng..."

In the blink of an eye, the two kinds of weapons slammed into each other no less than one hundred times. King level leader Soul Catcher unexpectedly screamed out in pain and rolled back. His blood soaked body went perfectly with the ferocious mask.

Kong Shang Xin also jumped back. There were seven or eight

blood wounds squirting out blood from his body, but he did not mind them. The moment he touch the ground, he fiercely rushed forth, determined to kill his opponent.

“Swoosh… swoosh…”

The sky suddenly went dark…

The archers of Bu Tian Pavilion while still in the process of rushing forward were able to released one wave of arrows in an organized manner! Their target was the one and only Kong Shang Xin currently suspended in midair.

Among the rain of arrows were concealed weapons from the other martial masters of Bu Tian Pavilion. For the moment the sky seemed to be covered by a dark net made of arrows and concealed weapons.

Kong Shang Xin’s body flashed in the air while he swung his saber to protect his body. In the blink of an eye, he escaped from the rain of arrows and shot himself toward the trunk of the big tree for cover. He only needed to borrow the strength of that tree to push himself away for a clean escape.

Just a little further…

Suddenly, from a saber flashed like a bolt of lightning from that treetop. With it came a cold voice, “Down!”

Hei Mo Saber King Soft Cloud had appeared at this key moment.

Actually, it was not a coincident. Earlier, Chu Yang had “unintentionally” reminded him, “We should not be wary of the something that would likely happen, but of what’s unlikely to happen… and guard against the assassin escaping. You should hide there and wait to ambush…”

Therefore, Hei Mo Saber King Soft Cloud had chosen this place for his ambush.

Things had actually turned out as predicted.

Kong Shang Xin had risked his own life and received all those wounds in order to severely injure King level leader Soul Catcher. Now that the situation was beyond his control, the only thing he could do was escape.

But he never expected the place he was waiting in ambush now had someone else waiting to ambush him!

After he put all his effort into fighting, his body was injured in a few places. Then he had to go through the deadly wave of arrows and concealed weapons. He narrowly managed to escape death and get to this place. Thinking that he was safe, he relaxed. But a King level master unexpectedly appeared in front of his face.

At this moment, Kong Shang Xin truly understood what sadness was.

“Another King level master! A Saber King, too!” Kong Shang Xin’s eyes flashed fiercely. He activated the extreme limit of all the energy in his body. He twisted his body and pulled a saber in a flash.

“Keng…”

Two sabers slammed into each other and a loud sound rang out. The two Saber Kings slashed at each other fiercely without any reservations.

“You…” Saber King Soft Cloud yelled angrily. That slash seemed fierce but it was completely lacking in power.

Hei Mo Saber King Soft Cloud was only a sixth grade King level master while his opponent was eighth grade. The latter not only far exceeded him in cultivation level but also in battle experience. That saber move might have seemed solid, but it was only used to borrow strength.

The two slammed into each other and fell down together. While they were freefalling, the sabers continued to flash. The sounds of two sabers crashing into each other never ceased.

In the middle of falling, Kong Shang Xin suddenly stopped a little in the air making his body slightly higher than that of Saber King Soft Cloud.

That borrowed strength from earlier was now playing its role. Kong Shang Xin brutally stomped on Saber King Soft Cloud's butt and flew back to the treetop. He pause and spat out a few clumps of blood before turning to leave. In a blink of an eye his dark silhouette became a tiny speck in the distance... and disappeared.

After the kick in the butt, Saber King Soft Cloud lost balance. He dropped on the ground like a rock, and dust filled the air. His whole body went deep into the ground, and even his mouth was filled with dirt.

A little while after, he crawled out. He pounded his chest and spat out dirt and blood!

In a distance, King level leader Soul Catcher was trembling as he lay in a pool of blood. In today's battle of Three Kings, all three had lost.

"Minister, are you okay?" Cheng Zi Ang hastily ran forward and lifted King level leader Soul Catcher up. He anxiously yelled out, "Doctor! Find a doctor quickly..."

Today's battle brought shock to the entire Bu Tian Pavilion.

In Bu Tian Pavilion, Minister Chu was famous for being mysterious. All day, they could only hear his yelling but never saw his face. No one had expected that their minister would be a King level master. No one could forget the moment that assassin made his move. His golden glow and the crown suspended above his head... These were the signs of a high ranking King level master.

And yet, the minister could fight with him for that long. While he suffered a loss and became severely injured, his combating skill was unparalleled by all those who were present there.

King level leader Soul Catcher wanted to explain, but each time

he opened his mouth, blood came out so he had to remain quiet.

His body received at least ten slashes. Each slash from the saber not only brought on visible wounds but also ravaged the body with saber energy. His internal organs were currently seriously injured, and his life was hanging by a thread.

Hei Mo Saber King Soft Cloud started cursing the moment he crawled out, “Bastard! Next time we see each other, I will skin you and drink your blood…”

He roared out and rubbed his rear at the same time, but he was still terrified. If that guy did not choose his butt and stomped on another part of his body, he would probably have went and met his ancestors. He was truly inches from death…

They were two King level masters; one fought openly and the other ambushed. Yet the enemy still managed to escape. This was too shameful…

Chu Yang was watching in the vicinity so his face was somewhat smudged. But in this battle, he was the person that benefited most.

Because of the battle between Kings, the sword spirit in his consciousness had suddenly awoken. Plus, it was criticizing endlessly in Chu Yang’s head.

“You call this King level? Motherf*, so weak…”

“Too weak! That saber user, what skill does he have? His saber cannot bend, but should his saber energy just go straight? What can you do with it just going straight like that?”

“Ack… What an idiot… What’s he using two hooks for? How could he have enough momentum to fight? He might be effective fighting with weaker people, but do you need anything special to fight weaker people? This really sucks! Doesn’t he know that fighting people with the same rank, a little hesitation equal a little loss? How could he compete with people stronger than him? One palm, and he would be dead…”

“A bunch of I don’t know what…”

“What is that bastard doing? He had the opportunity… Yet he let his opponent stomp on his butt to borrow his force… Stupid… Stupid beyond words… He only needed to use Thousand Pound Weight to fall down and his opponent would have to fall with him… There are a whole bunch of people waiting below; where could that guy run… He even put on a show with his saber to let the enemy borrow strength from that… What a fool! So foolish I can’t even begin to describe…”

Just like that, the sword spirit continually cursed with a contemptuous voice. He pointed out flaws in each move and each technique of the King level masters. They should do that, they should do this…

Chu Yang did not have the time to learn from every word the sword spirit spoke. But currently, he was stunned. Not one word was wrong, not even a little!

Chu yang suddenly discovered the sword’s spirit’s words hit the heart of the matter. Plus, it also gave the simplest solutions.

Rather, the flaws in each move that the sword spirit pointed out were also the flaws in the martial artists’ way of thinking.

The sword spirit was disdainful of the three Kings’ flaws. At first, it cursed energetically. Then it gradually lost interest and became quiet. It seemed to be reminiscing about the time when it was at the pinnacle.

It sighed, “How many years has it been? How did all the martial artists become such weaklings? Even watching is not interesting… There is no talent in this Lower Three Heavens worth looking at…”

But the sword spirit did not know that his nagging complaints actually gave Chu Yang a completely new outlook…

Chapter 176: Brother Chu Yang, did you feel anything yet?

Sabers cannot bend, but saber energy could... These words alone pinpointed the greatest misunderstanding in saber arts in all of Nine Heavens.

After that earth-shattering battle, all of Iron Cloud Citadel fell into a temporary peace.

The people of Golden Horse Riders Department had quieted down. Their two King level leaders were both severely injured. Out of the nineteen martial masters with them, the nine remaining ones were also injured. Even if they wanted to cause trouble, they would not dare. In fact, they were anxious that Bu Tian Pavilion might send an army to attack them at any moment. This was their most apprehensive time.

The Hei Mo people were even more troubled. All three of their King level leaders were injured.

Saber King Soul Catcher stayed at Bu Tian Pavilion for half a day looking unhappy, dejected and disgraced. After a while he returned to Cloud Gate Inn to recover. While the Saber King felt as if he was heartless, he was becoming intoxicated with his “incredible wit.” Second, he thought that he was supposed to be higher ranking than them.

In the next three days, Chu Yang put all efforts into tracing all of Tang Xin Sheng’s connections, and caught more than seven hundred people in one go.

All of Bu Tian Pavilion was extremely busy.

As for our Minister Chu, after delegating all the duties, he left without a care.

During this period, Chu Yang did not even battle with other people. Whenever he was free, he could be seen sitting by himself

and frowning pensively. Every now and then he would swing his arm a few times.

Even at Heavenly Armament Pavilion, he did not train for his extreme breakthroughs. Each day, besides playing with Mo Qing Wu, he just sat quietly like that and contemplated.

How to bring energy from the dantian and turn it into saber energy? Then send it into the saber and out to a fluid state. Curved, straight, and even circular was possible.

This was a monumental discovery.

Normally, saber or sword energy would only be concentrated at the tip only. While the force would be great, but it had always been just that. The other person only needed to avoid it.

But what if…

These past few days, this was exactly what Chu Yang had been thinking about. And because of this, he had been bothering Dong Wu Shang more and more.

“Hey, Wu Shang. How is saber energy created?” Chu Yang asked.

“Saber energy is created from my killing energy. Bring all of the killing energy in the body and combine with martial energy. Then send it out via the saber. Saber energy is created from that…” Dong Wu Shang replied curtly.

“In other words, saber energy has to be from the saber?”

This question made Dong Wu Shang extremely surprised. If not from the saber then would it be saber energy? Is the big boss’s head okay?

“In other words, saber energy is sent out from your subconscious?”

“Or it can be said that saber energy…”

“Hey… hey… you… don’t leave!”

Chu Yang's concern with saber energy drove Dong Wu Shang crazy. He immediately said, "Boss Chu, you should research about sword energy instead! The two are of the same origin!"

"Du Xing, can you tell me how sword energy is created?"

"..."

"How is it emitted..."

"..."

"Hey, don't leave...!!!"

Things continued that way and left the other five dumbfounded. This big brother bothered them every day, then fell into contemplation afterwards. After that, he would direct some of the silliest questions at them. These were all basic issues that any martial artist could answer.

Like tireless bird wings...

Later on, boss Chu's attention shifted toward Mo Cheng Yu.

"Senior Mo, please swing your saber in the direction of the pond for me!"

"Why?" Mo Cheng Yu frowned.

"When you direct your saber toward the pond, I want to see if your saber energy could hit the tree on the right!"

"Ack... You're crazy!"

Mo Cheng Yu was going crazy!

Swing the saber forward, but hit the tree on the right? This is a saber energy, not a concealed weapon's energy! It is not pure energy either!

Later on, no one bothered to help him anymore so Chu Yang had to experiment on his own. But after swinging his sword a few hundred times, he did not see any result. And at this moment, our boss Chu's face lit up. He discovered a perfect specimen, Mo Qing

Wu.

Little Loli was currently enamored with Dreaming of a Gentle Dance Saber. She even held it in her arms while sleeping. And whenever she had nothing to do or everyone was gathering around, she would pull it out and swing a few times to show off.

Each time she pulled it out, the eyeballs of Ji Mo and company practically popped out. Especially Dong Wu Shang's, each time he saw this saber, his eyes immediately became two bright torches.

And this Little Miss Mo Qing Wu thoroughly enjoyed those gazes.

"Brother Wu Shang, do you like it?" Miss Loli smiled an adorable smile and batted her lashes as she looked at Dong Wu Shang.

"L...like!" Dong Wu Shang swallowed and answered.

"Even if you like it, I won't give it to you! Hahaha..." Little Miss Loli laughed with satisfaction.

"Brother Ji Mo, do you like it?" She asked innocently and blinked her eyes lovingly.

"I don't like it!" Ji Mo answered solemnly.

"Why not? How could you not like it? You can't possibly not like such a good saber!" Little Miss Loli was not going to take this loss, and her eyes started to well up.

"Fine, fine...!!! I like it!" Ji Mo had to raise his arms in surrender.

"Even if you like it, I won't give it to you! Hehe...!!!" Little Loli smiled triumphantly.

"..." Ji Mo wanted to cry.

"Brother Du Xing, do you like it?"

"..." Gu Du Xing immediately fled.

Finally, our boss Chu had discovered that Mo Qing Wu would not grow tired of him. She was the perfect specimen!

"Xiao Wu!"

“What is it, Brother Chu Yang?”

“Do you like that saber?”

“Yes...!!!”

“Then do you want to use it to slash at the water in front of you and see if anything can be felt on the right?”

“Swoosh... swoosh... swoosh...”

“Brother Chu Yang, did you feel anything yet?”

“I did not feel it! Ah, maybe you did not do it correctly! Try it again!”

“Swoosh... swoosh... swoosh!!!”

“Brother Chu Yang, did you feel anything yet?”

“Still nothing. Can you try a few more times? Start with energy from your dantian and send it into your meridians. Then let it out...”

“Swoosh... swoosh... swoosh!!!”

“Did you feel it yet?”

“Almost! Keep going like that...”

“Swoosh... swoosh... swoosh!!!”

“Why do you still feel nothing? Why? Hoo hoo hoo... Still no feeling?”

“Don’t rush. Try a little more...”

“Swoosh... swoosh... swoosh...”

“Any feeling yet?”

“Not yet!!!”

“My arms are in pain and you still feel nothing!”

“Then you should rest a little!”

“No, I have to make you feel it!”

“Swoosh… swoosh… swoosh…”

“Did you feel it yet?”

“Did you feel it yet?”

“Did you feel it yet?”

“Did you feel it yet?”

Chu Yang wanted to collapse!!!

*****

Three days later, Cheng Yun He arrived. He used the identity of a merchant and his guards to successful enter into Iron Cloud Citadel. During this period, there was a dangerous level of tension in Iron Cloud Citadel; it was in a state of chaos.

Even at the citadel’s gate, there was a faint smell of blood lingering in the air.

After managing to contact Kong Shang Xin with great difficulties, Cheng Yun He was shocked.

The King level leader had only arrived three days ahead of him, but he was now looking like a sickly demon. His face was jaundiced. After sitting for a while, he would cough endlessly. That would then follow by him coughing up blood…

On the side, Yin Wu Fa was letting out dry coughs, but his appearance was showing signs of recovering.

Isn’t King level leader Yin the one severely injured? Why is Kong Shang Xin like this?

“I am afraid the Lord’s deduction is wrong!” Kong Shang Xin sighed, “That King of Hell Chu is indeed a King level master. Plus, he is even an eighth grade King level master!”

Cheng Yun He was shaken by this statement.

Yin Wu Fa had also said he was a King level master! But after everyone had discussed this over, they came to the conclusion that

this just cannot be! But, today, Kong Shang Xin, long trusted by Diwu Qing Rou, had made a one hundred eighty degree turn.

A King level leader said this, and others said the same... it was worth careful consideration!

“You fought directly with King of Hell Chu?” Cheng Yun He asked in a low voice. He suddenly discovered that there were not many people there and asked, “Where are the other people that came with you?”

“Cough... cough... cough...” Kong Shang Xin coughed dryly a few times. His face paled with guilt, and he did not know how to best answer Cheng Yun He.

He could not say that instead of waiting for Cheng Yun He, he proceeded with his own plans. Plus, not only was he severely injured, ten martial masters went to see the King of Hell.

How could he answer?

Seeing Kong Shang Xin’s face like that, Cheng Yun He felt a chill go right to his head. His face paled, and he asked, “You didn’t fight with King of Hell Chu?”

“Didn’t fight?” Kong Shang Xin shouted angrily, “Are you blind? If I didn’t fight, where do all these injuries come from?”

Cheng Yun He was stunned; he stared at Kong Shang Xin, and Kong Shang Xin was not afraid to stare back. After a long while, Cheng Yun He sighed, “Finished... we’re finished!!!”

“Huh!” Kong Shang Xin glared at Cheng Yun He and said, “You’re blaming me?”

“Those people were on the mission with you weren’t they? Where are the rest of them?” Cheng Yun He asked as he held onto a last ray of hope.

“Dead!” Kong Shang Xin answered faintly, “Do you have no brain? You can already see it, why do you ask? Do I need to spell it

out for you? Did you get kicked in the head by a donkey?”

Cheng Yun He was stupefied as he looked at Kong Shang Xin. Even terra cotta statues can get angry. He yelled back heatedly, “You acted rashly and got many martial masters killed. All you can say is blame?”

“F*!” Kong Shang Xin was furious. His eyes were red as he roared, “You think I wanted to lose? You think I wanted to get injured? They are dead; they are my brothers, too! You think I don’t feel pain?”

“Your argument makes no sense!” Cheng Yun He replied severely.

Yin Wu Fa, who was lying on the side, had now pushed himself up and said, “Second brother! Official Cheng! Please let it go! The most important thing now is what we should do next.”

“What we should do next? What else can we do?” Cheng Yun He yelled stormily, “Your second brother has made a mess of everything!”

Cheng Yun He had always been calm and rarely got angry. He was always slow but sure, never quickly to react.

Diwu Qing Rou had once judged Cheng Yun He’s character with the following words: “A hero in times of chaos, expand territory without having to use force. In times of prosperity, build internal peace, the prime minister’s right hand.”

These words spoke highly of Diwu Qing Rou’s evaluation of Cheng Yun He’s ability.

Chapter 177: A man's ambition in life is to control the world!

It was because he was prudent that Diwu Qing Rou gave him this important assignment. Because their operation in Iron Cloud was in chaos, and Cheng Yun He was the most careful person capable of sorting out the root of this thing. Moreover, with his ability to remain objective toward enemies or friends, he was the best choice.

This person's strength was being able tolerate things that others could not. Even if he was standing in front of the worst situation, he could calmly find an escape. While the most optimal solution might not be found, he would be able to find one the minimize loss.

Being angry as he was today, this was the first time in Cheng Yun He's life.

"How did it become such a mess?" Yin Wu Fa was unable to accept it.

"The prime minister said that you were hoodwinked, and framed by the enemies!" Cheng Yun He sighed but immediately recovered his emotion and said, "If the enemies managed to fool you once, why not twice? Whether King of Hell Chu is a King level master or not is yet to be decided! This is the first issue!"

"Second, one of the reason we came here is Number One. But last night's action has caused a stir, and Iron Cloud is now on guard. Even if Number One is still alive, we have lost all hopes of rescuing him!"

Cheng Yun he sighed, "If the prime minister knows about this, he will be really sad!"

"It's only some Number One, leader of the spy network. He might be somewhat resourceful, but so what? After all, he can't

really affect the big picture." Kong Shang Xin replied in disdain.

"Do you know who Number One is?" Cheng Yen he looked at Kong Shang Xin sadly, "Your careless actions ruined Number One's chance of survival. Could it be that you really have no clue about Number One's origin?"

"Normally, these types of missions are taken care of by Golden Horse Riders Department. But the prime minister arranged this himself and carefully repeated his orders many times. Because of the gravity of this situation, he sent me to prevent you from acting recklessly!"

"Do you know why the prime minister placed great importance on this?"

"Why?" Kong Shang Xin felt slightly uneasy.

"Since we started this mission, when King level leader Yin came here, the prime minister had said that we should absolutely not assassinate Tie Bu Tian. The moment we make an attempt at Tie Bu Tian's life, whether successful or not, we will provoke Iron Cloud's anger. Without any other place to vent their rage, they will take it out on Number One and kill him! This proves that Number One is more important to the prime minister than Tie Bu Tian!"

Cheng Yun He continued, "When he sent me here, the prime minister recognized how important King of Hell Chu was to Iron Cloud. So he especially emphasized that rescuing Number One and eliminating our misunderstanding with that mystery clan was to be our main priority. Plus, he even added that if we are not certain, do not touch King of Hell Chu. Do you know why?"

"Note the prime minister words, 'rescue Number One and eliminate our misunderstanding with that mystery clan'! The words 'rescue Number One' come first."

Cheng Yun He sighed deeply, "The prime minister was worried that you people would let your emotions rule your action, so he

repeated many times that you should wait for me to come and discuss things before taking action. Is that not worth the least bit of your attention?”

“It is because the prime minister knows that I understand how important Number One is to him!” Cheng Yun He burst out sadly.

“So who is Number One?” There were beads of sweat on Kong Shang Xin’s forehead. Hearing Cheng Yun He saying all of that, if he still did not understand Number One’s importance, then he might as well die.

“In all of his life, the prime minister’s teacher only had two disciples!” Cheng Yun He said solemnly, “Do you know who the other person was?”

“Is it Number One?” Kong Shang Xin suddenly choked, and sweat ran down his face.

“If not Number One, then who?” Cheng Yun He angrily glared at him.

“Back then, the two martial brothers depended on each other. Number One was eight years younger than the prime minister. The two served Great Zhao together; one was in the light, and one was in the shadow. Until now, Number One has never revealed his real name to anyone else. The creation of Golden Horse Riders Department was a joint effort of the two of them!”

“Later, the prime minister gradually grew in status at Great Zhao and Number One faded from everyone’s mind. But after seven or eight years, there was news about a saint amongst Iron Cloud’s officials. Do you know why?” Cheng Yun He said somberly, “Because back then, the prime minister, Han Bu Chu, Number One, and I drank together…”

At this point, Cheng Yun He sighed and could not help but reminisce.

The four of them were all young back then. Number One was

only twenty years old, and Diwu Qing Rou did not have the power he currently had. The four had drank more than three rounds and were becoming drunk.

After getting drunk, they started to discuss about their goals and ambitions. Diwu Qing Rou said, “In all of history, Nine Heavens has never been united under one ruler. There has always been different warlords creating chaos. My ambition in life is being able to unify this vast Nine Heavens by my own hands!”

At that time, Diwu Qing Rou held the wine cup in his hand. While his gaze was somewhat intoxicated, his voice remained calm, “A man’s head should hold up the sky, the sun and the moon, and his feet should stand on this vast land. He should look down at millions of lives and rule over them all! When drunk... resting one’s head on a beauty’s lap, but not being some ordinary lusty demon. When sober... ruling over the world. This is what a man’s ambition should be! A man should live in eternal glory. Who needs a beauty next to him?”

At this point, Number One was drunk, but he still laughed and said, “If you can be in charge of Great Zhao, this little brother will hand Iron Cloud to you with two hands as a gift to congratulate your effort to unify the world!”

No one knew that those impromptu words became the objective of the lifelong efforts of these two; plus, they almost succeeded!

If Chu Yang was there, he would say sadly, “Not ‘almost succeeded’, but ‘succeeded’!” In the previous life, Tang Xin Sheng did hand Iron Cloud over to Diwu Qing Rou as a gift.

Looking back at the past, Cheng Yun He unconsciously let out a sigh in his dream state.

Among the four people from that time, one of them had become a prime minister of a nation capable of affecting the world. In reality, he was an emperor.

And the other snuck into Iron Cloud and became a model saint amongst officials. While they were both were leaders in their respective fields, they were both working for the same goal.

As for Cheng Yun He, he became Diwu Qing Rou's assistant and took care of some issues that were difficult to deal with working silently in the shadow. With regards to Han Bu Chu... Cheng Yun He knew that, besides Diwu Qing Rou, Han Bu Chu was the most frightening person!

Han Bu Chu almost fanatically worshipped Diwu Qing Rou. For Diwu Qing Rou, he would be willing to do anything without a care for methods or morals.

All the bad things were done by him in the dark, but the good reputation was enjoyed by Diwu Qing Rou. Things that were inconvenient for Diwu Qing Rou to do or say, Han Bu Chu was there to do and say them...

Han Bu Chu saw himself as a stepping stone for Diwu Qing Rou. And he did it all voluntarily and wholeheartedly. He spared no effort for Diwu Qing Rou!

There were many secret situations where Cheng Yun He himself was not even allowed to participate, but Han Bu Chu secretly discussed them with Diwu Qing Rou.

These were those four people.

Today, Number One fell into King of Hell Chu's trap in Iron Cloud. And Han Bu Chu was tossed into a quagmire by his own teammate. He could not pull out, could not advance, and could not back up! The other two were thousands of miles away waiting for his news.

Thinking of this, Cheng Yun He suddenly wanted to drink.

Right now, what he wanted most was to go back to that time and drink with the others, drink until they were drunk... absolutely drunk!

“So Number One’s position is that important…” Yin Wu Fa and Kong Shang Xin looked at each other, “But why didn’t the prime minister tell us?”

“The prime minister would never speak about this kind of thing!” Cheng Yun He, “How could he reveal such an intimate relationship?”

Kong Shang Xin sighed. His injuries seemed to be affected so his body shook slightly.

“Let’s use this time to calm down a little.” Cheng Yun He smiled. In the depth of his eyes, the emotion from the past rose up, and he immediately recovered his original composure. He said, “First, you two recover well. If we don’t have strength on our side, we will not be able to even negotiate!”

“All of our ranks will temporarily remain dormant in Iron Cloud!” Cheng Yun He’s voice was very calm, but a trace of helplessness pushed its way out, “We will wait until you are all recovered to your peak condition before continuing.”

“Then… the prime minister’s plans will be delayed?” Yin Wu Fa said.

“If we show ourselves to work on our missions, we will surely die!” Cheng Yun He said, “You are all injured like this; you cannot even protect yourselves. How can you talk of big plans?”

“How long will it take for all of you to recover from your injuries?”

“I… will probably need a month…!” Yin Wu Fa grunted. His eyes flashed with strong hatred. He had Jade Spirit Ginseng, one of the nine great legendary herbs, for his injuries and still needed a month. He knew how serious his injuries were.

“I need half a month!” Kong Shang Xin said casually, “If need be, ten days would be enough with a small difference!” His gaze became icy, “But I can assure you, King of Hell Chu’s injuries are

absolutely more seriously compared to mine! As for one of the other King level leader on their side, his injuries are probably not any less than mine either!" His voice was full arrogance.

"That was not King of Hell Chu!" Cheng Yun He sighed weakly. Why does King level leader Kong keep insisting this?

Two of four King level leaders from Golden Horse Riders Department fell for the trap... This is incredible! I wonder what kind of tactics King of Hell Chu used...

"I will immediately send news to the prime minister about what happened here." Cheng Yun He took a deep breath and said, "Second leader Kong, tell me what happened these past few days. Give me every detail. The prime minister asked for the most truthful information so he could make a good judgement."

Kong Shang Xin showed a look of shame and sadly complied.

"The rest of you don't need Jade Spirit Ginseng for your injuries, right? Give me the two extra pieces of Jade Spirit Ginseng!" Cheng Yun He quickly decided to take back the two priceless items from Kong Shang Xin.

Currently, it seemed no longer possible to eliminate the misunderstandings, and it was likely that Number One is dead. Those two pieces of Jade Spirit Ginseng should not be left to be ruined in the hands of these two thugs...

Chapter 178: Scheming cannot beat a great change

That day, Bu Tian Pavilion was as busy as ever. After the great purge, the two hall leaders became more idle.

It was rare to see Tie Bu Tian making such a cruel decision to root out all of the spies so completely. Iron Cloud Citadel was enveloped in a gloomy atmosphere, and the smell of blood reached the heavens. The number of people dying under the executioner's blade alone was more than one thousand three hundred!

That was also Cheng Yun He's second day in Iron Cloud Citadel.

From arrest to execution in a total of only four days. During which they were tried and proven guilty. While Iron Cloud invested an enormous amount of resources into this venture, such a speed was still staggering.

All of Iron Cloud Citadel was thrown into unprecedented shock and awe!

Everyone knew that only King of Hell Chu was capable of such a massive undertaking! Currently, the cruel name of King of Hell Chu had reached a new height. In Iron Cloud Citadel, it was used to scare children.

"If you don't listen to me, I will let King of Hell Chu come and get you!"

So...

Everyone used these threats. But now one had to consider that the kind of people that could force King of Hell Chu to act so cruelly were probably not ordinary at all!

The power of Bu Tian Pavilion grew because of King of Hell Chu. More and more people came and asked to join.

During this particular period, Cheng Zi Ang and Chen Yu Tong

had just finished with their busy work. They were once again charged with another important task. It was to screen and train the newcomers improving the three halls of Bu Tian Pavilion in the process.

These jobs were enough to give the two headaches. If they did a good job then nothing would happen. But if something unfortunate happened then they would receive serious punishments.

No one could imagine the kind of treatment King of Hell Chu's subordinate could receive when they make a mistake!

The two had jointly asked King of Hell Chu to assign a different job to them. Even sneaking into Great Zhao and working as a spy was better than this. It was best that King of Hell Chu did this job himself; everyone would breathe better that way.

However, King of Hell Chu only needed to say the following for the two of them to abandon that thought: "If I can do this myself then why do I need you two? I want to sit around and still have a great career, too! If you can get such positions, introduce me as well! It's fine if you don't want to work! You just need to resign from your hall leader positions and become a foot soldier. Then I won't give you jobs to do!"

Cheng Zi Ang and Chen Yu Tong became crestfallen and cursed internally: Aren't you just sitting around with a great career? Each day, you just drink a pot of tea and read children's books. You just watch us risk our lives, and you are reprimanding us?

Of course the two did not dare to say these words in front of King of Hell Chu.

For Wu Qian Qian, this time period was relatively relaxing because King of Hell Chu was either reading children's books or just sitting in a daze. Each day, Wu Qian Qian only needed to take care of her responsibilities well and everything would be well.

However, Wu Qian Qian had a new feeling these days. Each time she saw King of Hell Chu, she wanted to pull that black robe and give him a kick. This bastard is shaking everything up; I almost forgot about the time he dealt with Li Jian Yin.

There was also that time he cursed at me for no reason; I still didn't say anything about that!

Time passed by like that uneventfully.

Late in the afternoon, Chu Yang was sitting quietly in a corner when he stirred. He was going to go out and avoid work when a guest came calling.

It was the Hei Mo Saber King!

The Saber King's arrival was not expected by Chu Yang. He came to say goodbye.

King level leader Soul Catcher was severely injured; plus, he did not have the face to hang around any longer. The Sword King's injuries also worsened, and he needed to return to Middle Three Heavens for treatment.

With a great loss of strength even though their three King level leaders were currently in Lower Three Heavens, the Hei Mo people would probably be annihilated if the enemies found them.

Therefore, after discussing with each other, the three decided to temporarily give up their mission in Lower Three Heavens and return to Middle Three Heavens. They would return when they have another opportunity.

Chu Yang was caught off guard.

According to his speculations, while the people of Golden Horse Riders Department were not yet found, they were surely still in Iron Cloud Citadel.

Chu Yang was still thinking about how to make the Hei Mo people and those from Golden Horse Riders Department fight with

each other one more time.

I can't believe they want to leave! Once they leave, I could only depend on the strength of Bu Tian Pavilion... How many Revered Martial Artists do I need to deal with a King level master... The danger just increased by tenfold!

"Senior... This, this... is... is..." King of Hell Chu truly wanted to say: If you leave, where will I find another scapegoat? But he did not dare.

"I know leaving like this is inconsiderate... But if we continue to stay here, we will run into great danger!" The Hei Mo Saber King was also somewhat reluctant. After all, they still did not complete any of the tasks that was discussed with King of Hell Chu.

Leaving now was essentially running away. But they had no choice and had to go.

"If Official Chu ever comes to Middle Three Heavens, I will warmly welcome you." The Hei Mo Saber King said such sincere and warm words that King of Hell Chu felt a little ashamed.

"If there is time, I will surely come to Middle Three Heavens for a visit." Since the other person had decided to leave, Chu Yang could only accept his decision.

"Goodbye!"

The Saber King left reluctantly. As for Chu Yang, there was an indescribable feeling in his heart.

The Hei Mo clan was no different from an enormous assassin organization. They were very ambitious, and everyone was savage and ruthless. Chu Yang's impression of them was never good. Since he found out that Mo Qing Wu suffered a lifelong injury because of them, he was determined to decimate the entire Hei Mo clan!

Especially those who were currently in Iron Cloud, none of them may escape! If trickery and deception were not enough to kill them

all, then Chu Yang would have to get ready to do it himself.

The Saber King was also a sentimental man, but it could not be denied that he was also very cruel.

Of course, during their cooperation, Chu Yang had put all that aside.

At this period, he paid close attention to Mo Cheng Yu's melancholia. He knew what Mo Cheng Yu was worried about. After Mo Qing Wu returns to the clan, her situation would probably not be too good.

Chu Yang could not change the Mo clan's decision. In other words, it was only a matter of time before he would have to go against the Mo clan.

But he currently had no backing. When the time comes, would he have to depend on the three powers of the Hei Mo clan?

This was Chu Yang's long-term plan...

That very day, the Hei Mo people immediately left Iron Cloud Citadel. Their leaving made Chu Yang's face grow ugly.

This put an oppressive feeling over everyone at Bu Tian Pavilion.

Chu Yang also understood that he could not depend on outside forces for everything. The right way would be to use one's own forces. But the problem was he did not have enough strength right now!

Up to now, Bu Tian Pavilion was nothing but a loud empty drum. They had more than enough strength to deal with ordinary people and officials. But going against the martial masters of Golden Horse Riders Department, they still had a long way to go.

This great gap in strength made Chu Yang's face furrowed.

Bu Tian Pavilion had now grown to almost four hundred members. Most of them were Martial Artists; only some were Martial Masters. As for Martial Great Masters, there only one

pitiful person. They had none higher than that!

Faced with the monumental force of Golden Horse Riders Department with the lowest dispatched martial masters ranking at Martial Great Master, King of Hell Chu was out of options.

Under such helpless state, Chu Yang immediately came to a decision. Within three days, he had to find the hiding place of the Golden Horse Riders Department! Currently, the two King level leaders of the Golden Horse Riders Department were severely injured. He could use this opportunity to kill them both and solve the problem directly!

After three days, those two King level leaders would recover a little strength, and it would be more difficult. The Hei Mo people left already. His Bu Tian Pavilion would be no more than a deer to be slaughtered by those two King level leaders.

Because of this, Chu Yang even had a “friendly” meeting with the leaders of the three biggest sects in Iron Cloud Citadel. They were not exactly big sects; they were actually groups of thugs that gathered together.

But their names were certainly bold. One was Golden Dragon Sect, one was Magical Teachings Sect, and there was another called Heavenly Cloud Gate Sect.

Right now, the three sect leaders were like little pupils sitting straight at the main hall of Bu Tian Pavilion. Each face was pale with terrified eyes. Their limbs trembled uncontrollably every now and then.

How could they not be anxious? Sitting opposite of them was King of Hell Chu, the fiercest person in all of Iron Cloud Nation’s history!

The three men looked at the horrible fierce mask, gloomy black robe, icy cold gaze, and ruthless killing aura in front of them. With the power to control the fate of men in front of them, they could

not help but feel a chill all over their bodies.

The influence of these sects were not small. Each one had more than one thousand thugs, rogues, and hoodlums. But everyone knew that, with one word from King of Hell Chu, one thousand people in their sect would become one thousand hanging heads! No one dared to even think about this!

King of Hell Chu was just done cleaning up the royal court, could it be that he will start cleaning up the sects? If not, why would an important character like him want to see three thug leaders like us?

The more they thought, the more the three shook. Plus, since he appeared until now, King of Hell Chu remained silent without saying a word. But his icy gaze remained fix on them... This only made them more terrified.

Unconsciously, the legs of Golden Dragon Sect's leader started to shake, and the forehead of Magical Teachings Sect's leader sweated like rain as his eyes became blurry. As for the leader of Heavenly Cloud Gate Sect, he could not maintain his composure and his teeth gnashed into each other. The more he tried to grit his teeth together the more they gnashed.

In reality, Chu Yang was just taking his time to judge the situation. Then he had to think a little about how to talk to them. He did not expect that these three would be afraid to that extent.

"Do you three know why I invited you today?" King of Hell Chu's voice was very calm, even warm.

But the three were already timidly sitting at the edge of their seats. When they heard King of Hell Chu say that, they immediately fell to the floor. Right after, the three chairs also fell over. While the sounds were not loud, to their ears, they were thunder.

Chapter 179: Working with thugs to search the whole citadel

We're finished. This was the joint thought of these three at this moment.

"King of Hell Chu, please spare us!" Golden Dragon Sect's leader knelt with his body close to the ground. He begged and smacked himself continually. He was in so much pain that tears ran down his face. He suddenly remembered what he just said. Oh f*! What did I say? I was asking forgiveness and I called him King of Hell Chu. Motherf*, if King of Hell Chu gets annoyed, then my head would be gone for sure!

"Official Chu... Minister Chu... please have mercy..." And like that, he smacked himself hard a few more times. He did not stop until his face was swollen like a pig. Then he bowed and repeatedly banged his head on the ground until it bled.

The other two witnessed this and shook uncontrollably. They both assumed that the leader of Golden Dragon Sect knew something.

This was big; the leader of Heavenly Cloud Gate trembled like an old sow and banged his head on the floor not daring to look up. As for the leader of Magical Teachings Sect he could not show any magical power and just fell flat to the ground. With tears and snot all over his face, he cried and begged, "Official Chu, please spare my life... I am really pitiful. I have a ninety-nine years old mother, and my youngest child is not yet one-month old."

Chu Yang was stunned, "Am I really that scary? I only said one thing!"

Cheng Zi Ang and Chen Yu Tong's faces reddened from trying to hold down their laughter. These three bastards were three super stooges. And they called themselves leaders of their own sects.

Clearly the minister just asked one question, and it was asked very gently. Yet, the whole bunch of them convulsed and shook.

A strange sound was suddenly heard; someone was so scared he farted.

“Sit down, all of you!” King of Hell Chu was annoyed and dumbfounded at the same time. He suddenly yelled out, “If anyone can’t control himself today and soils this place, I will kill all nine generations of his family!”

Heavenly Cloud Sect’s leader, who had just let out a fart, immediately became even more nervous and tightened his muscles. Whatever that was within, presently, could not be pried out with a saber.

King of Hell Chu had now discovered that being gentle would only lead to these people thinking of the worst. It would be much more effective if he screamed and yelled.

“Go back to your seats! Anyone who begs or cries, I will kill nine generations of his family!” King of Hell Chu shouted. The group of words “kill nine generations…” had become a common phrase for King of Hell Chu. In reality, he did not know what those nine generations were…

The three immediately went back to their seats and sat perfectly straight. Their eyes looked straight at their noses, and their noses were straight down the center of their bodies. If their subordinates had seen this, their jaws would drop in surprise.

“The three of you each have a few thousand subordinates. All of them are thugs and gangsters! Every one of you is nothing but trouble for this country! I have heard that you can do everything that an official can and everything that an official cannot as well. Three big sect leaders, you are really something!”

Chu Yang shook his head and changed tactics. If they were already terrified then there was no need for him to try to coax

them. It was better for him to scare them with strong words.

His words continued to make the three shake. These words of King of Hell Chu were filled with… a very strong killing aura.

“Even though I am in charge of Bu Tian Pavilion, why do I feel that my prestige is still far below all of yours in many aspects?” King of Hell Chu said with an icy tone.

“We do not dare!” The three immediately knelt down and banged their heads again.

“I didn’t think so!” King of Hell Chu sneered and became quiet. The three people were soaked; with their spirits already gone to the high heavens, they dared not move.

Even if it was Prince Tie Bu Tian of Iron Cloud Nation, they would not have been so scared. For the first time, they found out what it meant to lose your spirit from being so scared.

While Prince Tie Bu Tian was a powerful person, he knew right from wrong. As for King of Hell Chu, he was the very model of an unreasonable person.

“I originally planned to remove all of you! I have already cleansed the royal court and turned countless officials and royal family members into a pile of dry bones. Do you think I can’t clean up a bunch of thugs like you?” Chu Yang continued to intimidate them.

The three became even more terrified; their faces turned white. The eyes of Magical Teachings Sect’s leader rolled up, and he looked like he could faint right away…

“But I have always been a benevolent person, and I really don’t like killing people…” These words from King of Hell Chu’s mouth should have been a big joke to these people, but they could not bring themselves to laugh at this point.

“… So, today, I will give you a chance.” King of Hell Chu said sincerely, “But believe me, I would not mind if you turn down this opportunity.”

“We want this opportunity!” These three were not idiots. Everyone knew that turning down this opportunity meant disappearing from this world completely. If King of Hell Chu wanted to kill someone, then it did not matter if that person was ninety-nine years old or less than a month old.

Even farting would require some effort. But for King of Hell Chu to give an order to kill nine generations, no effort would be required.

“Ah...” King of Hell Chu’s countenance remained unchanged, “There are currently many strange faces in Iron Cloud Citadel. What I want are strangers who entered the citadel about half a month ago. I will be frank with you; I am looking for traitors and spies...”

“I also need information on them.” King of Hell Chu said in a grave tone, “Three days are enough?”

“Three days?” The three looked at each other.

“If you can’t find them in three days, you should flee on the night of the third day.” King of Hell Chu leaned back leisurely on his arm chair and said casually, “I don’t like to negotiate conditions or to make things complicated. What I like most are the results that I want.”

“I am not giving you anything great, but if you complete your task in three days, you can continue to live. If you do your job well, there is a good chance that we can work with each other again. You can even be a part of Bu Tian Pavilion! I will give you and your subordinates a chance at prosperity. Of course if you don’t find anything after three days...”

Chu Yang suddenly sat straight up and smiled warmly, “In eighteen years, you three will be three pages in history!” After he finished he immediately waved them off and said casually, “Goodbye!!!”

When the three gangsters walked out, they felt as if their legs had become mush. Streams of sweat poured down. Only when a cold gust of wind blew at them did they awaken from their nightmare.

The three looked at each other, and saw only fear in the others' eyes.

But somehow, what left the deepest impression was King of Hell Chu's promises: If you do your job well, there is a good chance that we can work with each other again. You can even be a part of Bu Tian Pavilion! I will give you and your subordinates a chance at prosperity.

King of Hell Chu threatened them so much, but they had little impression of that. What left a strong impression on them was his promises.

These were the promises of King of Hell Chu!

They were lowlifes at the very bottom of society; how could they not want to rise up? Who did not want to bring glory to their family name? Thugs... did not want to remain thugs for the rest of their lives.

Given the opportunity to succeed, no one would be more persistent than them.

Chu Yang understood this mentality well. Therefore, he would give them a few possibilities whenever he could. While he used intimidation tactics, it was not what Chu Yang had originally intended. It was all about choosing the best methodology.

In reality, of all of the Jiang Hu people in Lower Three Heavens, Middle Three Heavens, and Upper Three Heavens, who did not want to be valiant? Who was not daring? They were the ones who made the legends in the Nine Heavens.

'Generosity is common among ruffians; ingratitude is common with scholars!'

Chu Yang felt that these words were extremely true. Those

ruffians were uneducated, and they only had one simple principle: if you were good to me, I would be good to you; if you gave me three parts, I would give you everything; if you gave me a hand, I would give you my life. And if you treated me badly, insulted me, or schemed against me, you would surely die by my hands.

However, those who were well-read and had calculating minds tended to think about gains and losses. He was good to me, but would it be worth it to give my life for him? He helped me before, and he got in trouble. I am in a tough situation as well; helping him would make it tougher for me; is it worth it?

Therefore, it was more likely that people trusted others with their lives in Jiang Hu while people in the political arena tended to betray each other and set schemes against their benefactors in order to advance.

In Lower Three Heavens, there was a cautionary tale: You are traveling on a road and ran into a butcher who was injured. You saved this person and brought him to a physician. This person would be forever thankful to you and be your lifelong friend. But if the person you ran into was a scholar, it would be best to leave him be!

It was because he would not only be ungrateful, he would even shift the blame on you and say that you caused his injuries. He would think that his family situation was difficult and the culprit had already run away. So how would he find the money to take care of his injuries? You might believe you were doing a good thing, but good people often get used...

This was also a type of logic in life.

Chu Yang had no ill-feelings toward the gangsters, but he had to see if they were worthwhile. They, too, had to be able to put in an honest effort to help; there was no such thing as a free meal in this world.

It had not been an hour, but all of the thugs in Iron Cloud Citadel

were already up and about. It was as if they were under the influence of aphrodisiac. Their eyes shined more than when they were looking at pretty women; they were everywhere searching for information on the strangers.

The army was searching, Bu Tian Pavilion's spy network was searching, inspectors from the court were searching, gangsters were searching, thugs were searching, beggars were searching, wives were searching, and even children were searching.

There was a big manhunt in all of Iron Cloud Citadel.

Within a short amount of time, Bu Tian Pavilion's spy network was flooded with information. They had to dive in and screen everything...

As for the leader, our Minister Chu sat with a book called "Innocent Dog and Rogue Pig." He was reading and giggling every now and then.

He did not bother to pay attention to anything that was happening on the outside and remained steadfast in his "scholarly pursuit."

Wu Qian Qian could not do anything but stare at him as she sat on the side.

Chapter 180: Blow the water of Nine Heavens dry with my purple jade flute

His investigation into bending saber energy still did not have any notable progress. But Chu Yang was not discouraged, and continued to study it slowly.

These days, in Heavenly Armament Pavilion, Gu Du Xing and the newcomers were practicing at full steam. Everyone was training to the point of exhaustion, and Mo Qing Wu stood on the sidelines cheering them on.

Mo Cheng Yu's injuries were gradually improving.

Late in the afternoon, Wu Qian Qian was screening some of the information and decided to interrupt Minister Chu's giggling. She purposely read out loud some irrelevant information, but our Minister Chu remained reclining there as if he heard nothing.

But when Wu Qian Qian read a seemingly very ordinary piece of news, King of Hell Chu suddenly sat straight up. A frightening aura shot out of his eyes. This different gaze shocked Wu Qian Qian and made her heart beat like a drum.

"Two people entered the southern gate, one old and one young. The old person looked stately, and the youth looked valiant with a purple jade flute in his hand."

The three words purple jade flute made Chu Yang shoot up as if he was just electrocuted.

According to Chu Yang's memory, Mo Tian Ji also had a purple jade flute that he was inseparable with. First, it was a pastime activity of his, and second, it was his signature weapon. Plus, it also had special hidden mechanisms.

That information made Chu Yang wonder: Could it be that Mo Tian Ji has arrived at Iron Cloud Citadel?

Half a year ago, Chu Yang hated this guy to the bone. But, currently, thinking about this name, Chu Yang had complicated, mixed feelings.

“Place all efforts into finding those two people!” Chu Yang hastily ordered.

“What?” Wu Qian Qian burst out in surprise. She did not expect that Chu Yang would react so intensely and oddly; she was caught completely off guard.

“One young and one old with a purple jade flute, find out where they are!” Chu Yang emphasized every word. His eyes flashed a terrifying cold light.

Two hours later, the sky was becoming dark. Chu Yang wore a blue outfit and walked towards the Welcome Inn. He stood at the door for a while before walking up the stairs. As he reached a door to one of the guest rooms, he gently knocked.

“Who is it?” A firm voice asked lightly.

“Blow the water of Nine Heavens dry with my purple jade flute.” Chu Yang replied, “Heavenly secrets (TLN: Tian Ji) are difficult to change, but heavenly secrets are easily found!”

The voice inside suddenly became quiet. After a long time, a refined voice slowly said, “Interesting! Please come in!”

The door opened revealing a thin old man’s face looking at Chu Yang guardedly. Within moments after the old man’s face entered Chu Yang’s mind, a big explosion occurred in his head. The scene of his ambush at the Wind and Thunder Platform in the Upper Three Heavens flashed through his memory.

The old man in front of him was one of three King level masters that attacked him.

“You are…?” He asked suspiciously.

“A friend!” Chu Yang smiled and replied, “Mo Cheng Yu is

staying at my place!”

“Huh? Please come in. Come in!” His countenance temporarily turned pleasant, unable to hide his happiness in the corners of his eyes. He immediately made way for Chu Yang to come in.

Chu Yang took a deep breath and walked in.

Inside, a refined looking young man in white was holding a magnificent, clear purple jade flute. He had a bright face that looked like it was made from chiseled jade, and his eyes were deep like bottomless ponds.

His long hair flowed down his white robe like a waterfall. His face was as white and fine as that of a woman. But he was filled with an all-encompassing aura that seemed to shoot out of his eyes.

Chu Yang’s emotions were surging. In that moment, the previous life and this life seemed to have merged with each other. Then they were pushed apart in the blink of an eye.

Chu Yang was extremely familiar with that face.

It was the face of his best friend! It was the face of his only friend! It was also the face of the mastermind that orchestrated his death!

Mo Tian Ji!

At this moment, Chu Yang looked at Mo Tian Ji, and Mo Tian Ji’s piercing eyes looked at Chu Yang’s face. Those eyes seemed to see right through Chu Yang. Mo Tian Ji smiled and said elegantly, “Honored guest, please sit down!”

“I came uninvited; can I still be called an honored guest?” Chu Yang replied casually.

“I only just arrived at Lower Three Heavens; those who come to find me and are not enemies, then they must be honored guests!” Mo Tian Ji smiled and said lightly, “And you are obviously not my enemy!”

“How do you know I am not your enemy?” Chu Yang replied

with an intimidating voice.

“If you were an enemy then I would have died without a place to bury my body already!” Mo Tian Ji smiled. He turned and walked toward the bed. He took out a small package and opened it up to take out a teapot. Then he placed it on the table and gently ripped tea leaves and put them into the teapot. He poured in boiling water. Finally, he covered the opening of the teapot with a white cloth, poured out the water, and poured boiling water in the teapot again.

He said casually, “Mr. Fang, you can go outside! I want to have a few words with this friend!”

In everything that he did, Mo Tian Ji was always focused and orderly. Those who watched him never felt troubled. In fact, his elegant actions were touching and full of nobility.

“Second young master...!” The old man shouted with an awkward countenance.

“He came to find me. Plus, since the time he came in, he never discussed official business. Even though I went to make tea, he did not rush and just sat there waiting quietly. This proves that he is not an impatient person. It does not make sense that he would be aggressive! The moment he entered, he spoke directly to me. Of course he would want to speak to me and rather not let a third person hear!”

Mo Tian Ji smiled and continued, “Therefore, you should go out and not try to listen in!”

As he was saying these words, his eyes did not move and his voice remained calm. However, there was no less authority than that of a powerful person.

This was Mo Tian Ji!

Chu Yang silently lamented. Those words and that attitude was enough to show that the second young master of the Mo clan had

surpassed all of his peers!

While people like Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang might become famous like him in the future, they could not compare to him now. And Chu Yang knew exactly why.

Currently, Gu Du Xing and the others did not have experience like Mo Tian Ji. Therefore they were not mature like him. Plus, they were children of concubines and were not in the position to become clan leaders so there was no great pressure.

On the other hand, Mo Tian Ji and his eldest brother, Mo Tian Yun, were both legitimate heirs and were both equally exceptional. The competition between the two brothers had become extremely heated.

Mo Tian Ji was currently being tempered so his every action revealed the demeanor of a commanding general.

“Please sit down. May I ask your name?” Mo Tian Ji still did not look up. His right hand remained on the tea pot shaking it gently. Each time he shook, there was a strange rhythm.

“My surname is Chu, Chu Yang!” Chu Yang slowly walked toward Mo Tian Ji, and sat down comfortably without feeling like an outsider.

In his previous life, Mo Tian Ji was his biggest problem. It was Mo Tian Ji who pushed Chu Yang to his end. So when he saw that face, Chu Yang already wanted to beat him up.

He had never expected that they would meet this very day...

“Patience, I am still making tea!” Mo Tian Ji said peaceably.

Chu Yang laughed and watched the steam gently rising from the teapot without saying another word.

“Are you really the minister of Bu Tian Pavilion, King of Hell Chu?” Mo Tian Ji never looked up and continued minding the teapot, “I truly never thought that the famed King of Hell Chu

would be so young!”

“Really?” Chu Yang asked with great interest, “Why do you say that?”

“Earlier, you said, ‘Mo Cheng Yu is staying at my place!’” Mo Tian Ji gently smiled and continued, “Just these words were enough for me to determine your identity!”

“I am listening!” Chu Yang tilted his head. His enjoyment in his past life was to listen to Mo Tian Ji logically draw conclusions from practically nothing.

Since his rebirth, his methodology was greatly influenced by Mo Tian Ji.

“We ran into the Hei Mo clan and got separated. They wanted to kill us. My sister is the weakest, and she is also the person with a Three Yin Meridian. She has enormous potential so the Hei Mo people chose to eliminate her first!” Mo Tian Ji continued, “Given the situation, Mo Cheng Yu would not have been able to protect my little sister well even if he paid a great price. Therefore, the best solution would have been to escape!”

“And being on the run, human strength would eventually run out. On the other hand, the Hei Mo clan is powerful with much manpower. Without help, they would eventually fall into the hands of the Hei Mo clan. If Mo Cheng Yu is at your place, then my little sister is surely there, too. Otherwise, Mo Cheng Yu would have departed from here a long time ago!” Mo Tian Ji smiled and explained.

Without waiting for Chu Yang to ask, he continued, “Facing against the power of the Hei Mo clan, only a really powerful person would be capable of helping. In this Iron Cloud Citadel, there are very few such powerful people. Plus, this person must be extremely wise to be able to protect them through everything! Because the Hei Mo people would not care about secular power, even an extremely powerful person in Iron Cloud can anger them

with the wrong explanation, and there would be rivers of blood. Therefore, this person must be of superior intellect!”

Chu Yang nodded, “Makes sense!”

“In this Iron Cloud Citadel, there are three possible people with such characteristics! Tie Bu Tian, Tie Long Cheng, and you, King of Hell Chu.” Mo Tian Ji said lightly.

“Tie Bu Tian and Tie Long Cheng would not dare to provoke big trouble like this; they also would not dare to take on the risks. This is because they are carrying Iron Cloud Nation on their shoulders.” Mo Tian Ji continued.

“But how could can you be sure that I, King of Hell Chu, would be so daring?” Chu Yang said cheekily.

“Hahaha…” Mo Tian Ji laughed and replied, “Recently, there has been a lot of rumors about King of Hell Chu. Each one clearly showed that King of Hell Chu likes to take risks!”

Chapter 181: Master the world

“Given the current strength of Bu Tian Pavilion alone, this cannot be done.” Mo Tian Ji continued, “But King of Hell could do it and be successful. This person does not like to take risks, but if the situation requires it, he would not be afraid to do so. I had arrived at the citadel less than two hours ago; since entering this inn, I did not even have time to put my belongings down, and you are already at my door. With such an information network, Tie Bu Tian is a possibility, but he would not take the risk.”

“Plus, you had said, ‘Blow the water of Nine Heavens dry with my purple jade flute. Heavenly secrets are difficult to change, but heavenly secrets are easily found.’ These words clearly show that you already know who I am.”

“King of Hell Chu has the surname Chu, and your name is Chu Yang…”

Mo Tian Ji casually concluded, “Therefore, you are King of Hell Chu!”

At this time, the tea had been steeped just enough. Mo Tian Ji took out a teacup and gently placed it in front of Chu Yang. He tilted his hand slightly and slowly poured the green tea into the cup. The steam rose and covered his face. After that, he poured a cup of tea for himself and said his last words on the subject, “Given so many clues, if you are not King of Hell Chu, then I, Mo Tian Ji, must be blind!”

“Haha. You are really amazing!” Chu Yang looked at his tea with interest and said, “Could this be the legendary Tian Ji tea?”

“No!” Mo Tian Ji slowly sat down and replied, “Tian Ji tea requires Tian Ji tea leaves, Tian Ji teapot, and Tian Ji water. Plus, it has to be made by my own hands. Since I am out and about in Jiang Hu, you can only drink tea I made from Tian Ji tea leaves. So it is not a true Tian Ji tea.”

“So that’s it!” Chu Yang lifted up the teacup and took a sip. Then he smiled and said, “In fact, I do not sense the Tian Ji aroma.”

Mo Tian Ji smiled and replied, “If you are willing, you will get to experience the Tian Ji aroma one day.”

This statement indicated that if Chu Yang was to become friends with him, Chu Yang would get to know what kind of person he was!

“Yes!” Chu Yang nodded, “But this tea is too high class; I am afraid I cannot afford to drink too much of it.”

Mo Tian Ji thoughtfully looked at him for a while. Then he asked, “My little sister is well?”

From the beginning until now, he had been composed. But when he asked this question, an anxious, perhaps even worried, look appeared in his eyes.

He had been keeping himself from asking, and was using tea to calm himself down. But when the time came, he could not maintain his composure. The concerns Mo Tian Ji had for his little sister surpassed that of ordinary siblings.

Furthermore, Mo Tian Ji was able to sense something ominous in Chu Yang’s words. You have saved my little sister, how is it that you cannot afford to drink my tea? You can drink it for the rest of your life if you want, but you said you cannot afford to. This proves that something has happened to my little sister!

While Mo Tian Ji did not say these words out loud, his mind already knew. He was apprehensive.

“There is one thing that I find hard to understand.” Chu Yang continued to drink his tea casually, “You have always been famous for having superior intellect and being a thorough planner. Things are rarely kept from your all seeing eyes. But when you heard of some ancient remains, you just hastily went there without suspecting that it could be a trap.”

Chu Yang slammed the teacup onto the table and looked up Mo Tian Ji. His gaze was as sharp as a saber; he asked coldly, “This does not fit your intelligent character. This is also the cause for Xiao Wu getting ambushed and injured. I want to hear your explanation.”

Mo Tian Ji gripped tightly onto his teacup. And while he was still looking down, Chu Yang could feel a pair of icy eyes glaring at him from behind that black hair.

“Who are you that I have to explain it to you?” Mo Tian Ji replied coldly.

“Even if you don’t tell me, I can already guess a few things. Perhaps your little sister is a hindrance in your competition for the ruling position in the clan?” Chu Yang said fiercely, “Your little sister has always been close to you; everyone knows this. So if something unfortunate happens to her, nobody would suspect you! Right?”

“What are you trying to say?” Mo Tian Ji slowly lifted his head and looked at Chu Yang, “I, Mo Tian Ji, am this kind of person?”

“If something unfortunate happens to your little sister at the same time that the eldest young master, Mo Tian Yun, left, he cannot avoid being suspected. If the clan gets angry and blames Mo Tian Yun, then you would have your chance. You are, after all, a talent comparable to Mo Tian Yun; you only need one opportunity to be his replacement.”

Chu Yang continued coldly, “In losing a little sister, you would get a lifetime of glory and power!” His whole body tilted forward; he was right next to Mo Tian Ji’s face, “While you might feel guilty for the rest of your life, this deal is very beneficial. Am I right, second young master?”

Mo Tian Ji breathed heavily and stared at Chu Yang. Suddenly, bam!!! The teacup in his hand shattered to little pieces. He slammed his hand into the big table, and it turned into a pile of

wood pieces. Mo Tian Ji yelled furiously, “Chu Yang, don’t use your evil belly to measure the heart of a good person. I would sooner kill myself than bring any harm to my little sister! What do you know? You are just making wild guesses!” Mo Tian Ji gritted his teeth, and, with burning red eyes, he said, “If it were not for the fact that you saved my little sister, I would have killed you already!”

Swoosh. The old man who went out earlier had entered through the window. He asked, “Second young master, is everything okay?”

Eyes filled with killing aura, he looked in Chu Yang’s direction.

“Leave! Get out!” Mo Tian Ji pointed to the window and screamed loudly.

The old man hesitated, then disappeared out the window again.

“What’s wrong? Did I hit a nerve?” Chu Yang looked at him mockingly, feeling totally refreshed.

In his previous life, Mo Tian Ji had never once lost control. Even if someone smashed all the bones in his body, his attitude would remain cool.

But Chu Yang knew that there was only one person capable of making Mo Tian Ji lose his composure; it was none other than Mo Qing Wu.

The love that Mo Tian Ji had for his little sister could not be any stronger.

Therefore, Chu Yang used Mo Qing Wu to attack him.

Otherwise, he could not have forced Mo Tian Ji to speak the truth. Chu Yang had always been suspicious of this incident. Mo Tian Ji was not capable of making such a stupid mistake.

As for the part about Mo Tian Ji using Mo Qing Wu to frame Mo Tian Yun, Chu Yang was just making a wild accusation to make

him angry.

Mo Tian Ji's arrogance, no one knew it better than Chu Yang.

This person was arrogant to the bones. Success for him had to be perfection. If anything was not perfect, he would never do it! Therefore, he could not have possibly harmed his beloved sister to frame his older brother!

Mo Tian Ji panted and slowly sat down. He asked quietly, "How is Xiao Wu?"

"You should answer me first!" Chu Yang replied coldly.

Mo Tian Ji took a deep breath, and suddenly became composed again. He knew that if he did not speak first, King of Hell Chu would never give in.

"In this life, you are the first person capable of prying secret information out of me." Mo Tian Ji replied softly.

"King of Hell Chu is indeed formidable!" Mo Tian Ji smiled and continued, "You will pay for this someday!"

"I am not interested in your nonsensical flattery!" Chu Yang said casually, "Your position as second young master of the Mo clan does not scare me either!"

"That day, when we arrived at Connecting Clouds Mountain, we heard of a rumor about some ancient ruins; I did not pay too much attention to it." His gaze became distant as he recounted the events, "But when I saw a fragment of Purple Crystal, I started to believe."

"This is it!" Mo Tian Ji took out a piece of Purple Crystal and placed it on the table. (TLN: There were two tables in that room?)

"We found this under the bed in the house of the hunter that we were staying with. He did not know what it was. At the time, Elder Fang felt an energy fluctuation in the room and carefully searched among the pile of rubbish under the bed. When we asked the

hunter, he said he did not remember when he picked it up. He only remembered that it was on that mountain."

Mo Tian Ji smiled wryly.

Chu Yang took the piece of Purple Crystal and held it up to his eyes. It was a thin hexagon, only about as thick as two sheets of paper. Even though Mo Tian Ji had washed it, there was still some residual dirt from over the years.

"I could not tell that it was Purple Crystal when I looked at it." Mo Tian Ji smiled.

Purple Crystal!

Purple Crystal was a priceless item in this world. Within it was the energy to increase a person's strength and mentality by one level. Only a handful of people from the big clans knew about this item.

"If you want to know whether it is Purple Crystal, you have to look through the light of a lamp or the sun." Mo Tian Ji stated.

Chu Yang brought the Purple Crystal next to a lamp and looked curiously. He suddenly became shocked.

There was indeed a secret inside this hexagonal Purple Crystal.

A pattern appeared in his palm. They were beautifully written words: Master the world!

Master the world!

Chu Yang was startled. These words were nothing to an ordinary person, but to a martial artist, these words were representative of a powerful person!

Three thousand years ago, there was a martial artist in the Nine Heavens who did not start training in martial arts until he was twenty years old. He began at an ordinary sect, but with his supreme wisdom, he improved on cultivation techniques. In Lower Three Heavens, he achieved the state of Revered Martial Artist.

After that, he went up to Middle Three heavens and joined some clan. He created his own techniques based on the techniques of this clan. And like that, he continued to advance. When he went up to Upper Three Heavens, he dominated for the rest of his lifetime.

He achieved everything in only ninety years!

Chapter 182: I have my own way

Anyone would have to acknowledge this person's wisdom and his unparalleled comprehension of martial arts! Even techniques that had been tossed aside would become incredible in this person's hands.

This person's surname was Xiao; Xiao Feng Yun was his name. He gave this name to himself, a take on "laughing storm." (TLN: Xiao Feng Yun, not exactly the same, but very similar in sound.) According to legends, his highest achievement was ninth grade Martial Monarch!

Mixing up the blue sky, and arrogantly laughing at the storm. Master the world with the universe within me.

Xiao Feng Yun evaluated his own worth with these words. In the eyes of this extraordinary man, life in the world was also just that. Whether dynasties rose or fell, human life could be controlled, could be governed!

The palm pattern on the inside of the Purple Crystal was indicative of Xiao Feng Yun's sign. Only a madman would do such a thing, and use a hand to represent himself.

It indicated that everything was in the palm of his hand.

This piece of Purple Crystal made Chu Yang remember the Pure Purple Jade Essence pendant that was on his chest. The writing and pattern inside looked like it could have come from the same mold.

Meng Chao Ran had once said that a low-level Martial Emperor would have to put great effort into leaving an inscription like that.

"That artifact appeared after the mountain collapsed. Countless people also came to search the area but found nothing." Mo Tian Ji said, "I was pulled in the moment I saw this Purple Crystal fragment."

Chu Yang finally understood. With this item, even he would be lured!

For a martial artist, this was more attractive than the number one beauty in the world.

“The very next day, I gave the hunter one hundred liangs of gold for this piece of Purple Crystal and went deep into Connecting Clouds Mountain.” Mo Tian Ji said.

One hundred liangs of gold… this guy is too cheap. If it is Purple Crystal, its value far exceeds one hundred liangs of gold. Let alone the fact that it held an earth-shattering secret inside.

“One hundred liangs of gold is actually a lot. I originally wanted to give him only one hundred liangs of silver.” Mo Tian Ji said casually, “With these poor hunters, ten liangs of gold would have been enough to make them rich. But if I had given so little, I would feel uneasy afterward. So I gave him gold instead.”

Chu Yang smiled wryly.

Mo Tian Ji is truly incredible. He can unconsciously see through people’s thoughts and answer questions before they are asked.

Talking to him is like hearing him muttering to himself. If he did not want you to talk, then you would not the chance to open your mouth.

“On the second day, I brought elder Fang, Mo Cheng Yu and my little sister to the ruins on Connecting Clouds Mountain. That spot was on a cliff on the side of the mountain. It was a few thousand feet deep. The cliff face was practically vertical. I was worried that my little sister would get hurt. Plus, I was not sure if there were any dangerous creatures so I left Mo Cheng Yu with on little sister on the top of the mountain.”

Mo Tian Ji smiled bitterly.

Chu Yang thought that if he saw such treacherous terrain, he would not let his eight year old sister take the risk either…

“But after I went down, I discovered a pond filled with oil. I searched everywhere and did not find anything. Right at that moment, I heard a voice from the opposing cliff face saying, ‘Second young master of the Mo clan, how did you get to such a special spot? You have made us Hei Mo people really happy!’ After that, flames burst out... The oil caught on fire. Can you imagine how troubled I was?” Mo Tian Ji smiled terribly, “The cliff face stood straight up, and the fire rose high!”

“While I was anxious about my sister. Knowing surely that she would be ambushed above, I was out of options.” Mo Tian Ji took a deep breath, “Elder Fang and I took turn digging a hole into the mountain using the purple jade flute. But with all our efforts, we only managed to dig a few dozen feet deep. The fire was so strong that the face of Connecting Clouds Mountain was heated red. What can a few dozen feet do?”

“Luckily, the heavens always provide. At the last moment, we accidently dug into Martial Monarch Xiao Feng Yun’s cave. It was then that we luckily escaped with our lives!” At this time Mo Tian Ji said these words very slowly as his eyes quietly studied Chu Yang’s face taking in every little detail.

The remnants of a powerful Martial Monarch in the Nine Heavens was an enormous temptation to anyone!

No matter who it was, they could not remain indifferent upon hearing such information. Currently, if Chu Yang showed the tiniest sign of greed, Mo Tian Ji would immediately change his attitude toward him immediately!

Chu Yang shouted, “I am not concerned with whatever you obtained and certainly do not want anything to do with them.”

Mo Tian Ji’s eyes momentarily flashed an odd emotion, “Why? The treasures of a Martial Monarch, anyone in this world would desire them. Aren’t you the least bit curious?”

“I have my own techniques and my own path.” Chu Yang said

casually, “I want to go my own way! At the same time, I don’t want any distractions. Let’s just say that the word Supreme is also just another distraction for me!”

Mo Tian Ji’s eyes narrowed as he looked carefully at Chu Yang for a while, “You are remarkable!” He thought for a little and said, “Brother Chu, your way of thinking is very much like mine.”

“…oh.” Chu Yang thought a little and answered cautiously.

“Perhaps you already know the appeal that this Purple Crystal has for me.” Mo Tian Ji sighed, “Even remnants from a Supreme master would not stir up any desire for me, but this relic… I must have it!”

Chu Yang completely understood.

All of Mo Tian Ji’s life, while he was powerful, he rarely actually fought. He always had the habit of using his intellect to solve problems. If he could avoid confrontation, then he would. He enjoyed the act of manipulation!

This aspect coincided with part of Diwu Qing Rou’s character.

The ninth grade Martial Monarch Xiao Feng Yun who left behind this relic was also that type of person. He became master of the world using a kind of intellectual cultivation!

This was the greatest temptation for Mo Tian Ji!

“The people from the Hei Mo clan already got wind of that location.” Mo Tian Ji slowly said, “They planned to wait on the cliff face and follow us. With me going deep down the cliff face, they had a golden opportunity! The fact that there was a pond of oil at the bottom made their plans all the better…” (TLN: So pond of oil is naturally occurring. Mountain split into two with two cliff faces and tar pit is in the middle?)

“Haha, this was truly a coincidence!” While Mo Tian Ji’s voice was very calm, Chu Yang could hear an undertone of iciness that could chill a person to the bones.

“My little sister… is she okay?” Mo Tian Ji changed the topic and asked for the third time.

Everything had been explained clearly. Even though Mo Tian Ji did not know why King of Hell Chu was so insistent on hearing the details, he could sense that if he did not explain clearly, Chu Yang would not give him any information about his little sister.

“She got stabbed by the sword of the Hei Mo Sword King… right here!” Chu Yang pointed to his chest and stopped there.

Mo Tian Ji immediate became as pale as a white sheet of paper!

He weakly sat down and muttered, “Is her Three Yin Meridian destroyed?” It was now certain that his little sister was not dead. If it was just an ordinary injury, Chu Yang would not have pointed out the location like so. For a female, that location was the location of the Cold Yin Meridian. For Mo Qing Wu, this location was even more important; it was the intersection of her Three Yin Meridian.

“Yes!” Chu Yang said calmly.

Mo Tian Ji tightly clenched his fists. Then he released them and clenched them again. His white face gradually showed the color dark purple. He hissed quietly, “I will not… let… you… get… away… with… this!”

“Who is it?” Chu Yang asked in shock.

Mo Tian Ji looked up. He closed his eyes for a long time before calmly answering, “Brother Chu, this does not concern you! I will bring my little sister back to the clan in Middle Three Heavens immediately!”

“What happens after you return?” Chu Yang asked.

“After we return… I will try my best to protect her.” A look of pain flashed in Mo Tian Ji’s eyes.

“Can you protect her?” Chu Yang sneered, “Mo Tian Ji, you are only a second young master…”

“Then if she stays here, can you protect her?” Mo Tian Ji snorted and asked. Chu Yang’s words had undoubtedly hit Mo Tian Ji’s sensitive spot, but he remained steadfast and asked a question that left Chu Yang dumbfounded.

Chu Yang was silent.

The two opponents threw away any pretenses and continued the heated exchange.

“I like her a lot!” Chu Yang took a deep breath and said, “I do not want her to return to the clan and receive unfair treatment!”

“What do you mean by like?” Mo Tian Ji’s two eyes shot out two life-threatening sharp rays. They were like two swords piercing directly at Chu Yang’s heart.

“If I tell you it’s the kind of love between a man and a woman, would you believe me?” Chu Yang smiled.

“Haha...!!!” Mo Tian Ji laughed and shook his head, “Brother Chu, your words are too funny!” It had been a long time since anyone had made Mo Tian Ji laugh so he could not hold it down.

It was because these words were said by King of Hell Chu!

“Is it really that funny?” Chu Yang muttered in annoyance.

“Fine! Fine! I don’t want to argue with you about this anymore.” Mo Tian Ji tried to control his laughter but was still having trouble. After a long while, he said sincerely, “Where is Xiao Wu now? Please bring me to see her.”

“There is a piece of good news that I want to tell you.” Chu Yang said.

“What is it?”

“I am sure I could heal Xiao Wu’s Three Yin Meridian.” Chu Yang said hesitantly, “But not right now... at the moment, I am not capable. I need time, perhaps two more years.”

“Are you a physician?” Mo Tian Ji was startled.

“Cough… cough… No.”

“Haha. I am grateful for you good intentions. When I return to the clan, I will relay your words to my father.” Mo Tian Ji sighed softly.

Essentially, Mo Tian Ji was not exactly convinced with Chu Yang’s words.

This was exactly what Chu Yang was afraid of. He could not provide any evidence to support his words, and his current strength was not enough to gain the respect of the Mo clan.

Chapter 183: I would like to invite you for a drink

When Chu Yang and Mo Tian Ji left the inn it was already dark, and the moon was not out.

Chu Yang looked at the darkness of the night and asked himself: Could it be that because of this Mo Tian Ji will be able to get the sense of mastering the world and gradually become the Master of Calculation and Manipulation in the future?

Inside Heavenly Armament Pavilion, four young men were training fiercely. The appearance and attitude of the five today were completely different from before; all of them were overflowing with energy.

These past few days, they trained to the point of addiction. Having three extreme breakthroughs each day was now something they could no longer live without. Plus, they all felt that fighting each other also helped them a lot in improving their own techniques.

Under such pressure, it had not been even half a month yet, and they all felt as if they could break through at any moment.

Since then, they could not help but feel a little intoxicated: Break through one grade in one month, two grades in two months... If that continues, wouldn't we get to Emperor level in four or five years and Supreme level in ten years?

Thinking of such a bright future, they became as excited as if they ate aphrodisiac.

With such excitement, Ji Mo immediately coaxed Luo Ke Di into fighting in the name of learning and gave Luo Ke Di a beating to his heart's desire.

Then, Luo Ke Di brought his battered face over to check on Rui Bu Tong's health and beat him up while he was there.

Dong Wu Shang was enthusiastically challenging Gu Du Xing and got beat up severely. So Dong Wu Shang took it out on Ji Mo and beat him up ruthlessly.

In the whole group, Rui Bu Tong had the weakest cultivation, so he did not have anyone to dump his anger only. That night, while Luo Ke Di was sleeping soundly, Rui Bu Tong bagged his head and beat him all over.

Since that night, the war of the five officially began.

Each day, everyone was miserable from fighting. Gu Du Xing advanced the quickest and was the strongest in the group. He was rarely injured while the rest were in black and blue almost every day.

The worst part was whenever Chu Yang came back, Ji Mo and the gang would politely invite him to join, “Hey, boss, I need you to help me with this. I feel like there is a flaw in this move...”

Then they justifiably beat up the boss.

Luo Ke Di had followed suit and had matches with Chu Yang; the results were as expected.

Dong Wu Shang, however, did not dare to fight too hard because he needed a favor from Chu Yang. He really wanted a precious saber, Chu Yang was the best person to make it for him so he did not dare hurt Chu Yang.

As for Rui Bu Tong... he was currently the tail behind Gu Du Xing.

In this time period, Chu Yang suffered greatly. But after each fight, the sword spirit would curse him to no end. Then it would point out the flaws in one move, the way to break the other, and how to improve another...

Chu Yang carefully noted everything.

Looking at the evil gazes from Ji Mo and Luo Ke Di, Chu Yang

thought to himself: Are you guys happy? Are you addicted to making fun of me? You will be begging me for many things in the future.

When the time comes, if I don't torture you, I am not a Chu!

These days, Mo Qing Wu was also very happy. Each day, she had many big martial brothers to play with her. Plus, they all were envious of her saber... Little Lolita's sense of vanity was gratified. Therefore, she would sit at the door every day with narrowed crescent eyes watching the monkey circus. Every now and then, she jumped up and cheered for them.

Also during these days, Mo Cheng Yu's injuries had significantly improved. He had regained about fifty percent of his energy, but his countenance became more and more difficult to look at.

Tonight, after the training was over, it was Luo Ke Di's turn to cook dinner. Everyone immediately complained the dinner was unpalatable. After dinner was over, they all gave Luo Ke Di a beating, free of charge.

Rui Bu Tong worked especially hard in this effort.

During the chaos, Gu Du Xing suddenly frowned and said, "Someone is coming."

Hearing him said this, the four immediately separated and cleaned up their battlegrounds. The next moment, they were all sitting leisurely around a stone table drinking tea.

The whole bunch sat happily with grace and composure; there was no evidence of a fight.

The door opened.

One person in black and one person in white appeared at the same time. Behind them was an old man.

The eyes of Gu Du Xing and company immediately widened.

After that, everyone reacted differently.

The person in black was, of course, Chu Yang. The person in white was tall and handsome with sharp sword-like brows. Each step and gesture he made was full of elegance and composure.

His eyes were calm and indifferent, and yet they were deep and clear like water in an autumn ponds.

“Second brother!” Mo Qing Wu cried out happily. She flew into his arms like a swallow returning to its nest.

The other person was also excited, “Little sister! Xiao Wu... I missed you so much. Let me look at you. You’re so thin...”

Mo Tian Ji lost all of his elegance and composure the moment he saw his little sister. He laughed loudly; his face was filled with happiness.

“Mo Tian Ji?” Gu Du Xing and the others blurted out in surprise. Besides Ji Mo, everyone else showed a look of anxiety.

These five were all talents of the great clans in Middle Three Heavens. They were all famous as new rising stars. But currently, even those who were to be famous legends like Mo Tian Ji in the future were humbled by his presence.

It was because Mo Tian Ji was famous for both brains and brawn! This was something none of them were able to achieve yet.

Luo Ke Di’s clan and Mo Tian Ji’s clan were mortal enemies. Therefore, Luo Ke Di knew Mo Tian Ji’s strength better than anyone else. It could be said that amongst the youths in the clan, Mo Tian Ji was the biggest threat; he completely surpassed his eldest brother, Mo Tian Yun.

Mo Tian Ji currently did not gain the title Master of Calculation and Manipulation yet. But amongst the youths, besides the mysterious “Evil Young Master” (TLN: One of the twelve famous people in the future.), Mo Tian Ji was the most talented.

“So much excitement!” Mo Tian Ji smiled calmly, but there, a ray of sorrow and anger flashed from the depth of his eyes. Since the

moment he held his little sister, he had checked her energy flow.

His little sister's Three Yin Meridian was not injured, but completely destroyed.

This reality angered Mo Tian Ji tremendously.

At the same time, Mo Tian Ji was startled by the presence of these people here! Why are there so many familiar faces? They are all people to be reckoned with.

"Exciting? Mo Tian Ji, do you want to hang around and join in the excitement with us?" Luo Ke Di hugged his shoulders and asked cynically.

"No, it's already exciting enough with Brother Gu and Brother Dong hanging out with you. Look, there is also Ji Mo, too. That's fun enough! As for me, it's probably better if I don't join!" Mo Tian Ji smiled and answered warmly, "Luo Ke Di, compared to you, I am already too old!"

These words left Luo Ke Di fuming.

Mo Tian Ji's words were directly aimed at him.

He placed the two most annoying people, Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang in the same group as Luo Ke Di. Ji Mo was his own cousin, and Rui Bu Tong was Gu Du Xing's friend, but he was just targeting Luo Ke Di.

Apparently, Mo Tian Ji was saying that Luo Ke Di was not worthy enough to hang out with them. Then he added "I am already too old" which was enough to rile up anyone.

"Mo Tian Ji, you went too far!" Luo Ke Di screamed furiously.

"Young people must learn to be patient." Mo Tian Ji calmly continued, "If not, how will they build their future? Second young master Luo, when you get home, please send my greetings to your father and mother, I have admired them for a long time!"

"Aaah..." Luo Ke Di called out oddly and rushed forward.

Luo Ke Di's eldest brother, Luo Ke Wu was once ambushed by Mo Tian Ji and almost lost his life. His father, the leader of the clan, Luo Cheng Tian was also played by Mo Tian Ji once and almost spat up blood. Mo Tian Ji said that partly to raise his status up, but mostly it was to lower Luo Ke Di to be ridiculed.

How could Luo Ke Di take this?

"Coyote!" Ji Mo was shocked and immediately held him tightly. Mo Tian Ji rarely insulted other people; he was currently smiling sweetly, but he was surely furious.

As his cousin, Ji Mo understood his character well. If Luo Ke Di was to jump in, there would be a body on the ground within moments!

"Luo Ke Di! Do you have a brain in your head?" Chu Yang roared angrily, "There are two Mo King level masters here, and you dare to make a move against the second young master?"

Chu Yang wanted to kick this brainless guy's butt. With two King level masters right here, do you think you can cause any injuries to Mo Tian Ji? Mo Tian Ji is currently extremely angry. He did not have anywhere to vent his anger so he provoked you. If you rushed up, there would definitely be a scene to see...

While Chu Yang's words were not nice to hear, they brought Luo Ke Di back to his senses. Looking at Mo Tian Ji's calm face, he could not help but shudder; this guy was truly malicious.

He angrily grunted and turned to walk away without saying anything further.

"Brother Chu, I want to have another talk with you." Mo Tian Ji calmly looked at Chu Yang.

"Sure!"

"At the inn, I invited you to drink tea. Now, I will invite you to drink wine." Mo Tian Ji smiled.

Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang looked at each other in surprise.

Tian Ji Tea and Tian Ji Wine, these were Mo Tian Ji's original creations. Only the people he liked and valued had the honor of getting his invitation.

Mo Tian Ji had once said, "How could mere mortals drink my Tian Ji Tea?"

Mo Tian Ji just met Chu Yang for the first time, why does he value Chu Yang like this?

Chapter 184: A single promise

The two walked side by side to the lake. Mo Tian Ji took out a small jug of wine and said, “Tian Ji Wine is brewed by me. While it is not comparable to the good wine that you usually drink, it holds my sincerity!”

“Thank you!” Chu Yang thought to himself: In the previous life, your Tian Ji Wine always came in big jars. Today, you only took out a little bit, and you’re acting as if it’s painful for you to share.

“Xiao Wu is my biological sister!” Mo Tian Ji slowly sat down. He looked at the lake and, at length, he said, “When Xiao Wu was born, our mother’s condition was not too good. She was bedridden. On the other hand, the Mo clan was in a period of great growth. It was internally chaotic and had many external enemies. Father was overwhelmed; even our eldest brother was helping with some of the issues…”

“Therefore, I had to cajole, tell stories, and play with her every day. Brother Chu, do you know that my little sister… Her first words were ‘Second brother!’ Mo Tian Ji smiled warmly and proudly, “Each time I hear Xiao Wu’s sweet voice calling me ‘Second brother’, I feel so proud and happy…”

“My mother was sick for three years; during those three years, she barely left my side.”

“Xiao Wu… is my treasure!”

“When Xiao Wu turned three, she showed great potential in martial arts. Because of this, the clan found out that Xiao Wu had the rare Three Yin Meridian, a heaven sent talent!” Mo Tian Ji reminisced and chuckled, “That year, I was thirteen and drank wine for the first time. I was so happy for Xiao Wu and got very drunk… my father got angry and gave me a severe beating.”

“The heavensent Three Yin Meridian immediately proved that

Xiao Wu's life would never be ordinary. Plus, even with her future marriage, the clan would respect her personal wishes. In essence, she could have anything she wants!"

Mo Tian Ji smiled and continued, "You know, for the big clans like ours, a woman's happiness depends on the arrangements made by her family. Xiao Wu would not have to suffer in love like that. For a woman, this is the greatest joy in life!"

"I truly hope that my sister can live the joyous life that she dreams of and become the happiest bride in all of the Nine Heavens! In fact, I plan to send out invitations to all of the Nine Heavens for her wedding day!"

"I want all of the people of the Nine Heavens to come to my little sister's wedding! I want everyone to give her their well wishes! That way, all of the happiness in the world would be hers! All for Xiao Wu!"

Mo Tian Ji's voice was low, but it seemed to be screaming from the depth of his soul. It as if all of his life's dreams were just for his little sister. But, at this time, it also revealed his helplessness...

Chu Yang was moved!

He had expected that Mo Tian Ji loved and cared for Mo Qing Wu, but he did not think it was to this level! This deep love between brother and sister surpassed anyone's imagination.

No wonder, even though Mo Tian Ji and I were so close in the previous life, he still wanted to kill me! It is because in the heart of this Master of Calculation and Manipulation, the whole world is not as important as his little sister!

I can't blame Mo Tian Ji for sending three King level masters to deal with me. That was the maximum strength Mo Tian Ji could mobilize at the time...

As for the ones that came before them... Mo Tian Ji probably released my information to everyone so they could come for my

funeral? Did that count as a last kind gesture for our brotherhood? If he wanted to deal with me, one King level master would have enough. Why did so many people have to die?

The edge of Chu Yang's mouth twitched revealing a bitter smile. The past was gone, and now he could only guess as to what happened...

"Brother Chu, do you understand my feelings?" Mo Tian Ji said slowly, "Three Yin Meridian! Three Yin Meridian! Damn the Hei Mo people! They destroyed my little sister's Three Yin Meridian! I can't believe they are so vicious!"

"Once the Three Yin Meridian is destroyed, my little sister's future is essentially destroyed with it!" Mo Tian Ji's head drop, "The Mo clan values strength above all else. Outsiders cannot imagine the cruelty behind it! Once the clan knows about this, it would be difficult for Xiao Wu to keep her current status! And I am only a lowly ranking member of the clan right now..."

"What's more, my eldest brother will surely try to worsen the situation!" Mo Tian Ji was seething when he spoke these words.

"Brother Chu, I am so powerless!" Mo Tian Ji slowly looked up. With his eyes looking at the distant sky, he muttered, "Do you know? I am currently praying that if the heavens could heal my little sister's Three Yin Meridian, I would die without any hesitation! I would die without a second thought!"

"I really want... really want to leave Xiao Wu here with you. I can see that you love her. But this is not a solution." Mo Tian Ji said painfully, "It is unfortunate, but you are currently too weak!"

Mo Tian Ji spoke... Chu Yang listened. He did not say a word, but his eyes burned in the night.

"Tomorrow morning, I will bring Xiao Wu back to the clan!" Mo Tian Ji took a deep breath, and let out a long sigh, "Brother Chu, thank you! In saving Xiao Wu, you have saved me, Mo Tian Ji!"

“I will not speak further of this. But, right now, I, Mo Tian Ji, promise you: If you ever run into trouble, just say the word, and I will mobilize the biggest force I can to help you!” Mo Tian Ji said sincerely, “This is a vow to you, to my heart, and to my conscience. In my entire life, I have never made a promise to anyone about anything. Not even to my wife!”

“My promise to you is the first in my life!”

Chu Yang remained solemn for a long time and then said suddenly, “Brother Mo, do you trust me?”

“As long as you say it, I will believe it.” Mo Tian Ji chuckled.

“Brother Mo, you have given me a promise. I, Chu Yang, will also give you a promise right here!” Chu Yang took a deep breath and said, “Xiao Wu’s injury, I definitely can... cure her! I am not sure how long it would take. It could be a few months or one or two years...”

Mo Tian Ji looked at him intently. A long time after, he smiled, “I believe you!”

“So I need you to protect Xiao Wu while I still don’t have the ability to cure her yet!” Chu Yang said solemnly, “This is my only request!”

Mo Tian Ji frowned and stood up. He slowly walked back and forth. After a few rounds, he sighed and said, “Brother Chu, I am not going to lie to you... If you want me to maintain Xiao Wu’s position in the clan as it was before... I can’t do it!”

“Even my father would not be able to!”

“No one can doubt my love for Xiao Wu, but that is an enormous privilege bestowed by the clan. I currently... don’t have that power yet.” Mo Tian Ji’s face was filled with pain, “I can only promise to protect her after she lost her original position! But I cannot help her keep that position!”

“Don’t force me to declare war against your Mo clan!” Chu Yang

said lightly, “If I find out that Xiao Wu suffered any grievances, I will make your Mo clan pay!”

“Brother Chu... What position do you have to speak these words?” Mo Tian Ji shook his head and smiled bitterly, “While I know that you love Xiao Wu, you are overstepping your limits with these words!”

Chu Yang smiled faintly and thought to himself: Mo Tian Ji, you might be willing to take risks for Qing Wu, but your love is not equal to mine. With such thoughts, Chu Yang felt a little proud.

From what Mo Tian Ji said, he could sense that confrontation with the Mo clan was inevitable. Currently, Chu Yang could only hope that the Mo clan would not go too far!

He stood up and took Mo Tian Ji’s jug of Tian Ji Wine. Then he uncorked it and gulped it all down. Finally, he tossed it into the lake making ripples on the lake’s surface. Chu Yang’s heart felt open and free!

These words of Mo Tian Ji had removed the knots in Chu Yang’s heart!

In his past life, he died from Mo Tian Ji’s calculations. Chu Yang had always thought that his best friend betrayed him, and that had stifled his heart.

Chu Yang valued friendship greatly! He did not have many friends; Mo Tian Ji used to be the only one!

Therefore, he could not easily forgive Mo Tian Ji’s betrayal!

But currently, Chu Yang no longer blamed him!

He is willing to give up his own life because of Mo Qing Wu. Plus, he is also her older brother. Should he not take revenge on the person who caused his sister’s death?

He should! He absolutely should!

In fact, Chu Yang was certain that if he knew the truth in the

previous life and Mo Tian Ji asked him to kill himself to repent... he would not hesitate to commit suicide!

The two followed the edge of the lake and walked back. Mo Tian Ji's composure had been completely restored. He never had such a blunder in front of so many people like this.

Mo Cheng Yu's face was full of guilt with his head drooped.

"Second elder brother, quickly come and see this! Whoa... This saber is a gift to me from Brother Chu Yang." Mo Qing Wu joyfully held out Dreaming of a Gentle Dance Saber. Her little short legs continued to move toward them. Having something good, she naturally wanted to show it off to her loved ones...

"A saber Chu Yang gave you?" Mo Tian Ji looked at Chu Yang with some doubt. He received the saber and frowned after feeling it, "So light?"

Suddenly, his eyes flashed, and he looked up at Chu Yang, "Red Cloud Steel?"

"How did you know?" Gu Du Xing was not satisfied. When the rest of them saw the saber, none were able to recognize this right away. Mo Tian Ji did not even pull out the saber, and was able to figure it out form looking at the tattered scabbard. Was he really that intelligent?

"Is it a difficult thing? The saber is light like this, and it is clearly not made of wood. Brother Chu loves Xiao Wu so much; he would naturally not give her anything ordinary." Mo Tian Ji said casually, "Xiao Wu has already seen many valuable items at the Mo clan; what has she not seen? To make her like it that much, it must be a very rare item."

"Xiao Wu loves the color red."

"The most important thing was the moment Xiao Wu brought out the saber; there was clearly a look of envy in Brother Dong's eyes."

Mo Tian Ji continued, “A saber that could make the second young master of the Dark Saber clan envious…”

“A saber that could gain Xiao Wu’s love…”

“A saber that Chu Yang would give to Xiao Wu…”

“A saber so light like this…”

Mo Tian Ji smiled and looked at Gu Du Xing, “Well, Brother Gu?”

Gu Du Xing took a step back and raised his hands in surrender. He replied with a pained smile, “You are amazing… Don’t talk to me anymore!”

Chapter 185: For you, I will trample the Nine Heavens

The fact that Mo Tian Ji could figure out what this saber was with just some speculation surprised everyone. They were in awe of his intelligence.

Mo Qing Wu became proud from looking at everyone's expressions. She stuck up her cute little nose proudly saying, "My second elder brother is the most amazing!"

"Little monster!" Mo Tian Ji laughed as he pulled out the saber. A red radiance burst out as Dreaming of a Gentle Dance Saber left its sheath. In the shadow of the night a dreamy light danced more brightly than the stars reflecting in the lake. The magnificent scene was incomparable!

"Good saber!" Mo Tian Ji carefully examined the blade and his eyes brightened, "Oh god! I can't believe there is even Star Steel!" But after he saw the words Chu Yang had engraved on it, Mo Tian Ji's eyes narrowed, and he suddenly looked up. At this moment, Mo Tian Ji looked at Chu Yang in a completely different light.

After carefully studying it, Mo Tian Ji held the saber and bowed ceremoniously, "Chu Yang... Thank you! I will keep your sincerity in my heart! For the rest of my life... I will not forget it!"

For others who looked at this saber, they only saw it as a valuable saber, a tool for domination. But through this saber, Mo Tian Ji saw Chu Yang's heart!

"Brother Mo is too polite! This saber is, in part, my sincerity; but it also has a deeper meaning. Not anyone is worthy of such a gift from me..." Chu Yang replied frankly, "As long as Brother Mo understands that, I am happy."

"I actually accidentally found this saber. Being able to give it to Xiao Wu is a fortunate turn of events!" Chu Yang smiled and said.

“Accidentally found this…” Mo Tian Ji laughed, “That is truly fortunate! It seems that this saber was destined to be for my little sister!”

“Exactly!” Chu Yang’s eyes flashed as he looked straight into Mo Tian Ji’s eyes. The two understood each other and smiled.

Mo Tian Ji stood up. With a slightly relaxed face, he said, “With this saber, we might be able to…”

He did not finish his sentence, but his face was filled with gratitude.

Mo Tian Ji knew that this unparalleled saber, capable of cutting all things, was something Chu Yang had prepared for Mo Qing Wu’s return to the clan!

But attached to this saber was a sincerity that was no less valuable than the saber itself!

A stranger who was willing to save his little sister, Mo Tian Ji obviously understood Chu Yang’s affection was very deep!

“Brother Chu, I heard that Bu Tian Pavilion and Golden Horse Riders Department are currently in great conflict…” Mo Tian Ji thought for a little and said, “But Bu Tian Pavilion’s current strength is very weak…”

“No need!” Not letting Mo Tian Ji finish, Chu Yang cut him off, “I can use people in the world; I can deceive people in the world; but, I, Chu Yang, will not use my own sincerity!” (TLN: I understand it to mean that he does not want his affection to be tainted by asking for help.)

“You just need to bring Xiao Wu home safely. As for my business…” Chu Yang took a deep breath and continued, “I can’t depend on your people for the rest of my life! Don’t you agree?”

Mo Tian Ji smiled with admiration, “If that is the case, I will leave you a story.” He paused a little and spoke, “According to legend, about six thousand years ago, there was a rapist terrorizing

people. He loved pretty women. There were many young ladies ravaged by him; and, because of this, many happy families were bereaved. People hated him to the bones, but this rapist was very powerful; he was an Emperor level master. Plus, his movements were so fast even a Monarch level master could not chase him."

"One day, the rapist found out that a young Martial Master was getting married. Seeing the very beautiful bride, he became wanton. The bride did not know any martial arts, and was brought to a cave by the rapist. Before losing her purity, the quick-witted bride saw a fragrant flower next to the cave and said to the rapist, 'Please pick that flower so I can put it in my hair when I serve you wine... Today, I will be your new bride!'"

"The rapist was very happy... What could a weak woman do? So he brought wine and put the flower on the bride's hair with his own hands. The bride could not drink wine so she drank tea instead. After drinking wine, the rapist discovered that he could not move. A young lady who could not even tie up a chicken, strangled him to death with a sash..."

"An Emperor level master who was killed by a young lady who could not even tie up a chicken; this has become an eternal joke."

"The rapist knew that flower was called Thousand Miles Fragrance. But he did not know that once it leaves the ground, the fume from the plant sap could mix with the aroma of the wine and become a strange kind of Crisp Bone Fragrance. Even a Saint level master could not avoid going limp and weak."

"After that, this Crisp Bone Fragrance was given the name 'Supreme Crisp' by others, a terrifying name in all of the Nine Heavens. It is also a top ranking fragrance in the Nine Heavens. After thousands of years, that is still unchanged!"

"Whether this story actually happened or not, it still tells us one truth. You cannot underestimate anyone! With the right strategy, an ordinary person could kill a Supreme level master! The most

important thing is whether your wit could come up with the right strategy! After all, strategies can be found anywhere...!"

Mo Tian Ji continued, "Brother Chu, because of this, I always value wisdom over martial strength..."

Chu Yang became silent.

Early next morning, the night's mist still lingering and the sky was still foggy. When Mo Tian Ji took Mo Qing Wu's little hand and walked out, the surroundings were extraordinarily quiet.

"Xiao Wu, it's time to go!" Mo Tian Ji sighed and said softly.

"Leaving like this?" Mo Qing Wu's round eyes widened full of reluctance... "I haven't said goodbye to Brother Chu Yang..."

"If Brother Chu Yang sees you leave... he will not be able to bear it!" Mo Tian Ji calmly coaxed her, "Xiao Wu will end up crying, too! And if Xiao Wu cries, she will not look good... Brother Chu Yang likes you so much, you would not want him to see you not looking pretty, right?"

Mo Qing Wu wiped away the tears that were about to fall down. She bit her lip and nodded, "Yes! I will not let Brother Chu Yang see me cry..." Even though she said so, her eyes reddened and her voice choked up...

"Let's go!" Mo Tian Ji said slowly, "Xiao Wu, you have to grow up well... When your Brother Chu Yang comes to our home, we still have to welcome him..."

Mo Qing Wu still could not help it, and tears started to fall down her cheeks. Her little figure stood stubbornly stood at the front door as she stared at Chu Yang's closed door.

"Brother Chu Yang, Xiao Wu is leaving! Xiao Wu will miss you...!"

"You have to miss me..."

"Xiao Wu is going! Brother Chu Yang, don't cry..."

Mo Tian Ji held his little sister's hand and walked out of the front door. After each step, Mo Qing Wu paused and turned her head back looking hopefully at Chu Yang's door... Her little teeth left a row of marks on her lip.

With each step, she turned her head around...

Finally, they were at the gate, Mo Qing Wu suddenly escaped from Mo Tian Ji's grasp and turned around. She took two steps and stopped. Looking at the house, she unexpectedly shouted, "Brother Chu Yang, you are not allowed to forget me!"

"Brother Chu Yang, you are not allowed to not miss me!"

"Brother Chu Yang, you are not allowed to tell stories to anyone else!"

"Brother Chu Yang... I don't want to leave you... Hoohoo..."

It was completely quiet inside the room. It seemed that Chu Yang was sleeping very soundly and did not hear anything.

Mo Qing Wu suddenly squatted on the ground and cried. Mo Tian Ji sighed softly as he looked at his little sister. He walked toward her and pulled her up. Mo Qing Wu shook him off and stood up. She stood in a trance staring at Chu Yang's door.

That fierce action made a little bow fall out of Mo Qing Wu's hair. Mo Tian Ji saw this and sighed, but he did not bother to pick it up.

After a long while, Mo Qing Wu slowly turned and took her brother's hand. She turned her head to look around nostalgically, then she said in a low voice, "Second elder brother, let's go!"

"Okay."

After walking out the door, they went a long distance before Mo Qing Wu turned her head around and suddenly burst into tears... Mo Tian Ji stood quietly in his white outfit; he turned in a different direction and gently waved his arm...

With the heart-wrenching sound of Mo Qing Wu's crying, the four figures, three big and one small, gradually disappeared in the early morning fog...

Heavenly Armament Pavilion remained quiet as before.

Chu Yang's figure slowly emerged from behind the willow tree by the lake. His body was drenched from the mist, and his hair was speckled with dew drops.

His countenance was filled with a sense of loss. His gaze was empty as he walked step by step. Finally, he knelt down and picked up the bow that Mo Qing Wu had dropped. He placed in front of his nose and inhaled deeply; a trace of loneliness appeared in his eyes.

He reached out his arm and gently stroked the ground. In this little area, the earth was darker than anywhere else... This... was Qing Wu's tears...

Chu Yang's heart suddenly became empty...

He stood up and sadly looked in the direction of the gate... An innocent voice still seemed to be lingering.

"Brother Chu Yang, you are not allowed to forget me!"

"Brother Chu Yang, you are not allowed to not miss me!"

"Brother Chu Yang, you are not allowed to tell stories to anyone else!"

"Brother Chu Yang... I don't want to leave you... Hoohoo..."

Chu Yang smiled slightly. Qing Wu, when we see each other next, how will you be? Will you become... the Qing Wu with a fluttering red robe... like the Qing Wu I often dream of?

Upon returning... you must hold on! You must be strong...!

Do you know... In the days that you were here... how happy I was... how hopeful I was... Qing Wu! Not long from now, I will go to Middle Three Heavens to find you!

This morning, Ji Mo, Gu Du Xing and company were also acting strange. No one left their bed; everyone was quietly hiding in their rooms... All of Heavenly Armament Pavilion was as quiet as a demon's lair...

Nothing was stirring.

Chu Yang stood quietly at the door as his hair flew up in the wind... He suddenly thought of the sweet and soft voice that said, "Brother Chu Yang, can I be your fiancée?"

"Good! Good!" Chu Yang involuntarily spoke out loud.

Dreamily, a graceful figure in red appeared in his mind. She looked at him and reached out her arms calling, "Chu Yang! Chu Yang!"

"Qing Wu..." Chu Yang's heart ached; it felt as if it was broken to pieces and bleeding. He slowly sat down and muttered quietly, "Mo Tian Ji, don't fail me...!"

Given Mo Tian Ji's character, Chu Yang knew that he would leave without saying goodbye. Because this was the best way to reduce the sadness that Mo Qing Wu would feel.

If they had said goodbye face to face, Mo Qing Wu would probably cried miserably...

And if that happened, Chu Yang did not know how he would react.

While Chu Yang felt a little resentful toward Mo Tian Ji for quietly taking Mo Qing Wu away, he was also a little thankful for that.

"Autumn wind blows cold, autumn water is cold... Two hearts broken and in pain... There is only Qing Wu in this quiet life..." Chu Yang quietly sat there and recited. Then he quietly stood up and walked back to his room without ever turning around. He shut his door, and quietly recited the last line in his poem, "For you, I will trample the Nine Heavens."

Chapter 186: Get drunk for you

That very same night at the Prime Minister's manor in Great Zhao, after sending all the servants out, Diwu Qing Rou dressed in a white robe stood alone in the middle of a gazebo with his hands clasped behind his back. Looking at the dark night sky, he stood silent for a long time.

Autumn was very cold! The wind gently wisped through the sky; the sadness of separation was hard to be rid of...

Diwu Qing Rou continued to stand motionless.

A long time after, there was the sound of sigh in the dark quiet night. Diwu Qing Rou quietly asked, "Brother, you left already?"

The wind continued to wail, but there was no answer.

Diwu Qing Rou slowly turned around. Behind him was a beautifully carved table made of ordinary wood; all the corners were worn. Of course, it was made a few decades ago. On the table, there was six food dishes and a wine jug already laid out.

Four wine cups were placed in the four directions: east, west, south, and north.

Diwu Qing Rou slowly walked toward the main seat and sat down. He picked up the wine jug and poured himself a cup. He stared at it for a long time and put it back down again.

"I still don't believe that you have left!" Diwu Qing Rou murmured, "Your identity, your resources... whether to the enemies or to me, you are an enormous asset. As long as you are a dominating force, no one can kill you so easily like that!"

"So I will continue to believe that you are still imprisoned!" Diwu Qing Rou shook his head and smiled bitterly. He picked up the wine cup and drank it all in one gulp. At the time he picked up his cup, a tear fell from the edge of his eye and fell into the cup.

Diwu Qing Rou swallowed the wine mixed with the taste of a sad tear. He closed his eyes and listened to the sound of his heart. His pale face became flushed from the powerful wine aroma, but he did not open his eyes. He dropped his head slightly and whispered, “But I did not think that in this fight for the world, the person going against me would be another hero!”

Diwu Qing Rou’s voice emphasized the word ‘hero’; it was filled with sarcasm.

“World domination, who will be the boss?

Nine Heavens, I will be the only dominating one!

Cleanse the world of millions and millions of common people!

Generals will make a sea of blood, and soldiers will make bones!”

Diwu Qing Rou muttered quietly, “Second brother, this is the first poem I wrote. I still remember when I had incited you to respond!”

“Millions of generals and leaders will fall!

Yellow sand will make armors for scholars! (TLN: Buried!)

Looking at the entire heavens and unite it!

Life aspirations, I will join with you!”

Diwu Qing Rou sighed,

“World domination is only for those who are daring.

Being daring is the stories of heroes.

Heroes lead millions of troops in conquest.

Fighting until the ground is covered in white bones,

Just to add another volume for the emperor!”

“You meant that a hero can a general or a leader, but he cannot be a ruler! Kings are fierce and ambitious, but being fierce and ambitious makes a hero. Planning and strategizing with talents

reaching the nine levels of heaven that would make a ruler who controls the whole world! When you said these verses, did you ever think that you would die by the hands of a 'hero'?"

Diwu Qing Rou laughed; the sound trembled as if he was laughing in a state of fear. He raised his cup and gulped down the content. Then he immediately filled it with wine and said with a quivering voice, "Second brother, you had said that once we are successful, you would sit down and get drunk with me! You said it was because you have never seen me truly drunk! Today, I will fulfill your wish!"

He once again raised his cup in the direction of the distant sky filled with stars and bowed. Then he drank it all down in one gulp.

"You always said that my life is too tiring, that I live with too many lies, and that I could not live a happy life... Today, I will toss everything aside and get drunk with you!"

The wind seemed to be wailing quietly; the flowers and trees swayed with their leaves rustling in the wind as if his younger martial brother of yesteryear was still talking to him and raising his arm to point to the vast country!

Still seeing everything as fun and games! Still young and frivolous!

Diwu Qing Rou shook his head and chuckled; a tear fell down... At this place, all by himself in the dead of night, this unrivaled hero who remained composed in the face of danger finally could no longer control his true emotions.

"Prime Minister..." A voice softly called out from behind him.

"Bu Chu is here to get drunk with us two brothers!" Diwu Qing Rou never turned around. He knew that at this time, besides Han Bu Chu, no one else would dare to take half a step in here. If they did, it could only mean death!

Han Bu Chu walked toward him with a jar of wine. He smiled and

said, “Prime Minister, I especially came tonight to get you drunk!”

“Good! Good!” Diwu Qing Rou laughed, “Sit!”

“Bu Chu, how long has it been since the four of us sat and drank at this very table?” Diwu Qing Rou pointed and said, “At the time, you were guarded and kept close count of how much you drank. After each cup, you would make a line on this table with your nail, Hahaha… You see, the marks you made are still here!”

“Prime Minister!” Han Bu Chu’s heart felt bitter. He looked down at the remnants of the years gone by and hot blood started to rise to his head, “Prime Minister, you still keep… this table…?”

“Life is like a dream! When I wake, I want to keep traces of it!” Diwu Qing Rou whispered, “Do you remember? At the time, the person sitting on your left was Number One, and the person facing you was Yun He!”

“Yes.”

“You drank eight cups at that time, but you drew nine lines!” Diwu Qing Rou laughed as he seemed to travel down memory lane, “Because of that, Number One said you were cheating and using trickery.”

“Haha…” Han Bu Chu also laughed loudly. He seemed to gazed into empty space as memories came flooding back, “Just like that… it’s already been more than ten years…!”

The two silently drank a few cups. Of course there was something in Han Bu Chu’s mind, but he still did not dare to bring it up to Diwu Qing Rou so he could not do anything else but accompany Diwu Qing Rou one cup after another…

“Speak!” Diwu Qing Rou slightly tilted his head and looked at Han Bu Chu.

“Yes.”

“Prime Minister, this time… does King level leader Kong’s action

disrupt your plans?” Han Bu Chu asked with extreme caution.

“Of course Kong Shang Xin was acting recklessly in this matter, but it was my mistake. I should not have sent Kong Shang Xin there!” Diwu Qing Rou sighed, “I thought about his personality, his leadership, and other aspects before sending him; but I forgot a very important thing, human nature!”

“Human nature?”

“Yes, human nature!” Diwu Qing Rou sighed again, “People are not plants; who can be emotionless? Back then, when Kong Shang Xin was being hunted down in Middle Three Heavens, he did not have any place to go. He ran to Lower Three Heavens; on the threshold of death, his body was riddled with injuries. Yin Wu Fa and his brother saved him; this is a debt of life! While he was always composed, as the saying goes, ‘A good man will die for his bosom friend’. This is also a pillar of Jiang Hu!”

“Seeing Yin Wu Fa’s horrific condition, how could he remain indifferent?”

“Human nature is a very wondrous thing. In certain conditions, a coward can become a dauntless warrior. And the greatest of heroes can turn into a timid mouse. In a dangerous situation, a reckless person could take over while a wise man could become more confused than a child because of one little issue!”

“I have thought about this, but I missed one key thing.” Diwu Qign Rou laughed, “My mindset has fallen into the habit of a powerful official. I have grown accustomed to the ways of the royal court in calculating gain and loss. It is my mistake, not Kong Shang Xin’s!”

“Utilizing people incorrectly, this is my big mistake!” The Prime Minister lifted his wine cup and said softly, “In the future, I will have to careful in this aspect!”

“Your words have enlightened me! The Prime Minister is truly

remarkable!" Han Bu Chu said. These words were not mere flattery. People in high positions like Diwu Qing Rou, how many could make such a profound analysis of themselves? In addition, he also admitted his mistake in front of his subordinate.

With that mind, Diwu Qing Rou was truly worthy of his position! And the Diwu Qing Rou who was completely sober... was most terrifying!

"Moreover, Kong Shang Xin's action has proven one thing..." Diwu Qing Rou said gravely, "That is that Number One is dead!" When he got to this point, a deep pain appeared in Diwu Qing Rou's eyes. He had to close his eyes as his heart throbbed with emotions.

Han Bu Chu also became solemn.

They were both intelligent people; there was no need for further explanation.

"King level leader Kong and Yun He sent news..." Han Bu Chu said hesitantly.

Diwu Qing Rou waved his arm and interrupted Han Bu Chu. After quietly filling his cup once again, Diwu Qing Rou said, "Let's talk about King of Hell Chu a little!"

Han Bu Chu hissed softly, "This person... is truly difficult to fathom!"

"Hmm, then let me speak!" Diwu Qing Rou smiled, "Bu Chu, this King of Hell Chu... According to his methods, I can recognize that he is a talent that only comes along every thousand years! He has your careful calculating characteristic and Yun He's composure. But he is even more daring than Gao Sheng. There seems to be one more thing... His strategies are flawless!"

Han Bu Chu quietly sat and listened. What he loved most was being able to quietly listen to Diwu Qing Rou analyze a person. And from there, he pointed out the person's weaknesses and strengths

as well as how to deal with that person. This was Han Bu Chu's enjoyment.

"To start, King of Hell Chu joined with Du Shi Qing's group. Then he went into Iron Cloud Citadel and created Heavenly Armament Pavilion as a foundation for him to jump straight to the position of Bu Tian Pavilion's leader!"

"From this period, we can see that while King of Hell Chu is still young, he is very meticulous. Each step has a clear target. Each move he makes hits directly in his opponent's weak spot!"

Of course Diwu Qing Rou did not believe King of Hell Chu to be the King level master as rumored.

"Let's talk about his first step. Chu Yang took advantage of Du Shi Qing being occupied by many thoughts and the fact that he saved a lot of people. This world is filled with situations where people are ungrateful and don't repay their debts; even though Du Shi Qing is a physician, he could not avoid thinking so. That day, a person suddenly came to repay his debt, Du Shi Qing was probably happy beyond words. This is completely understandable! Plus, Du Shi Qing did not want to go to Iron Cloud, so his state of mind was weakest at that time! Therefore, Chu Yang was completely successful in his talk of repaying a debt."

"In this first step, Chu Yang made use of human nature!" Diwu Qing Rou said profoundly.

Han Bu Chu gently nodded.

"As for the second step, when Du Shi Qing entered Iron Cloud, any clearheaded person would know my plans. Therefore, Iron Cloud military sent people to pretend to be bandits to kill Du Shi Qing. But Chu Yang helped them out of their difficulty without even exposing the enemies' identity and allowed them to leave. This is key! You people only saw this as an ordinary event and ignored the deep meaning behind it."

“Without this step, his Heavenly Armament Pavilion could easily be destroyed!”

Chapter 187: The frightening King of Hell Chu

“You have to pay attention to the way out he left for them. He had the general of the group attack Du Shi Qing, but he did not kill the man. And because of that, everyone felt closer to Chu Yang! In the end, this general escaped but Chu Yang left a great impression on the army. If Chu Yang ever needed to use the military to fight in battles... his first choice would be this group! You should know, that general is one of the ten famed generals of the continent, Wu Kuang Yun! We need to pay particular attention to this point!”

“Send people to gather Wu Kuang Yun’s military habits and diligently analyze them. If some time in the future, the two sides clash and their military movements change, you must mobilize a big force to eradicate them at all costs! Because at that time, it will be King of Hell Chu, himself, leading the troops!”

“Yes!” Han Bu Chu wiped his cold sweats.

“The third step was after he entered the citadel; he created Heavenly Armament Pavilion! Why did Tie Long Cheng, himself, come? Was it really just because of the words Heavenly Armament?” Diwu Qing Rou’s gaze suddenly became deep and profound, “Tie Long Cheng came because... he wanted to meet Chu Yang, the person who gave the army that tried to kill Du Shi Qing a way out. Tie Long Cheng wanted to meet the person who defeated Wu Kuang Yun single-handedly with barely any effort. That is all!”

“Then there was step number four: Joining Bu Tian Pavilion. Without knowing the internal issues, he became the boss right away; this is not without thanks to Tie Long Cheng and Du Shi Qing! Tie Long Cheng greatly admired talents; and if the attempted assassination was publicized, Tie Bu Tian would have to make Iron Cloud short of one famed general! As for Du Shi Qing, he held Chu Yang in high regards and spared no efforts in praising him in front

of Tie Bu Tian."

"These are Chu Yang's first four steps! Four steps to reach the heavens through the use of human nature!" Diwu Qing Rou's voice became deep, "At this point, Chu Yang has achieved his first goal, his phase one."

"Then is his second goal Bu Tian Pavilion?"

"No, his second goal was to cleanse!" Diwu Qing Rou continued to explain, "First, he used lightning quick strategies to remove all of the spies in Bu Tian Pavilion!"

"His methods involved careful analysis and reverse deductions. Everything was based on a possible result that he postulated; then he would dig out carefully guarded secrets and eradicate all spies!" Diwu Qing Rou chuckled, "This is easier said than done!"

"Yes! In the beginning, Golden Horse Riders Department sent spies everywhere. Their strategy was to use common actions to gain everyone's recognition and ensure the spies' safety. King of Hell Chu hit this exact spot." Han Bu Chu thought and said slowly.

"Exactly! That is why after he took over Bu Tian Pavilion, his next step was to deal with all the spies. He used human blood to establish his authority! And from this step, he became mysterious with his mask and black robe; at the same time, he sent out rumors all over the land..."

"These rumors were aimed at preventing actions from King level leaders Yin and Kong. In other words, this Chu Yang recognized Iron Cloud's weakness and planned his traps with unparalleled clarity. These were actions to make way for his future high position..."

"During that time, you all saw him as a joke because we all knew that King of Hell Chu is Chu Yang. No matter what confusion he tried to sow, his identity cannot be changed. But you have ignored a key factor in any situation; and that is the fact that these

confusions could lead to these earth-shattering changes!”

“And the recent mistakes by the two King level leaders were also attributed to these damaging rumors! Bu Chu, did the two King level leaders we sent not know King of Hell Chu identity? Why did they doubt this in the end? These things speak to King of Hell Chu’s deceptions and psychological warfare!”

“Everyone has doubts; even the most intelligent minds are filled with uncertainties. I am afraid King of Hell Chu would use his resourceful head to turn a little bit of your doubt into full blown suspicions and cause you to question your own conclusions!”

“This person’s brain… has a full grasp of human nature! He is truly a frightening person!”

It was as if Diwu Qing Rou was slowly pulling each silk strand from a cocoon and pointed out every little bit of Chu Yang’s meticulous arrangements. This proved that he felt that Chu Yang was the greatest threat he had ever encountered. As he spoke, his voice gradually grew heavy.

Han Bu Chu unconsciously straightened himself as he listened attentively to Diwu Qing Rou’s analysis.

“At that same time, he started to straighten out the royal court of Iron Cloud. He started with lower ranking officials; with each person he caught and verified, he became bolder. His saber swung nonstop, but he continued to leave Number One untouched.”

“It was because he wanted Number One to make contact with us. After verifying this, Chu Yang made his move to capture Number One. Plus, he used Number One’s identity to create many traps! Everything is connected!”

“He even managed to speculate the fact that Number One was holding on to some hope and our reactions!” Diwu Qing Rou sighed, “If it were not for extremely accurate intelligence, I would be wondering whether this distant foe is a youth of seventeen or

eighteen or a few hundred years old fox! Such meticulous and careful moves…”

“Yes. Even if we knew Number One ran into trouble, we trusted that Number One would not say anything. Plus, the fact Chu Yang did not make a move against Number One only solidified our beliefs… Therefore, no matter what traps were laid, we continued to step into them!” Han Bu Chu sighed, “Even though Chu Yang did not know the relationship between Number One and you, he still set these traps… That is already more than enough!”

“After he got a hold of Number One, he already knew that he could not fight against us! With his strength, he could not withstand just one of our moves. This was King of Hell Chu taking a risk. With his mouth, he could not swallow a big fish like Yin Wu Fa. Lucky for him, a clan from Middle Three Heavens appeared to support him. King of Hell Chu essentially came back from the dead! He made full use of this clan, and continually framed us! Using the established power of a super clan without any effort on his part, he was able to topple our two heavenly pillars severely injuring our two King level leaders!”

“And now, King of Hell Chu’s second goal is successful! For this second stage, the goal is to seek security!” Diwu Qing Rou sighed deeply, “The next step he makes will be to use all forces to surround King level leaders Kong and Yin! I hope Yun He will be able to hold it together!”

“Seek security?” Han Bu Chu was somewhat puzzled.

“Exactly! Golden Horse Riders Department has a total of four King level leaders. Currently, two are essentially disabled! The two remaining ones are in charge of protecting Golden Horse Riders Department and absolutely cannot leave! If it continues like this, King of Hell Chu could make use of this period to develop Bu Tian Pavilion and rebuild Iron Cloud!”

“Everything King of Hell Chu has done was just to gain time!”

Diwu Qing Rou sighed, “And he has to make the most of this time because it would last no more than three months. Tie Shi Cheng cannot hold on any longer! At that time, Iron Cloud Nation will face inevitable chaos! And King of Hell Chu will take the opportunity to hit hard at Golden Horse Riders Department because he know that during Tie Shi Cheng’s death, we cannot send powerful assassination groups or make any other big moves against them.”

“At that time, even if our forces are just slightly weakened, it is still a great thing for Iron Cloud Nation! Never mind such a big loss like this!” Diwu Qing Rou suddenly spoke fiercely, “While I do not want to admit this, it is true! King of Hell Chu will be able to use this time window!”

Han Bu Chu’s mind was in shock.

He had judged King of Hell Chu very highly, but he could not believe that it was still an underestimate!

With each step forward, King of Hell Chu had already prepared the next strategy. With each careful step, he adapted to the situations at hand and gradually made more powerful moves... All in all, everything had changed in a most delicate manner.

“However, these things are still not enough! He is far from being able to shake our Golden Horse Riders Department’s foundation! Therefore, King of Hell Chu must have other plans!” Diwu Qing Rou thought and said, “In his next step, King of Hell Chu will extend his reach into Great Zhao! Before he makes his move, I cannot predict what he plans to do!”

“Prime Minister, doesn’t King of Hell Chu have any weaknesses?” Han Bu Chu asked.

“Weaknesses? Even with superior wisdom, this King of Hell Chu still has many weaknesses!” Diwu Qing Rou said, “His one weakness is using unusual tactics to surprise people. Such people like adventures and risks! Such people can rise quickly, but will

immediately fall to rock bottom the moment they fail!”

“Risky tactics can only have two possible outcomes! One is total victory; the other is total annihilation!” Diwu Qing Rou said slowly, “Patience is required when dealing with this kind of person! It would be enough to just grasp one opportunity!”

“Also, while King of Hell Chu is called the King of Hell, he is not the kind that’s ambitious and unscrupulous! I can see that Tie Bu Tian is a heroic figure, and King of Hell Chu is also one as well! If that is not the case, then King of Hell Chu would have gotten into a confrontation with Tie Bu Tian! A hero could admire an ambitious person, but an ambitious person would never work under a hero!”

“The word hero is a funny title! With heroes, they always value friendship!” Diwu Qing Rou explained slowly, “Ambitious people are afraid of losing, and heroes are afraid of heartaches! If we want to deal with Tie Bu Tian and King of Hell Chu, we must aim at the word friendship! For such people, they will fail if their hearts are injured!”

“We just need one opportunity… That will be enough!” Han Bu Chu muttered to himself, “Aim at affection…” He suddenly seemed to sense something and became agonized.

Having heard Diwu Qing Rou’s step by step analysis, Han Bu Chu realized how truly frightening King of Hell Chu was! There were many things that were considered ordinary and without meanings by others; yet they were carefully prearranged by King of Hell Chu!

Such discipline, such mentality… For someone with superior intellect like Han Bu Chu, this was still shocking! Thinking about King of Hell Chu step by step course of action, Han Bu Chu did not even realize that cold sweat had drenched his clothes.

Chapter 188: You Yun's luck

(TLN: Play on words here, Yóu yùn de yùnqì is the title; Yun means luck.)

Diwu Qing Rou stopped speaking. He poured himself another cup of wine and drank it slowly.

The bright full moon slowly drifted toward the west. In the gazebo, the shadows of the trees also slowly moved with the moon.

"I want to personally write a letter to Tie Bu Tian to bring back Number One's family." Diwu Qing Rou suddenly spoke quietly after drinking five or six cups of wine in row.

"This... do you think Tie Bu Tian will agree?" Han Bu Chu's heart was startled. Diwu Qing Rou was writing the letter himself; this was an expression of his attitude toward the situation! He is placing his own name into Tie Bu Tian's hand, so he could be insulted?

How much prestige would he lose with this?

"Tie Bu Tian will agree!" Diwu Qing Rou said casually, "Send orders to Dong Wu Fa. Tell him to attack two of Iron Cloud's cities at the quickest speed, and open Iron Cloud's door!"

"I want to tell Tie Bu Tian that if he returns Number One's family, Great Zhao will give him back these two cities!"

Han Bu Chu was once again startled, but did not dare to say anything. This was clearly a rash decision that Diwu Qing Rou had made because of his anger. This was proof of the great impact Number One's death had on him.

"This will be the last time I, Diwu Qing Rou, do things emotionally!" Diwu Qing Rou looked up at the sky and said softly, "Number One was worthy of my doing so!"

Han Bu Chu finally understood.

The person Diwu Qing Rou valued most in life was Number One. In other words, only Number One could cause Diwu Qing Rou to lose control of his emotions.

But Number One was now dead! Therefore, Diwu Qing Rou acting decisively like that was also a way of saying farewell to his past.

Another big battle! No matter how many people from the two countries died, it was just a funeral rite for his brother! It was also to bury Diwu Qing Rou's life from ten years ago!

From here on out, Diwu Qing Rou would not have any more weaknesses. This impulsive action might seem reckless, but it was also a show of his terrifying power. Plus, Han Bu Chu was certain that Diwu Qing Rou was already prepared with the next step.

"Yun He being in Iron Cloud is not a long term solution. If they are discovered before the two King level masters recover from the injuries, the consequences would be unthinkable!" Diwu Qing Rou's eyes had started to show evidence of intoxication, but his thoughts remained lucid. He said categorically, "This battle is my warning! The letter is my statement! At that time, Yun He will be there to officially welcome Number One's family back home. Anyone who dares to stop them will be killed!"

Han Bu Chu sweated profusely.

"Is the family over there really Number One's family?" Han Bu Chu could not understand why a person like Number One would do such a stupid thing like that!

"Before he left, Number One was ready for anything!" Diwu Qing Rou's eyes revealed a trace of sadness, "I will nurture and raise his descendants well!"

Han Bu was speechless.

This was something that no one could have imagined. Even Chu Yang did not expect Tang Xin Sheng's wife and child in Iron Cloud

Nation was really his wife and child.

This person was truly a madman!

*****

Iron Cloud Citadel had turned into a boiling pot!

Every place was in an uproar!

The power of the masses was infinite, and the wisdom of the masses was endless.

After Chu Yang had issued his command, the three gangster bosses gathered and discussed with each other. After that they came up a prudent approach: Divide Iron Cloud citadel into five areas, east, west, south, north, and center. Then carefully go through every street and every household.

Then they carried out their duties and herded all outsiders from these five areas into an empty field like pigs. Official Cheng Zi Ang would then work with the justice department to investigate; any suspicious person would be arrested straightaway...

As a result, the citadel exploded into endless chaos. But they truly did discover many spies. Some of these spies did not have any substance and were easily shaken after they were captured. They were the kind without any loyalty and were fearful of death. Plus, they did not know how to keep their mouths shut. After a little “friendliness,” they immediately spilled information about their movements and their comrades on the outside...

In this process, they were able to capture one Silver Knight Rider! This was a true anomaly...

Iron Cloud Citadel’s guards, the military, the royal guards, etc. Almost twenty thousand people joined in this mission.

After searching for two days and one night, the search area was reduced by a half. It was now midnight, but they had to carry on. Especially, the more than ten thousand thugs who were even more

spirited as if they were on aphrodisiac... (TLN: Iron Cloud Citadel has a big problem; it has too many thugs.)

Even Cheng Zi Ang could not handle the work; his eyes reddened from staying awake at night. But the three big bosses were bright and full of energy like blooming flowers...

“The situation is becoming more severe! If we continue like this, they will find us before we could succeed!” In his temporary hiding place, Cheng Yun He tried to think of countermeasures.

Yin Wu Fa had recovered thirty percent of his martial energy thanks to the powerful effect of Jade Spirit Ginseng. Kong Shang Xin, on the other hand, did not recover as much. With both of them in this situation, they could not do anything.

If it was just the two of them, it would have been easy. But their issue was they had some fifty or sixty people. If the searching continued, they were too big of a target...

“The only solution is to split up!” Cheng Yun He said, “We have to split up once again to avoid being captured by the enemies. Even if they catch us, the numbers would not match up, and they would have to let us go due to insufficient evidence.”

“No! That would be a dispersion of force; wouldn’t we be sitting ducks then?” Yin Wu Fa said, “In my opinion, we should break out and escape!”

“Break out?” Cheng Yun He said icily, “Twenty thousand soldiers surround the citadel. This is the capital of Iron Cloud, the heart of Iron Cloud Nation. You are insisting that all of us to fly straight back to Great Zhao?”

“Let’s do as Official Cheng said!” Kong Shang Xin said sadly, “Breaking out is absolutely not possible! If a ninth grade Emperor level master was surrounded by twenty thousand soldiers, he would probably die from exhaustion. Let alone us...”

Cheng Yun He frowned and said, “It will be easy for me! I am a

scholarly person who does not know any martial arts. They will not suspect me. But everyone else... will be highly suspicious. One impatient person will be enough to destroy everything!"

"Especially you two... your appearances are too obvious. Plus, your wounds have not completely healed. If you get discovered, your situations will not be good!" Cheng Yun He continued, "If you two King level leaders don't mind, you can hide in this cellar... Would that be okay?"

Kong Shang Xin and Yin Wu Fa's eyes simultaneously rolled in disbelief.

The words that Cheng Yun He was saying were meant for their ears. They were the only two who were the proudest and the least impatient.

The two of them were both King level leaders; such honorable positions. How could they hide in a cellar like mice? That was why he carefully said everything in advance...

"It's just a temporary measure to avoid the storm..." Cheng Yun He said.

"Fine!" Kong Shang Xin frowned, "I was hunted by people in Upper Three Heavens for seven or eight years; I am used to this crap..."

"Me, too! When I was on an assassination mission back then, I even went into a latrine pit..." Yin Wu Fa held his breath and said angrily.

Cheng Yun He was finally able to breathe a sigh of relief.

The place they were hiding in was in the center of Iron Cloud Citadel, not too far from the royal palace. As the saying goes, "it is darkest under the lamp."

"On another note, I will have to find a way for Gao Wei Cheng to get Du Shi Qing to create some chaos; the problem is that may be too dangerous. Whether Gao Wei Cheng will be able to do this or

not... at this point, we no longer have a lot of choices...” Cheng Yun He frowned as he muttered to himself and became silent in the middle of his thought.

“Let’s split up; disperse immediately! If you can, update your status once a day! If you cannot, don’t force it. Your safety is more important!”

Following Cheng Yun He’s order, fifty to sixty people there left as quickly as clouds in the wind. Only ten people remained to protect Kong Shang Xin and Yin Wu Fa. These people were all martial experts; if each of them tried to escape from the soldiers on their own, it would have been as easy as turning their palms over.

Given Cheng Yun He’s arrangement, if nothing unexpected happened, the two King level leaders hiding in Iron Cloud Citadel would not be discovered. Of course they would probably lose a few people, but they would be able to preserve the majority of their force.

You Yun was a Martial Warrior over twenty years old. He had been dreaming of joining Bu Tian Pavilion for a long time. But his cultivation level was too low, he was eliminated at the first round. In his depression, he did not join the rest of the citadel in the manhunt. Instead, he drank until he was completely drunk. After that, he left the place in a barely conscious state; the only thing he could feel was the alcohol rising up to his head. He did not know where he was going; he just needed a place to lie down and snore loudly...

He was suddenly disturbed from his beautiful dream by the need to urinate. Dreamily, with his eyes barely open, he undid his pants and started his business...

Half way through, he finally became a little lucid and opened his eyes to look around. He was standing next to a small pile of wood that someone had placed next to a door...

As the drunkenness wore away, he felt the chill of the autumn

wind. He shivered, and urine ran down his pants. He instinctively cursed and used his fingers to pinch the flow. As he was about to continue, a shadow flashed overhead. Right after, three people flew out. And then a whole group of people in black flew out…

You Yun was petrified; he almost yelled out, but was able to recover in to hold his mouth shut with his hands. However, he had forgotten about the internal force that he was controlling before he put his hands to his mouth. It started flowing again, and not an ounce was wasted as all of the urine soaked his pants; yet, he still could not recover from this state…

He vaguely heard two people saying to each other in a low voice, "…King level leader is here… No, here…"

"Silence!" The other person hastily said and flew away…

You Yun's hair stood on end; he immediately thought of the citadel-wide manhunt that had been going on these past few days… Could it be these people? Hearing them said these words… Could it be that they are inside?

You Yun's eyes immediately stood up cautiously. Some of the wood from wood pile behind him fell down and made a few soft noises. He hastily held his nose and made couple of cat sounds that he had learned. Then he slowly snuck away… It was not until he was more than a hundred feet away that he ran like crazy. His mind was filled satisfaction: No wonder my father gave me the name You Yun; I really am lucky… My pee can actually find spies; this is truly a credit to the heavens…

Chapter 189: Start the operation

Minister Chu dove straight into work and cultivation after Mo Qing Wu left. This was a critical time period; he often just stayed at Bu Tian Pavilion.

During this time, Ji Mo was feeling truly depressed. Among the five people at Heavenly Armament Pavilion, Dong Wu Shang was absolutely neutral, Rui Bu Tong and Gu Du Xing were the best of friends, and Luo Ke Di, being alone, was bullied...

Therefore, Luo Ke Di continued to pester Ji Mo trying to get into an alliance with him. But Ji Mo was by no means Gu Du Xing's opponent. He helped Luo Ke Di twice only to get beaten to black and blue by Gu Du Xing twice; then there was the fact that Luo Ke Di continued to pester him. Therefore, he went to Bu Tian Pavilion with Chu Yang to gain more experience and also to get away.

Ji Mo thought to himself: Damn, if I can't be near him, then couldn't I at least hide?

The torches in Bu Tian Pavilion burned brightly with Great and Revered level masters hurriedly going back and forth. Martial Artists and Martial Masters were turned into errand boys, each one rushing around nonstop.

Suddenly, there was a commotion at the gate. After coming back from exhausting work, Cheng Zi Ang said angrily, "What's going on?"

"A person said he discovered the spies." The guard at the gate stammered. He did not dare to believe that the disheveled and dirty person soaked the aroma of alcohol and urine in front of him knew the whereabouts of the Golden Horse Riders Department's people. Not only that, the person had the guts to ask to see Minister Chu... He scolded the person, but the person swore by the heavens. In his bad mood, he almost palmed the person... At this critical moment, the hall leader came just in time.

“Let him in!” Cheng Zi Ang said in annoyance, “You got a clue, and you are not hastily notifying us; what kind of work are you doing?”

The guard bit his tongue and waved his arm. The other guard dragged a wet guy in.

Cheng Zi Ang’s nostril was suddenly hit with the noxious smell of urine. He immediately pinched his nose and said angrily, “What is this?”

“This punk peed in his pants…” The guard held his nose and wanted to laugh, but he did not dare to.

“Damn… You are still young, and you can’t hold it?” Cheng Zi Ang irritably said, “Toss him out! What the f*?”

“Wait! It would not hurt to hear what he has to say.”

A cold voice spoke; a masked King of Hell Chu stepped out of his room. Since yesterday, everyone at Bu Tian Pavilion felt that the aura around the Minister was much more terrifying than before.

A more overpowering authority!

“Sir… you are Minister Chu… Official Chu?” You Yun anxiously cried out, “I really do have top secret information…”

Chu Yang patiently listened, and his eyes could not help but brighten, “Are you sure that you were not seeing things because you were drunk?”

“I am an orphan so I do not have anything to swear on. I will have to swear on the life of my wife and her mother! I absolutely was not seeing things!” You Yun fretfully raised his arm up and swore; his saliva flew everywhere, “If I lie may god let my wife run away with someone else…”

“Can you find that place?” Chu Yang’s eyes flashed. He was not certain if he should be sad or happy about this. But this guy really knew how to swear.

“It is very easy to find that place! I think it is the manor of a big official who was recently executed…” You Yun said happily. He knew that such a question meant an investigation was in order.

“Oh?” Chu Yang and Cheng Zi Ang looked at each other; each saw the regrets in the other’s eyes. This manor was just raided, and the official just got his head chopped off. They still did not have time to seal it. Plus, many people died at this house so everyone was a little scared of it; they would not have been able to sell it off to anyone. As a result, this was truly the most secretive location…

“Organize all of the troops! We have to move immediately!” Minister Chu quickly made a decision.

“Place all the Martial Masters with the other martial experts. Notify the soldiers guarding the citadel to block the inside of the city! Tell them to not let even a worm pass. If anyone tries to make trouble, kill without mercy!”

“Once they are done with the blockade, all the martial experts can make their move! We absolutely cannot put the enemies on alert!”

“But first, send someone over to the Prince and ask for the two martial experts to come here.”

“Let’s move!”

All of Bu Tian Pavilion instantly went into an uproar; more than two hundred people were immediately standing in front of King of Hell Chu.

Chu Yang really did not expect the King level leaders’ hiding place would be found by a wretched fellow’s urine. But he did not have time to mull this over; right now, he would prefer to believe this was the case.

As for their movements… worrying about that was unnecessary. The military was already creating chaos; a snake that was already being disturbed, could not possibly get disturbed anymore. Such

was the case…

Moreover, the moment he heard this news, he had a feeling that this information could not be false!

In a short time after, fireworks and flares exploded above the center of the citadel.

Chu Yang watched the fireworks exploded fiercely; with an icy gaze, he waved his arm, “Go!”

This pyrotechnic show was confirmation that the area was securely surrounded!

“Boss Chu, I am coming, too.” Ji Mo jumped out.

“You?” Chu Yang hesitated. Nothing good could come out of Ji Mo going. If something happened, the Ji clan’s anger would be no laughing matter.

“Don’t worry!” Ji Mo smiled and said, “I will not be in your way.”

“Fine! Let’s go!”

After an hour, Chu Yang’s group arrived in front of the big doors. Hiding in a distance, Chu Yang asked, “Are you sure it’s here?”

You Yun’s countenance paled; he hyperventilated and swallowed, “I swear to god! It is here!” Then he pleaded, “Minister Official, if the spies are caught, can I join Bu Tian Pavilion?”

“What is your name?” Chu Yang asked. Currently Chu Yang had already replaced his fierce mask with a veil. If he still wore the make, he would essentially be warning the enemies.

“I am… I am called You Yun.” You Yun tugged his pants up every now and then. The weather was currently very cold; having urine on his body was truly… too uncomfortable.

“You Yun… umm, your luck is not bad.” Chu Yang almost laughed. This person was so lucky that he could discover two King level leaders while peeing. He immediately said, “If this mission is

successful, you will have to go to Heavenly Secrets Hall and report to Hall Leader Chen."

"Thank you, Minister!" You Yun happily knelt down and kowtowed.

"I hope you can keep being lucky like this; it will be Bu Tian Pavilion's luck as well." Chu Yang smiled.

On the side, Cheng Zi Ang whispered, "Minister, can we move yet?"

"Wait a little." Chu Yang looked at the big door from three hundred feet away feeling very nervous. Tie Bu Tian had not sent his martial expert reinforcements here yet, and Chu Yang could not wait any longer.

If the enemies discovered them, they would lose this opportunity.

Chu Yang felt a little odd about the whole thing. Tie Bu Tian could not be so careless like this; what was going on?

After waiting a little longer, Chu Yang finally gritted his teeth and said, "How many layers of archers do we currently have?"

"We surrounded the area with three layers! All the arrows are made of steel."

"Surround them by six layers in all directions!" Chu Yang said fiercely, "On top, increase by eighteen layers! Nothing can slip out of our net!"

"Understood!"

"Once this is done, immediately start!"

"Yes!"

In silence, an army of about three thousand archers were once again arranged for additional layers of support. In the beginning, there were only one thousand archers.

“I feel as if something is not right, boss. Based on the words of this punk alone, you are sure that the enemies are here?” Ji Mo was a little confused, “Isn’t this a little too trusting?”

“Intuition.” Chu Yang said casually, “In all of Iron Cloud Citadel, very few places have not been searched, and only this place could keep that many people hidden without being discovered.”

“I still feel that it is a little uncertain. I will go over there and take a look…” Ji Mo instantly jumped from his hiding place; Chu Yang reached his arm to stop him, but Ji Mo was already fifty to sixty feet out.

In the night, Ji Mo’s body seemed to turn into an apparition as he flew a few hundred feet and slowly stopped. Like a blur, he had arrived at the big door.

Ji Mo was a little doubtful, but he really wanted to show off in front of Chu Yang. During this time, he was quiet relaxed, and his skills had improved greatly; plus, he was still juvenile.

Right after, he climbed over the wall to get in.

At this moment, the door suddenly creaked open. A person in black appeared right in front of Ji Mo’s face. Two people, four eyes looked at each other, stunned.

From three hundred feet out, Chu Yang felt very restless.

“Who goes there?” The person in black took a step back as he asked cautiously.

“Wind beat why? Ditch meaning clay? Fan clatter Fan clatter dog tired?” Ji Mo was tongue-tied; this was totally unexpected. When this person opened the door and stepped out, he suddenly excelled under pressure and spoke gibberish.

“What?” The person in black was temporarily stupefied scratching his head.

“There ga there ga you not agree? Tears tired enough sa? Rogue

bang economic bang economic? Enemies' weapons (TLN: Di wu)?" Ji Mo's eyes shifted nonstop as his mouth moved rapidly.

"Enemies' weapons? Diwu?" The person in black blinked pitifully; he only understood the last two words.

"Enemies' weapons! Enemies' weapons!" Ji Mo nodded repeatedly, "Please vomit meat? Intended mud ditch? Shhh beat huh?"

"Enemies' weapons? Please vomit meat? Enemies' weapons please vomit? (TLN: Please vomit sounds like qing rou. So this line makes 'Di wu qing rou.') Diwu Qing Rou?" The person in black looked at this strange ethnic person with great distress and sweated profusely, "Who are you?"

"Hey honey hey honey? Chatter chatter over? Tired step cried tired mother remained di huh?" Ji Mo showed a look of anxiousness and started to wave his arms about.

"What are you saying?" The pitiful person in black unconsciously tried to chase this crazy conversation.

"Dog aunt! Dog aunt!" Ji Mo said angrily and turned to walk away. His mouth was muttering, "Dog aunt fight shhh, dog aunt ditch meaning mud hum!"

The figure in black stood in a daze. He thought a little about these strange words and suddenly became lucid, "Stop!"

This poor person was fooled by Ji Mo.

"Shoot the arrows..." Ji Mo ran.

Chapter 190: Flood King level leaders out

The person in black suddenly realized he was tricked and roared angrily as he gave chase.

Chu Yang tried to suppress his laughter as he gave the order, “Kill!”

Swoosh... swoosh... swoosh...

There were intense shrill sounds in the wind, and the person in black fell to the ground in the blink of an eye; he had turned into a hedgehog.

From all directions, there were now at least a few hundred arrows piercing through his body.

Fireworks exploded in the sky!

In four directions, heated voices roared, “Kill!”

The entire sky seemed to shudder violently. Hundreds of people poured in toward this house. Behind them, the military thundered forward.

Behind their path, there were no longer any obstacles. Walls crumbled underneath them. Within moments, this house became a solitary island.

All around were martial artists and archers standing perfectly motionless.

Inside the house, the sound of fighting and blades crashing rang out endlessly. Suddenly, there was a boom and the four walls collapsed.

The dense advancement was unstoppable!

In this mission was an extremely massive military force.

Kong Shang Xin and Yin Wu Fa had just hid in the secret cellar for not too long leaving only a few people guarding on the outside.

All of a suddenly they heard some earth-shattering noises followed by the advancement of thousands of soldiers.

Exposed!

Why were we exposed? Everyone stayed inside; we already changed locations three times. This is the most secretive location; how did we get discovered?

The two King level leaders were shocked! In fact, this was the first time they were that shocked!

At this time, most of them were already dispersed; it was when their strength was at its weakest that their enemies attacked.

Then, there came the sounds of killing. It was their five Martial Great Masters and three Revered Martial Artists fighting with the enemies.

Kong Shang Xin paced back and forth in the secret cellar feeling very anxious.

Next to him, Yin Wu Fa had recovered some color. The two paid close attention to the movements outside. Without saying a word, they had a faint feeling that something bad was going to happen.

“Sirs, don’t worry. After Official Wang’s house was raided, I quietly set this up without drawing any attention. This chamber is thirty feet from the ground, and its location is extremely secretive; there is essentially no entrance. Even with great skill, King of Hell Chu will not be able to find this place!” The leader of the Iron Horse Riders said respectfully.

This place was his own idea; even Cheng Yun He had praised him for his strategy in this mission.

“I can only hope so.” Kong Shang Xin listened to the sound of fighting outside and sighed, “I am afraid the eight martial brothers are finished.”

“For you two King level leaders, there is no regret!” The leader of

the Iron Horse Riders said solemnly.

The moment the house fell down, the eight people exploded in all directions trying to break away. But the air was thick with arrows giving them much suffering.

They originally thought that it was a standard inspection; there was no way they could have guessed that there were an army of thousands waiting outside and blocking this area tightly.

A wave of arrows shot out like rain; three people were immediately injured. After that, the martial experts of Iron Cloud jumped out from among the soldiers and fought.

Chu Yang's black robe fluttered as he stood next to the trunk of a great tree. He watched the crowd fighting each other fiercely, but he was unable to differentiate between the enemies and his own. He could only see a circle of fighting like waves crashing in again and again.

The fighting continued like so with a total of eight enemies. Without losing too much time, there were only five left. Then, two people were done fighting, and there were only three.

Without stopping, some bloody soldiers were tossed out from the crowd, and were carried away immediately. If they were not bleeding profusely, they had lost their arms or broke their legs from inside the encirclement. There were also many who fell and were instantly trampled...

Inside, the sounds of screaming overlapped each other.

Even though there were on three enemies left, these three were fiercer than anyone's expectation.

Before they made their move, Chu Yang had said that they must be captured alive. But seeing the violent battle in front of their eyes, everyone knew that capturing such enemies alive was not a possibility!

Even keeping their bodies intact was an extremely difficult task.

The fight was very short; it lasted less than a quarter of an hour. However, Iron Cloud's side paid for it with the lives of some fifty or sixty people; there was also almost one hundred people injured.

The farthest distance a person went before he got killed was about five hundred feet from the center.

That Revered Martial Artist had managed to get out to five hundred feet before getting completely surrounded by endless soldiers and died with regrets!

"No matter how powerful a person is, he still cannot go against an army after all!" Standing next to Chu Yang, Ji Mo lamented.

"Jiang Hu is Jiang Hu, and the military is the military." Chu Yang said, "If the military is made of Jiang Hu people then those martial experts would definitely be able to break out of the blockade. But the military is not made of Jiang Hu people. Therefore, even a top level martial master would, without a doubt, die if he falls into such a secure encirclement."

Ji Mo nodded and said, "This is true."

"While Jiang Hu people are renegades, they know to stay out of trouble and protect their lives." Chu Yang said, "But soldiers do not have individuality; they only have orders! When an order is given, they can only advance! There is no turning back! Because if they turn back, they would immediately die by military law!"

"This is what they call 'military order is like a mountain'!" Ji Mo sighed, "But isn't this a little too cruel for ordinary soldiers?"

"It is cruel, but brutal wars are the missions of soldiers!" Chu Yang sighed lengthily.

"Aizz..." Ji Mo sighed again.

"Ji Mo, you almost ruined my big plan. I haven't dealt with you yet." Chu Yang gave him an icy glare and said, "You are very lucky that you did not get killed by an arrow. If you continue to act without restraint like that, you will have to deal with the

consequences yourself."

Ji Mo scratched his head and smiled. He knew what he did was indefensible and did not say anything.

"What did you say to that guy? I could not understand what I heard." Chu Yang asked.

Chu Yang had asked himself why he could not understand what Ji Mo had said even though he had been through a lot in his previous life; this made Chu Yang wonder.

From beginning to end, Chu Yang only heard "Enemies' weapons, please vomit meat." (TLN: Di wu, qing rou) As for everything else, he only felt ashamed for his ignorance.

"What's the meaning..." Ji Mo smiled reluctantly, "I was quick-witted in the face of danger. I don't even know what I said; I can't believe it made that guy's head spin..."

"Ack..." Chu Yang choked and smiled in irritation, "Suddenly running into such an odd language like that, I am afraid anyone would have the same initial reaction... You... you are not bad."

Chu Yang had nothing else to say about this.

"Minister, all eight enemies have paid for their sins!" An officer in charge of the siege ran over. He stood erect and bowed ceremoniously. His head was matted with blood and was still bleeding, but his countenance remained firm and cold.

"Good. Check on the casualties. These casualties need not be reported to the military; just report them directly to Bu Tian Pavilion!" Chu Yang said solemnly.

"Understood. I would like to thank you in all the martial brothers' stead." There was a happy look in the officer's eyes. Notifying the military would mean waiting for a long time before any pension would be paid. Plus, they would be small amounts for these ordinary soldiers. Notifying Bu Tian Pavilion meant that the families of these dead soldiers would be paid several times more

than that.

If Minister Chu had said so, then he would surely have a plan.

Cheng Zi Ang wiped his sweat; he walked up with a pale countenance, “Minister, three Revered Martial Artists and five Martial Great Masters, no one escaped.” Hall leader Cheng Zi Ang was more than lightly injured. He was bleeding a lot and his stance was wobbly.

“You investigated already? There are only those people? The strongest was Revered Martial Artist?” Chu Yang frowned.

“Yes, and only fifth grade Revered Martial Artist.” Cheng Zi Ang sweated as he spoke these words. He was on the verge of a breakthrough at this time. It was under King of Hell Chu’s pressure, but he only got to third grade Revered Saber Artist. When he said that the enemy was “only fifth grade Revered Martial Artist,” he realized that that enemy was two grades higher than him.

“There was no one else?” Chu Yang frowned and raised his voice.

“The battleground has been completely cleaned and searched thoroughly.” Cheng Zi Ang said, “There are no traces of others.”

“What about secret chambers?” Chu Yang asked.

“There are no secret chambers.” Cheng Zi Ang said, “I searched various escape routes around the house, and I carefully searched over everything, but there are no signs of a secret chamber. Plus, this is an official’s home; besides a few cellars, there are no secret chambers.”

That can’t be right. Chu Yang thought to himself. You Yun reported that he heard two people in black saying, “...King level leader is here... No, here...”

These words were not made up. Currently, many Revered Martial Artists and Martial Great Masters from Golden Horse Riders Department had appeared. This was enough proof so it was

not possible that they were not there.

Moreover, the soldiers had the area so securely surrounded that even a mouse could not get out. So he was sure that there were still people in this manor, and they were King level masters.

There must be a problem with the search.

“Do not tell the troops to withdraw yet.” Chu Yang pondered; his gaze became icy as he said, “Maintain a tight perimeter, then send people to bring water here. Flood the entire place; even if they have turned into mice and burrowed underground, I will flood them out.”

“Yes.” Cheng Zi Ang was not happy because he already verified that there was no secret chamber. Flooding the place with water was of no use; it would only be a waste of effort.

But the Minister had given the order so he did not dare to object.

He turned away and gave a series of orders; everyone immediately acted.

“General Li, I hope that you can delegate a group of soldiers to help carry water to complete this task.” Chu Yang looked at a young general and said.

“No problem!” General Li said ceremoniously, and turned to give orders, “Everyone, go get water.”

With a ooh rah, more than a thousand soldiers immediately moved.

Chapter 191: Even with nothing left, we will not hesitate to fight!

“Torches, brighten this place up! Archers, don’t slack off. In addition, fighters be ready and surround it by ten layers.” Chu Yang gave out one order after another, “Block here, here, here, and here; don’t let the water escape.”

“Boss, even if there are people inside, can’t you wait until morning to catch them? Isn’t it too much of a rush right now?” Ji Mo frowned.

“If there are people in there, they are King level masters!” Chu Yang said casually, “Plus, they are injured. King level masters recover very quickly; I am sure you also know this. Through this one night, if the King level masters recover even a little bit of their fighting strength, our side would lose a lot of soldiers! With a big loss or just more death, it would still be the failure of the person in command!”

Chu Yang continued, “We must never allow the enemies any opportunity to catch their breath! Their chance for a reprieve will be our irreparable misfortune!”

Ji Mo sighed at looked at Chu Yang, “Oh, that’s how it is.”

He also thought to himself: He is even considerate of soldiers he doesn’t know; how could he do wrong by his martial brothers?

As he was thinking, there were already people running forward with buckets of water. Then, many more rushed in…

While there were many, they did not have enough tools. It seemed that they needed time and patience to achieve this goal.

At this very moment, four to five people started digging and created a ditch on the path. Afterward, a stream of water ran into the court. As it turned out, there was a well on the other side with a built-in pulley as well.

And so, the water flowed continuously to this side as people shouted in a lively manner. Gradually, many people got their hands on tools; one person even somehow found a large metal drum used by the military and used a horse drawn wagon to bring it over. This was becoming fun as each trip was bringing the equivalent of fifty or sixty buckets of water...

Several commanders jumped up and yelled fiercely, “Faster! Faster!”

Time slowly passed as the official’s manor became a marsh.

As for the few cellars that they found, they were the first ones to get filled up with water...

The manpower was massive as people carried water, brought up water from the well, and blocked up any cracks all around. In the distance, there were people relaying the water over.

Some twenty wells in the nearby area were all being used by the military at the same time.

The water was flooding up over more than an acre land...

Countless soldiers were quietly watching; archers, fighters, spear thrower... were all ready for the enemies! They were all holding their weapons tightly with their eyes gleaming!

Below, Kong Shang Xin, Yin Wu Fa and the others made eight total; they were all feeling very anxious.

At first, they did not hear any movements and thought that the army had withdrawn. As they let out a sigh of relief, they heard a loud commotion...

Because they were far from the surface, they did not hear what people were saying. They only heard loud yelling every now and then. A feeling of uneasiness rose in everyone’s mind.

What are the enemies doing?

The air in the secret chamber gradually grew moist, and the

temperature also went down. Kong Shang Xin frowned seeming to be thinking about something as his countenance progressively grew cold…

A while later, water started to drip from the ceiling of the secret chamber.

“Water! Water is seeping in.” Yin Wu Fa’s eyes grew wide as he looked at the water! Everyone’s countenance simultaneously paled; they finally realized that King of Hell Chu’s plan was to flood them out! This was extremely bad news for them!

While there was virtually no entrance or exit, they were still underground. And with such a large space, as long as there was water on the ground surface, it was only a matter of time before this place would be flooded! Or, it might collapse completely!

If they did not die from drowning, they would die from the collapse.

Looking at the dripping drops of water that slowly turned to small streams… and mud starting to drop down in chunks, the two King level leaders were petrified.

Their current situation was truly abysmal!

Going out would mean facing the blockade of a large army. Even though they did not know how many people were there, they knew it was not a small number from the sounds they were hearing. The two were severely injured and were not certain that they could break out from the blockade. But just standing still here… they would just quietly turn into corpses.

They were stuck between a rock and a hard place!

More mud fell down, and the water on the floor was starting to soak through their shoes.

The two King level leaders could not even cry out tears.

King of Hell Chu, you are very cruel, huh?

Such an unforgiving scheme, and you could still think of it?

“Sirs, please make a decision right away. This place... will soon collapse!” A Revered Martial Artist hastily said. He was not even done speaking when more mud fell down from above them...

Kong Shang Xin let out an angry roar, and said with red eyes, “We break out!”

Before he was done speaking those three words, the three Revered Martial Artists, two Martial Great Masters, and one Iron Horse Rider Martial Master showed a tragic look on their faces!

Everyone knew what breaking out at this moment would mean. Especially with two King level leaders still not recovered, they did not have even a little bit of hope!

Their enemies was going against them with sheer numbers; even without martial experts, ordinary soldiers would be enough to kill them. Going out could only mean dying in battle, but remaining in here would mean dying by drowning! At least they could gain some ground by dying in battle, drowning... was too much of a waste.

“Brothers, before we break out, I want to say a few words.” Kong Shang Xin weakly straightened his body as he solemnly eyed the sparkling streams of water running down.

All the others stood straight and listened quietly.

“This situation is very dangerous; even I am not sure if I could escape. Therefore, in this battle... might be the last time we will fight side by side with each other!” Kong Shang Xin eyes were on the verge of tears. After a second, he became calm as he looked over his subordinates.

He spoke with a low voice, “This time, I, Kong Shang Xin, have dragged everyone down! The reason for everything that’s happening is the fact that I acted on my own accord and brought down these serious consequences. I have caused you all to be in this desperate situation!”

“Sir, please don’t talk like that. We will fight together and die together. We are all people of Jiang Hu, and have already seen death as just that.”

“Thank you for your understanding. If there is another life, I, Kong Shang Xin, hope we could fight together in Jiang Hu and control the world. We will use all of our power to unite it!”

Kong Shang Xin’s voice grew solemn. This Sad Saber King seemed to have a premonition that his life was going to be over. With each word, he used all of his emotion as if they were coming from his heart.

“Second brother! It is not as if we do not have a chance. Why must you talk so pessimistically?” Yin Wu Fa could only feel that his chest was about to explode with pressure as he glared and spoke angrily.

“Listen to me!” Kong Shang Xin smiled and walked in front of Yin Wu Fa; he gently patted his shoulder and said, “Third brother, if you could return to Great Zhao this time, don’t think about revenge.”

Then he turned his head and bowed deeply to the six subordinates.

“Sir! What are you doing?” The Command Horse Rider that was lucky enough to survive knelt to the ground and cried tearfully, “All of us brothers will die together! Sir, why… why…” When he got to these words, his voice choked, and he could not continue anymore.

“No! You three! There is a great chance of you all not getting injured and successfully escaping.” Kong Shang Xin said sincerely, “I only ask of you one thing; if possible… bring my third brother out!”

Yin Wu Fa angrily yelled, “Second brother, if you are not leaving, how could I? When we became sworn brothers, we said that we

would die together and not leave anyone behind! Do you want me to become a heartless person? As things stand, it is fine if we all die together in one place!”

“This is natural! If we must die, we will die together!” Kong Shang Xin looked at Yin Wu Fa emotionally and thought: Third brother, I owe you a life from before; today, even if I get chopped to pieces, I must get you out safely.

He did not argue any further and only quietly looked at his martial brothers. After a moment, he said, “Remember what I said.”

After he said these words, he calmly looked at the Command Horse Rider and said sincerely, “Old Sa, we have known each other for a long time; this is my last command! It is also my last request in life!”

That Command Horse Rider knelt down; his whole body trembled as tears fell down like rain. He nodded repeatedly.

Kong Shang Xin looked at Yin Wu Fa nostalgically and said softly, “Brothers, I very much want to... ride through Jiang Hu with you once more...” These words were almost inaudible.

After he finished talking, he immediately turned and went out without turning back.

“Break out!” Yin Wu Fa roared, but he hung back and inconspicuously pulled that Command Horse Ride to the side. He said hastily, “Old Sa, if things go wrong... you must absolutely bring Second King level leader out! Please!”

Then, without waiting for a reply from old Sa, he followed behind Kong Shang Xin and went out.

Old Sa was temporarily shocked. Facing a moment of life and death, the two King level leaders famous for being ruthless were showing a shining example of the word brotherhood!

I can sacrifice myself, but my brother must live!

Mud splattered everywhere as Kong Shang Xin and Yin Wu Fa, both thin like each other, walked out from the dark chamber. But their broad shoulders made it look as if they had held up the passage way for each other! A sharp aura slowly emitted from these two like a tsunami in this narrow passage way!

Mud fell like rain; on the ground, the water had already rose past their knees.

Kong Shang Xin stood in the middle with his body erect. He closed his eyes and, without turning around, he said, “Brothers, take care!”

Chapter 192: Surround and kill King level leaders!

Kong Shang Xin suddenly stretched out his arms. At the same time, the shadowless blade that put Middle Three Heavens in a frenzy and shocked Lower Three Heavens appeared in his right hand. With a swoosh, a big circle appeared on top of his head!

The wall that was already becoming soft collapsed right away.

With a loud bang, everything came crashing down! Kong Shang Xin's frail body immediately became a streak of light as he jumped up!

The first person to rush out was, without a doubt, the one to receive the fiercest of the enemies' attack! This person was in the most danger!

However, Kong Shang Xin only knew how to use others for all of his life; today was the first time he voluntarily used himself to open an escape path.

He used his body to cover his brothers!

Boom!

The whole surface collapsed, and the whole yard was filled with water. Because of this, everyone stood and watched from a distance. The other soldiers were still putting their efforts into transporting water over.

The sudden collapse showed a large space, and everyone was startled...

Just then, a thin shadow in black holding a shining saber shot out from under the ground like a demon. Standing in the middle of the water, his sharp eyes shined like two flashing lights in the dark of the night.

His dirty body was covered with mud as he stood waist-deep in

water. Only his upper body was exposed, but his whole figure emitted a vicious aura as if it was a cornered lion! It was an indomitable fighting spirit!

The water underneath him flowed back violently; the force darkened the water making it look like a demon was rising up from the depth on these waves!

The sound of drums rose as seven more people appeared next to this person. Only eight people were facing a powerful army that was surrounding them in all directions. Their faces never showed any trace of fear as they emitted a bone-chilling iciness the likes of which had never been felt before!

In the distance, Chu Yang's pupils suddenly contracted.

They have come out!

The two King level leaders are indeed here! The information was correct!

Cheng Zi Ang let out a angry roar, wanting to lead the charge, but Chu Yang waved his arm and stopped him.

"May I ask which of the two Golden Horse Riders Department's King level leaders are we facing?" Chu Yang asked casually.

Kong Shang Xin looked at Chu Yang from a distance; after staring for a long time, he finally smiled and asked, "Are you King of Hell Chu?"

Chu Yang said with a veil over his face, "Yes. With two King level leaders here, dare I claim the title King of Hell?"

"Absolutely worthy!" Kong Shang Xin's gaze went past a hundred feet and fell on Chu Yang's face without showing any emotion. It made Chu Yang feel as if he was being pierced by needles, "I had once made my mark in Middle Three Heavens. Four clans joined together and could not force me to a corner! But you have! Impressive!"

“King of Hell Chu, you are crafty! Your strategies are good!” Kong Shang Xin stared at Chu Yang for a while before sighing. These word of praises contained the complex emotions he was feeling inside.

After seeing the real King of Hell Chu, Kong Shang Xin finally understood why he fell for this guy’s trap. Looking at his aura, he was not more powerful than a Martial Master. Between him and Yin Wu Fa, there had been three Ministers; it was definitely King of Hell Chu’s schemes to bring misfortune upon them!

Just like Diwu Qing Rou has said, he used powerful people from Middle Three Heavens clans! It’s infuriating that I was played by him; and it’s not until when we are at the end of our ropes that we realize the truth. It is already too late.

“I dare not receive such compliment!” Chu Yang said ceremoniously, “May I ask if you are Sad Saber King Kong Shang Xin?”

“Who I am is no longer important!” Kong Shang Xin chuckled and shook his head; his gaze started to move as he looked at the army in all four directions. With a hint of mockery, he said, “It seems that you think too high of me… there are bout fifty thousand people in four directions?”

“You think too lightly of yourself.” Chu Yang said casually, “Just to keep you here, the number of archers, alone, is fifteen thousand!”

Chu Yang’s sharp eyes looked at Kong Shang Xin, “There are already more than one third of the archers in Iron Cloud Citadel here! More of them continue to come!”

Kong Shang Xin laughed and said, “Fifteen thousand archers! That is enough to dominate this battle already; if I die, it will be a glorious death!”

Chu Yang said casually, “Currently, the radius of several miles

has turned into a metal drum! In the center of the city, all of the guards are on alert! All the gates of the citadel are watched tightly. Plus, this place is a little too far from the gates."

He looked Kong Shang Xin pitifully, "You have reached the end of the road!"

"Are you telling me to surrender?" Kong Shang Xin laughed loudly and said with an icy gaze, "Then you have underestimated me and underestimated Golden Horse Riders Department!"

"Definitely not." Chu Yang said respectfully, "A King level master always has his dignity. While I am not a King level master, I don't want to be humiliated either."

"You should end your lives on your own." Chu Yang said quietly, "And let me maintain my respect for you unyielding King level leaders!"

Kong Shang Xin laughed mockingly, "End our lives on our own? King of Hell Chu, are you dreaming?" He let out a shout and said ferociously, "King of Hell Chu, I cannot avoid dying here today, but you better have prepared a large military pension!"

Chu Yang laughed icily.

Both sides were biding their time. Kong Shang Xin was taking the opportunity to recover his martial strength; every little bit would help. Chu Yang was waiting for the complete encirclement of the citadel! Chu Yang also had some faint hope that Tie Bu Tian would send help.

While this hope was not great, the two Shadow Guards only needed to come here and there would be no unnecessary casualties. The two injured King level leaders would be neatly captured!

Currently, they have not made a move yet; but Chu Yang knew that once they made a move, the fierce reaction of his opponents would kill many soldiers. The reaction of a dying King level master would naturally be earth-shattering.

Kong Shang Xin was not wrong; to hold back two King level masters, they would have to pay a great price.

Time slowly passed by, and the soldiers on the periphery had gradually arrived. Three layers on the inside and three layers on the outside made an encirclement like a giant metal barrel. Chu Yang wanted to give the order when a horse from the outside suddenly ran toward them. The person on the horse was Chen Yu Tong.

Chen Yu Tong went through the encirclement and came in front of Chu Yang; he hastily said with a low voice, “Minister, the prince went into the royal palace. His Majesty’s condition is acting up; after the prince went into the palace, he did not come out…”

“Why didn’t you tell me earlier?” Chu Yang was so angry he wanted to smack Chen Yu Tong! Does it mean that… all this time, the enemies were allowed to take a breather and his support was not coming?

Chen Yu Tong’s face paled. After he went to the prince’s manor, he rode nonstop to the royal palace and waited for an audience with Tie Bu Tian; but Tie Bu Tian never appeared.

Then Du Shi Qing came and said that the emperor was not well; the prince and the two King level masters was helping to maintain the emperor’s energy. The moment Chen Yu Tong heard this he knew that the two King level masters would probably not arrive in time. He rode nonstop back here…

“King level master Kong! So sorry!” Chu Yang shouted loudly, “Kill!”

If reinforcements were not coming, he would have to make a big sacrifice with the current strength! Chu Yang made a quick decision and gave this cruel command.

This shout started the great battle!

With that one command, arrows filled the air. Thousands of

arrows became the first wave of attack! The second and third waves came out after without a break from the first.

“Spread out!” Kong Shang Xin roared, and the eight people in the center simultaneously shot out in different directions like fireworks.

At the same time, Kong Shang Xin stomped once and his whole body glowed with a golden light. The water in the yard suddenly rose and pushed out in all directions like countless angry dragons! They engaged the onslaught of arrows!

With a swoosh, all the torches around the area were extinguished by the water at the same time. In a distance, there was still light, but the yard became drowned in a strange shimmering darkness!

Without a sound, that Iron Horse Rider was turned into a hedgehog after the first wave of attack; he silently fell down. The two Martial Great Masters went half way and spilled blood in midair. They let out a scream as their bodies were pierced with a few dozen sharp arrows; the two simultaneously yelled, “Sirs, please go first! Let us open a path for the two King level leaders!”

Before they finished speaking, the two used the last ounce of their energy to throw out their weapons. Then, with a tragic laugh, they fell in the water, and scarlet water splattered!

One saber and one sword flew through the air like shooting stars, and continued for more than a hundred feet straight into the crowd. A miserable cry rang out!

“Brothers, go leisurely! We will follow you soon!” Old Sa laughed as the remaining five continued to burst out for an additional three hundred feet!

The two King level leaders were like two sharp arrows piercing forward! Flying arrows continued to come at them. Kong Shang Xin’s shadowless saber did not cease to fly blocking all the arrows as the other hand grabbed these arrows and threw them back like

icy rays of light.

The saber did not stop moving, and his hand also did not stop.

Pop! Pop! The sound arrows piercing into human flesh did not cease; many soldiers from all directions had died from this counterattack. Kong Shang Xin flew forward swiftly. His long hair flew in the back, and his countenance remained just as calm as before. Under the light of a distant torch, a pair of clearly subtle eyes were shining like those of a wolf!

He was currently at his peak state almost like an uninjured person!

The thick arrows never had a chance of reaching his body; of course any arrow that got past his saber would just be knocked down by the aura protecting his body!

He was like a hurricane that swept straight ahead; he was like a raging fire that did not have any concern for itself. He brought out the last of the fervent strength in his body and turned it into a rising heat that could burn people!

They had rushed out almost two hundred feet!

“Ready! Shoot!” A shrill shout emitted as the leader of the spear troop looked up and shouted his command!

Chapter 193: The end of the road

Three thousand spear wielders shot out black streaks! From different directions and angles and with different speeds, they were all shooting at one target: the team of five that was rushing toward them!

Kong Shang Xin let out a long shout and flew into the air. The tip of his feet pushed at the points of the first wave of spears; his body slowly shot up in the air and met with the second wave of spears. The saber in his hand suddenly swung. He let out a loud roar and continued to rise. The saber continued to flash, and his body had risen a few hundred feet in the air!

Right after, he became like a flash of light as he drew a strange bright arch. The back of his body flashed and created mysterious apparitions. He flew across the air in a radiant glow and rushed straight into the army of soldiers!

His saber flashed fiercely as if a little sun had suddenly appeared! In the front military group, a wave of blood suddenly burst out!

The waves of blood continued to splash as Kong Shang Xin opened a bloody path in a blink of an eye, and assisted his martial brothers!

Yin Wu Fa held a spear that he just caught and also rushed up in a frenzy! His body was already hit with three or four arrows.

Among the remaining three, Old Sa was the first one to rush up in the midst of oncoming arrows and spears. Close behind him was a seventh grade Revered Martial Artist. Together with Yin Wu Fa, they created a small “品” as they broke out!

However, the last person, a fourth grade Revered Martial Artist, was one step too slow. At this moment, endless arrows shot toward him. He let out a breath, but it was the last breath of his life.

Spears flew forth like deadly lightning bolts and pinned his to the

ground. Then nonstop spears and arrows turned his body into minced meat in the blink of an eye!

Arrows continued to fly tirelessly, and spears also shot forth endlessly!

Yin Wu Fa and company were surrounded less than fifty feet away from the encirclement!

Seeing the precarious situation, Yin Wu Fa angrily screamed and flew up. From being surrounded by soldiers he shot out carelessly. Many people were tossed out by him in the process; there limps were flailing as they flew through the air. A cold light streak as white as snow came to Yin Wu Fa's side!

"Follow me!" Kong Shang Xin's voice had become hoarse. Without stopping, he immediately turned bringing Yin Wu Fa and company with him, and brazenly rushed into the battle front!

The rain of arrows and spear did not cease. The soldiers screamed out, "Kill!" and rushed in from all directions like a rising tide.

"Close range combat!" Chu Yang immediately ordered.

"Minister, how about we wait a little? The auras of the two King level leaders are still strong. Let these soldiers tire them out; then our martial experts will put out their full efforts and have assured victory!"

These words from the Revered Martial Artist from the prince's manor made Chu Yang furious; he smacked him hard in the face and yelled, "Bastard! Are we wasting their strength? What we paying with are lives of soldiers! Your life is a life, but the lives of soldiers are not? Rush in now! If you are the least bit slow, I will take the heads of all nine generations of your family!"

On the side, Cheng Zi Ang let out a crazed roar and led the martial experts of Bu Tian Pavilion in a fierce charge.

"Everyone rush in! As martial experts, it is time for you assume a

little more burden!" Chu Yang screamed, "Let's give our brothers a little more chance at survival!"

The battleground had turned into a chopping board thick with blood and meat. Kong Shang Xin and Yin Wu Fa fought viciously. Two King level leaders and two high ranking Revered Martial Artists were showing a burst of their combat strength at this time and terrifying everyone!

Even though they were severely injured, and even though they were hit with countless arrows and spears, they possessed a mythical strength and refused to fall! They continued to fight!

With desperation, they fought their way out for five hundred feet!

A steady wave of troops continued to rush at them.

A pitiful scream was heard, then the eighth grade Revered Martial Artist suddenly cried out in terror. A soldier had just dropped the body of his friend. With red eyes, he had screamed out and jumped up. Without any care for his life, he held on tightly to the eighth grade Revered Martial Artist! Holding him was equivalent to hugging a saber! (TLN: Not sure if explanation is needed - Death!)

A saber flashed, and the arm of this soldier went flailing, but he stubbornly held on to this eighth grade Revered Martial Artist with his remaining arm and fiercely bit him with his teeth!

"Aaah..." This Revered Martial Artist cried out, and this soldier flew out in fragments. The time that this soldier held on to him was as short as a blink of an eye.

In a normal situation, this small time window would have been negligible! But they were currently surrounded by a great army with dozens of blades ready to meet him...

At the very moment he pushed out that soldier, seven or eight other soldiers simultaneously leapt up with ferocious faces and

blades in hand! In the back, spear wielders also thrusted up fiercely!

This Revered Martial Artist screamed out once; he used all of his strength to dodge but still ended up being stabbed in the stomach!

The fact that he made it this far was not easy; he was physically drained and no longer had the strength to dodge at this moment! He grabbed the spear in his stomach with his left (TLN: Author wrote right, but it made no sense in the scenario that follows. Probably a mistake.) hand. With a hopeless cry, he moved to stab the spear wielder with the saber he was holding!

The saber flashed and suddenly dropped; his right hand had parted from his body and flew out. He screamed, but his left hand was gripping tightly on this soldier's neck. At the same time, eight or nine sabers slashed at him at the same time. In the thick of flying flesh and blood, his hand managed to break the necks of four soldiers. Before their bodies reached the ground, dozens of others rushed forward; their berserk screaming rang out at the same time.

One slash, his left hand fell off.

One slash, his right leg fell off! He tumbled to the ground. One of the soldier immediately took hold of the spear still in his stomach and twisted. With a loud scream, he raised the Revered Martial Artist up in the air.

"Kill...!" Countless sabers and swords arrived at the same time, and his flesh flew...

There were still three remaining!

Kong Shang Xin rabidly looked at King of Hell Chu, a dark figure watching over the battle. He grinded his teeth together hatefully.

The opponent still had not made a move!

He only needed King of Hell Chu to make a move. With his strength and that of Yin Wu Fa, they were completely capable of

taking King of Hell Chu. Then they would fight as they retreat; the army would be afraid to cause harm to their leader and would not be as careless as they were right now!

However, King of Hell Chu never moved; this made them lose their greatest chance of survival!

All around Kong Shang Xin, bodies lined the ground. At a glance, there were a few hundred! There was also a small bloody path in the distance, also Kong Shang Xin's handiwork.

Between the long fight along and an already injured body, Kong Shang Xin felt his vision becoming hazy and his strength gradually weakening. In this state, Kong Shang Xin suddenly felt his imminent death!

I won't be able to hold on much longer!

Could this be the end of the road?

As these thoughts appeared, Kong Shang Xin was unwilling to accept them. How could I die like this? How could I die so easily?

Suddenly, he crazily slashed his saber one hundred seventy-seven times nonstop. In four directions, fifty people screamed out at the same time. He yelled out one word, "No!"

Yin Wu Fa's whole body was soaked in blood; hearing that shout, he yelled out, "Second brother!"

His condition was not good. If it were not for Old Sa always staying by his side, this still recovering King level leader would have become a pile of minced meat already!

"Old Sa!" Kong Shang Xin roared once more.

Old Sa yelled loudly, "I am here!"

"I am here!"

"I am still alive!"

The three people yelled loudly as if their very existence gave

them the greatest strength...

In a distance, Chu Yang's face paled, "Something is amiss! Give orders for everyone to stay alert!"

The signal horn sounded, and the people fighting immediately retreated; a new group of soldiers rushed up...

"These two King level masters are truly good men!" Ji Mo praised as he stood next to Chu Yang.

"Yes!" Chu Yang attentively watched the battle; his arms did not stop waving various flag signals. He said in a serious tone, "Too bad they are our enemies!"

"Too bad!" Ji Mo said regretfully.

The moment Ji Mo said "too bad," the battle suddenly changed.

"Come closer!" Kong Shang Xin loud shout shook up the night sky.

"Okay!" Yin Wu Fa and Old Sa yelled out in unison. The battle circle seemed to move with them; the screaming and fighting, as if controlled by them, all turned to the direction of Kong Shang Xin...

"Don't let them get close to each other!" Chu Yang yelled out! He could feel that once these three come together, some unfathomable event was going to happen!

Cheng Zi Ang roared from within the battle; as if he no longer wanted to live, he led his subordinates to block them.

The crowd on the other side was turned topsy-turvy as Kong Shang Xin was killing his way over like a demented tiger! Wherever he went, blood spurted. His path was dyed crimson by blood squirting brightly. It was as if this Sad Saber King leader was emitting scarlet fireworks!

The entire battleground was like a nightmare! Everything seemed to have become an illusion...

Before this, everyone thought that Chu Yang was making a big deal out of nothing. To deal with just a few people, he had mobilized almost a hundred thousand soldiers!

But currently, everyone was shaken by the fighting strength of these people. Are they even humans?

Surrounded by almost a hundred thousand soldiers and under the pressure of five thousand archers, and they were still able to kill that many people. The number of casualties was startling!

If so many soldiers were not mobilized at the same time, if only half of them were there, these people would probably not be held back!

All of the soldiers used were the most heroic in the military, but the moment they rushed up, they were dealt with in one breath! The Martial Warriors and Martial Masters lasted a bit longer before they became corpses!

It was said that these people were severely injured!

If they were not injured... The thought of this made the commanding officials shiver!

The distance between Kong Shang Xin and Yin Wu Fa was only fifty or sixty feet now! But under Chu Yang's command, this distance became a heavenly moat as it was filled with most of the martial experts!

Even if Kong Shang Xin was not injured, his success was not guaranteed if he rushed into this space.

Kong Shang Xin let out a shrill laughter. His eyes flashed brightly. An aura of determination suddenly emanated from his body. His arm swung the shadowless saber up, and the blade unexpectedly shined brightly like stars in the sky!

Chapter 194: Don't let me die with regrets

Right after that, King level master Kong Shang Xin's golden radiance exploded in the air!

Kong Shang Xin suddenly jumped up and spun. Body and saber joined as one becoming a brilliant ball of light. Then he shot through the air!

A strange whooshing sound rang out. The saber flashed a dream-like luster as it flew toward the crowd!

Chu Yang hastily screamed, "Disperse! This is the life saber technique!" The life saber technique, it was when a King level master used his own life to begin fighting and killing!

This was different from person and saber becoming one, but the strength was the same.

With person and saber becoming one, there was a chance of recovery, but with life saber technique, the person burned their own life and had no chance of recovery!

That was why the life saber technique was also called "Life Countdown." Because once initiated, it was the countdown toward the end of the person's life!

Sad Saber King Kong Shang Xin had thrown his life on the line!

Once this move is made, even if no one attacked Kong Shang Xin, he would, without a doubt, die!

Chu Yang had waited for this moment for a long time! How could he let his subordinates die together with Sad Saber King like that?

Hearing this, Cheng Zi Ang immediately yelled, "Disperse!" And he hastily turned and rolled outward. But his back was still slightly licked by the saber's tip. A chunk of meat and skin flew out, and Hall Leader Cheng convulsed with pain all over his body...

With Kong Shang Xin's life-risking move, the three were finally

together!

“Second brother!” Yin Wu Fa screamed out; tears poured down from his face!

“Yin Wu Fa!” Kong Shang Xin looked up at the heavens and shrieked as his long hair flew up, “Don’t let me die with regret!”

“Second brother...!” Yin Wu Fa yelled loudly as his whole body suddenly trembled.

“Go!” Kong Shang Xin shouted, then his whole body emitted a golden radiance. Grabbing Yin Wu Fa tightly in his hand, he yelled, “Old Sa! This path to the underworld, do you agree to help me go there this one time?!”

Old Sa laughed, and shouted, “I currently want to go with you to learn what is this underworld!”

“Good! Today, I, Kong Shang Xin, will have to do you wrong! On the path to the underworld, I will apologize to you then!” Kong Shang Xin screamed out loud and suddenly took in a deep breath. His whole body emitted a blinding light all of a sudden!

Then he jumped up by only ten feet, and his legs suddenly lowered!

Old Sa roared, and his body flashed. He jumped to under Kong Shang Xin’s feet and gathered all of his body’s martial energy to his two palms. Suddenly, he aimed straight up and pushed!

Boom!

Kong Shang Xin’s feet suddenly landed on Old Sa’s hands. With the powerful reaction of one King level master and one ninth grade Revered Martial Artist pushing at the same time, Kong Shang Xin became a startling rainbow while clutching Yin Wu Fa.

They flew up into the air for about three hundred feet and went forward for more than a hundred feet directly in Chu Yang’s direction!

Behind him, the air popped loudly with a sonic boom! A wisp of white smoke sudden spread outward!

“Protect the Minister!” Cheng Zi Ang yelled. He jumped forward ignoring his blood-soaked back. While shouting, he desperately rushed toward Chu Yang!

Whoosh!

Kong Shang Xin had reached his maximum height in the air; if he went any further, his altitude would only decrease!

At this very moment, Kong Shang Xin warmly glanced at Yin Wu Fa in his clutch; a deep emotion emitted from his gaze...

Yin Wu Fa yelled out, “Second brother! Don’t!”

Kong Shang Xin turned a deaf ear and let out a loud roar toward the heavens!

In the air, the ghostly golden radiance around the King level master spun and formed a sun. There was a loud boom as that golden radiance immediately exploded all over the sky and dissipated into the night.

Kong Shang Xin’s body suddenly stopped in the midair. Then he continued to rise by about seventy or eighty feet and let out a roar, “Brother!”

His arms spun around like a windmill as he tossed Yin Wu Fa’s body out. The moment Yin Wu Fa left his hands, Kong Shang Xin’s body flashed once again. At the same time, blood fiercely shot out of his mouth, and his two arms and legs quickly chased Yin Wu Fa’s figure which was flying like a shooting star. He madly moved with an unimaginable speed as he followed a quickly moving Yin Wu Fa. He let out hundreds of continuous palms. After that, he roared loudly, “Don’t let me die with regrets!”

Suddenly, he fiercely kicked against Yin Wu Fa’s soles!

“Swoosh...” The air popped behind Yin Wu Fa. And like that he

flew out at high speed like a flashing meteor in the night sky. He was already over a thousand feet away... finally, his figure could no longer be seen...

“This is a King level master’s last resort! Golden Mirage, ‘at this moment I am King’! The person shatters his own soul. No matter how severely injured a King level master is, in a blink of an eye, his strength can explode by borrowing from his soul, and he could double his peak strength!” Ji Mo said with a serious countenance, “Once this move is made, it is invincible! And this King level master used this move to help his martial brother escape!”

Chu Yang let out a sigh and said, “Even though they are our enemies, their brotherly love is truly touching and admirable!”

Ji Mo let out an hmm in agreement.

It was also at this moment, the golden radiance in the air suddenly flashed, and there was a scream, “King of Hell Chu! I will take your life!”

With the remaining power, Kong Shang Xin dropped from four hundred feet in the air and rushed toward Chu Yang!

“King of Hell Chu! I will take your life!” Old Sa, who was on the ground, also excitedly followed toward Chu Yang’s direction without a care for his life!

Yin Wu Fa was not yet out of danger, so they had to cause chaos to give him a chance at escaping and keeping his life.

Therefore, old Sa and Kong Shang Xin were currently giving a desperate fight!

Countless figure rushed forward. Dark arrows and spears exploded liked meteors bursting in the air!

Kong Shang Xin laughed and did not avoid them. His eyes flashed a ferocious looked as he headed toward Chu Yang’s position without any delay!

He was currently using all of his life energy to make one palm. His soul was already shattered, and his King level golden radiance had also disappeared, but he continued to rushed forward just as before!

Arrows filled the air like a hundred rivers pouring into the sea; they were gathering at Kong Shang Xin's body!

At first, he was able to beat them off, but as time passed, they pierced his body!

A spear from Ji Mo's hand flew and pierced right through Kong Shang Xin's stomach. However, Kong Shang Xin's speed still did not decrease even a little, and he continued to rush up.

The distance to Chu Yang was reduced to less than thirty feet.

At this moment, in his eyes, there was no heaven, no earth, no enemies, and no great army.

There was only one person, King of Hell Chu!

This person was the real King of Hell Chu!

With all the other people continuing to cause injuries to his body, Kong Shang Xin did not care. He seemed to have lost all feelings; his target was only one King of Hell Chu!

I am close!

Kong Shang Xin carried a thick layer of arrows as he finally arrived in front of Chu Yang.

Ji Mo let out a roar and fiercely rushed up with his sword.

Blood poured out of all of Kong Shang Xin's orifices. The saber in his hand suddenly swung with a swoosh; sword and saber slammed into each other in the air. Ji Mo let out cry, spat out blood, and spun backward.

Shadowless Saber and sword, two saintly weapons simultaneously burst in midair!

Kong Shang Xin's speed never slowed down as he aimed straight for Chu Yang! Chu Yang eyes remained as calm as ice! He was keeping his poise as he waited! Hiding was not possible; once he tried to hide, he would lose his position. Under the given momentum, Kong Shang Xin would have been able to kill Chu Yang even if he was dying!

Chu Yang could only be ready to receive his attack!

Kong Shang Xin has reached the last of his strength; I only need to be able to meet this one attack and his life would immediately be over!

But at this time, Ji Mo suddenly yelled out and rushed up. With legs planted, he wanted to cover for Chu Yang. Twin palms shot moved and shot out!

He knew that Chu Yang had only Martial Artist cultivation. Even though Kong Shang Xin's strength was already extremely weak, Chu Yang still would not be capable of blocking his attack. In this moment, he also did not know what made him anxious and rushed up!

Kong Shang Xin ferociously rushed up, and four hands face each other. With a bam, cracking sounds rang out, Ji Mo's wrists broke. Immediately after, Kong Shang Xin moved to palm Ji Mo's chest as quick as lightning!

"Damn!" Kong Shang Xin's two eyes were filled with rage. As he was about to see great success, a Martial Great Master youth appeared! At this moment, Kong Shang Xin's hatred toward Ji Mo surpassed all else!

Ji Mo screamed and kicked out fiercely. His chest became cold; he was not able to avoid this palm from Kong Shang Xin! If Kong Shang Xin hit him with this palm, Ji Mo was sure to die!

A figure flashed, Chu Yang appeared in front of Ji Mo. With a bam, Kong Shang Xin's palm, which was meant for Ji Mo's chest,

had ferociously hit Chu Yang's chest!

At that same time, Chu Yang's left palm hit Kong Shang Xin's chest; his right hand gathered Nine Tribulations Sword and suddenly stabbed straight into Kong Shan Xin's heart! He gave it a twist!

A few cracking sounds rang out. Kong Shang Xin's strength was already spent. Together with Chu Yang, his rib bones broke. The two looked up and spat out blood without even a bit of strength left to fly backward.

"Boss!" Ji Mo screamed and his eyes became red! He desperately rushed up and he used his body to catch Chu Yang.

Chu Yang spat out a clump of blood and held down his pain as he casually said, "You could sacrifice your life for me, I... how could I let you die?"

Ji Mo was stunned!

Chu Yang's words were very faint, but he was able to hear the deep meaning in them.

You see me as a brother, and you sacrifice your life for me, then I can also ignore death for you.

Kong Shang Xin rolled away. Blood gushed out from his wound, dripping to the ground; he was motionless!

He stood arrogantly; his eyes were like swords as he looked in Chu Yang's direction! Chu Yang struggled as he grabbed Ji Mo's shoulder and stood up. From a distance his gaze met with Kong Shang Xin's.

There was a trace of loss in Kong Shang Xin's eyes. He remained standing like that as if he was using all of his strength in an effort to so. His gaze slowly moved, and he looked at the night sky.

It was the direction Yin Wu Fa had left in.

Kong Shang Xin's gaze was filled with nostalgia. He breathed out

gently, and his whole body suddenly became still and motionless!

“Don’t touch him!” Chu Yang stopped the soldiers from rushing in. He softly sighed, “He is dead!”

Yes, this lifetime King level leader, who once traversed all over the Middle Three Heavens and was an ultimate master striking terror in the Lower Three Heavens, was no longer breathing. His eyes were still wide open, and his body was still standing straight!

But, in this majestic figure, life no longer existed!

Chapter 195: Wrong and right

“Sir!” Old Sa, full of injuries, had arrived later. At that moment, he suddenly let out a roar and jumped up. But while he was in the air, hundreds of spears pierced at him almost instantaneously…

The battlefield unexpectedly fell into silence!

Looking at the entire chaotic area and all of the structures that had collapsed during the fight, everyone felt as if they had just awoken from a dream.

There was only fresh blood quietly pouring out; there was even the babbling sounds as it flowed on the ground…

“It’s finally over!” Chu Yang stood there weakly and muttered, “I cannot believe that price we have pay to surround these two King level masters would be this severe…”

In a flash, his body nearly fell to the ground. Though Kong Shang Xin’s last move was made when he was already burnt out, it still almost ended Chu Yang!

That palm, if Ji Mo was hit, would have surely been in the middle of his chest. But since Chu Yang suddenly ran up to take it, it hit Chu Yang’s right chest instead. His internal organs were shocked and a few of his ribs were broken.

The most fortunate thing was that Kong Shang Xin only had that much strength left. If that was not the case and Nine Tribulations Sword spirit did not take the initiative to attack, then Chu Yang’s life could not have been guaranteed!

“With the exception of the injured, everyone else chase and search for Yin Wu Fa who has escaped!” Chu Yang gave the order. There was a sweet taste his throat all of a sudden. He spat out blood as he crumbled.

Currently, what Chu Yang found oddest was what Tie Bu Tian was doing. Why did he not come when such a big incident

happened?... Plus, the two Shadow Guards were nowhere to be seen.

If at least one person had come, this battle would not have been so tragic.

It had finally come to an end, and Iron Cloud Citadel also returned to its original calmness.

They maintained the same vigilance in hunting down the remaining people of the Golden Horse Riders Department. In Iron Cloud Citadel, the investigations continued as before. And the investigation was also starting for the entire Iron Cloud Nation territory to the border with Great Zhao...

But Chu Yang knew that this was probably no longer effective. The chance of catching a King level master who had already escaped was too small...

Right now, Chu Yang was resting on a cushioned seat, healing from his injuries.

Ji Mo's injuries were much milder than his. Waiting in there for a little, he immediately felt uncomfortable, and Chu Yang had to get people to send him back to Heavenly Armament Pavilion.

When he left, Ji Mo did not say anything; it was as if he just followed Chu Yang on an ordinary tour. As for the injury, for a person in Jiang Hu, this was as common as another meal.

However, in his eyes, there was clearly more solemnity and thoughtfulness. He was also looking at Chu Yang with more respect than before, and his cynicism was no longer there.

All of the descendants of great clans had very shrewd minds. It could not be said that he would be totally loyal to Chu Yang just because Chu Yang saved his life this time... This was impossible!

Moreover, the reason Chu Yang had to jump up to take an injury for him was because he had rushed up to help Chu Yang earlier.

But this time, Chu Yang had sown the seed of “brotherhood” into his mind!

What were brothers?

In blood-soaked battles, you still would help each other. For your brothers, you would fight to your last drop of blood. Kong Shang Xin and Yin Wu Fa were the perfect example of the word brotherhood.

Kong Shang Xin was an infamous thief, and Yin Wu Fa was a vicious assassin known far and wide. Plus, there was another thing: They were both enemies! And they had caused a lot of damage to the army.

But their notorious reputation and their standings as enemies could not cover up the brotherly love between the two of them when they were at the edge of life and death!

While they hated these two to the bones, who in this life did not admired the brotherly love between the two?

This was what brothers were!

When Ji Mo pensively returned, the sky was almost bright.

Chu Yang quietly lay in Bu Tian Pavilion thinking about Kong Shang Xin’s last action. That saber light was as brilliant as the sunlight; King level golden aura blew up in the air... then he looked in the direct his martial brother had escaped in with such deep sincerity...

Thinking for a while, Chu Yang sighed: Brothers like that are worthy of being brothers!

If Yin Wu Fa was able to have a brother like that in this lifetime, whether he would live or die, he had no regrets!

Chu Yang broke three ribs, and each breath caused agonizing pain. But this pain reminded of him of Kong Shang Xin’s demeanor at the time. Because of that, he sighed again...

It could be said that Kong Shang Xin died by Chu Yang's hand at that time; with the tip of Nine Tribulations Sword, Chu Yang pierced right to the heart and killed him!

With killing Kong Shang Xin, Chu Yang had no regrets. Being able to witness the enemies' brotherly love, Chu Yang was touched. But... enemies would always be enemies... Minister Chu could not help but sigh.

Chu Yang's lamenting made Wu Qian Qian, who was standing next to him, hurt no less. She softly counseled, "You are already severely injured; what are you sighing for? Just recuperate well; even with things as great as the heavens, you should wait until after you are healed to worry about it."

After hearing her words, Chu Yang softly sighed and asked, "Are there any recent news from the sect?"

"No." Wu Qian Qian's countenance was a bit sad as she said with her head down, "It has been a very long time since I receive any news from my father."

"Ah..." Chu Yang looked down and let out a sigh of relief. Looking dreamily outside the window, he said softly, "Each time I get injured, I really miss my master..."

Wu Qian Qian's hands trembled. Her heart beat erratically, and she stood stunned for a moment. Her gaze on Chu Yang suddenly became infinitely gentle, and she said softly, "Me, too! Each time I am injured or sick, I only want to stay in my mother's arms and enjoy being a baby... this is only human."

Wu Qian Qian suddenly felt that, at this moment, Chu Yang was acting like his age, a junior martial brother who was injured, weak and emotional...

Currently, she could clearly perceive that Chu Yang was very lonely like an injured person without any loved ones near, who had to deal with it themselves and take care of themselves.

However, she did not know that the injuries Chu Yang was talking about were from the previous life. In the previous life, Chu Yang was by himself. Each time he was injured he wrapped himself up in some corner and healed on his own as he reminisced about his youth when Meng Chao Ran would take care of him whenever he was injured or sick.

Each time he remembered these incidents, his heart became extremely sad...

“Haha” Chu Yang chuckled and said, “But I don’t act like a baby.”

Wu Qian Qian charmingly glanced at him and said, “You are a man; if you act like a baby, people will laugh at you.” As she said this, she brought over a bowl of medicine that had been cooled down somewhat and tasted it with a spoon. Then she gently sat down next to his bed and said, “Come on, take your medicine. Open your mouth... be good.”

Wu Qian Qian’s tone was coaxing as if she was dealing with a child. Chu Yang felt emotional and did not know whether to laugh or cry.

“It will be a while before Senior Du comes here. It seems like there is a problem in the royal palace.” Wu Qian Qian said.

“It’s just a little injury. What are you bothering Senior Du for?” There was a faint flash in Chu Yang’s eyes.

At this very moment.

“Minister, the prince has arrived!” Chen Yu Tong came in and reported.

Before his words ended, Tie Bu Tian had already walked in. His countenance was calm and cold as always, but the depth of his eyes was filled with exhaustion.

“Minister Chu, I am truly sorry. I have come too late!” Tie Bu Tian stood in front of Chu Yang’s bed; his first words were his apology.

This surprised Wu Qian Qian greatly. He was the prince of a country and his first words were an apology…

“There is nothing to be sorry about!” Chu Yang casually said, “I am sure Your Majesty knows how many people died in this battle?”

“I am truly sorry. I have been most anxious. Last night, there was sudden news from the palace that Father’s condition had taken a bad turn. Senior Du said that it might be that very night… Therefore, I hastily went there. The two Shadow uncles who protect me also had to use all of their strength to stabilize Father’s energy… It was not until early this morning that I found out such big incident has happened in the citadel, and Minister Chu has succeeded with such a great operation…”

There was a touch of guilt in Tie Bu Tian’s tone.

He also knew that if he had worked with Chu Yang from the start, the casualties of this big battle would have been reduced by half or perhaps even more!

However, given the concerns and the chaotic state of mind, Tie Bu Tian still went into the royal palace even though he knew Chu Yang was make a big move last night.

“Ah…” Chu Yang sighed. Tie Bu Tian’s apologetic attitude was extremely sincere so Chu Yang did not know what else to say. Plus, this could not really be blamed on Tie Bu Tian. His father was seriously ill; he could not just ignore that…

Moreover, Tie Bu Tian went into the royal palace before Chu Yang had made all of his arrangements. This made it more difficult to blame him.

“Minister! The aftermath of the battle has been tallied…” Chen Yu Tong came in once again with a heavy heart.

“Umm, how is it?” Chu Yang asked.

“The number of soldiers who lost their lives in battle is three thousand three hundred seventy people! The number of injured is

nine hundred sixty-three." Chen Yu Tong said, "These are the military's loss. On Bu Tian Pavilion's side, the number of people who died in battle is seventy-seven people, and the number of injured is thirty-five people. As for the justice department, one hundred sixty people lost their lives, and ninety-four people are injured..."

"Bu Tian Pavilion's Hall Leader Cheng is also severely injured; the Minister is as well." Chen Yu Tong immediately sighed right after he was done talking.

Sitting on the side, Tie Bu Tian gasped!

"Eight people! A total of eight enemies! Among them, four people died from arrows. This casualty was mainly caused by the hands of the four remaining people. And among these four, three were very aggressive. Each one of them took the lives of more than a thousand of our people." Chu Yang said faintly, "This is the enemy's strength."

Tie Bu Tian's face suddenly reddened.

There were powerful martial experts on his side as well, but he had brought them into the royal palace! If these two martial experts were to join in the fight, then the casualty number would definitely change!

In fact, it might not even exist!

But it was not so!

Chu Yang did not say anything else, but Tie Bu Tian could hear Chu Yang's meaning in his voice: Your father is a father, but how many fathers do these more than four thousand people have? How many are fathers, themselves?

Tie Bu Tian was stunned for a while. Then, with a guilty face, he said slowly, "I... have no nothing to say."

Chapter 196: Tormenting Tie Bu Tian

Chu Yang closed his eyes in exhaustion and said faintly, “Hall Leader Chen, you can go first. Qian Qian, you should also go outside.”

The two looked worriedly at Chu Yang and finally left. They knew that Chu Yang wanted to talk with Tie Bu Tian alone. Plus, this conversation would probably not be a happy one!

Looking at the two people leaving, Chu Yang remained quiet for a long time without saying a word.

“I am listening.” Tie Bu Tian said sincerely.

“In truth, I did not want to say anything, but after thinking about it for a while, it has to be said.” Chu Yang’s tone was somewhat sharp, “In my opinion, your father is dying. You are the prince, you should definitely stay next to the emperor and take care of him.”

“In fact, under the watchful eyes of all the officials, the life and death of the emperor has great implications on the future of Iron Cloud Nation. Therefore, you must stay there. Even more so, you must try to heal the emperor with the greatest effort!”

“It is what you must do. As a son, such a decision cannot be faulted!” Chu Yang said quietly, “But you must never forget, you are also a ruler!”

“These aforementioned reasons are all well and good and can make people understand. But it is not acceptable with the military!” Chu Yang said gravely.

Tie Bu Tian looked up wanting to say something, but Chu Yang did not give him the chance to speak and quickly said, “Orders are what is important in the military! Soldiers in the military are not to be concerned with their parents being on their last breath. If there is an order, they must leave immediately and rush into the

battlefield! If they are even a moment late, their heads would fall to the ground!”

“Military laws are merciless! Military laws do not take in reasons; even if their fathers or mothers are severely ill, they can only follow orders!” Chu Yang said casually, “Last night was the same; I gave out the order and nearly four thousand people threw their lives down right here.”

“Let me ask Your Majesty, how can you compensate them?” Chu Yang asked sharply, “What compensation will be enough for the pain of a mother losing a son or a wife losing a husband?”

“Wars are merciless, and sacrificing your life in the battlefield is inevitable! Over these past years, millions of men died in battle; that’s nothing out of the ordinary! These are necessary sacrifices!” Chu Yang said, “But when the sacrifices are not necessary, when sacrifices could be avoided, regrets or compensations will not suffice!”

Tie Bu Tian silently listened to Chu Yang speak. He knew that Chu Yang was a little emotional today. So he did not say anything...

“Minister Chu, aren’t you going overboard with your words?” A Shadow Guard appeared and said icily.

“I am not Tie Bu Tian’s subordinate!” Chu Yang also said icily, “I came to help, and countless people have placed their hopes on us to protect the Tie family’s territory! If even Tie Bu Tian, himself, does not care, then we certainly don’t need to care!”

Chu Yang narrowed his eyes and coldly looked at that Shadow Guard, “If my words are difficult to hear, then His Majesty does not have to hear them! He also can choose to banish me from here!”

Tie Bu Tian let out a sigh and waved his hand signaling the Shadow Guard to stop talking, “Minister Chu should rest and

recuperate today; about today's incident, I... have done wrong! In a few days, I will come back and properly apologize to Minister Chu!"

Then he immediately stood up and said, "Rest well, Minister Chu."

When he reached the door, Chu Yang said coldly, "All the soldiers who died in battle, their bodies are still warm! All the remaining people from Golden Horse Riders Department still have not paid for their sins! Your Majesty, do not let the hearts of your soldiers grow cold!"

Tie Bu Tian paused in front of the door. He wanted to say something, but did not in the end; he only sighed and walked out.

Chu Yang heavily lay back in bed and closed his eyes as he thought over the entire situation.

With what happened today, Chu Yang was a little impulsive. He also wanted to control himself, but the moment he saw Tie Bu Tian, he suddenly decided to let go of all restraints!

Tie Bu Tian was a ruler.

But such mistakes, a ruler absolutely cannot make them!

Of course he had his reasons, but there were times when such reasons could not be accepted by the masses! If later, when things become worse, and Tie Bu Tian continued to maintain this filial heart, there was a possibility that he would put Iron Cloud into a state of unprecedented chaos!

It was because Tie Shi Cheng was not going to live much longer!

Whether Tie Bu Tian was willing or not, he must start to gradually learn to accept this!

Using an extreme way to force a devoted son to become a qualified leader was cold-hearted, but Chu Yang did not have another choice.

Because if Tie Bu Tian did not change his mentality, there was not even a little bit of hope that Chu Yang would win this battle against Diwu Qing Rou!

“Send people to guard the royal palace; the moment Senior Du has free time, immediately invite him to come here!” Chu Yang coldly ordered, “Plus, Qian Qian, go to Heavenly Armament Pavilion straightaway and invite Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang here.”

Chu Yang wanted to prescribe a strong medication! And now was the best opportunity.

An hour later, Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang appeared in front of Chu Yang.

“How is your injury?” Gu Du Xing asked with concern.

“Still can’t die yet.” Chu Yang smiled, then his face immediately became serious, “Du Xing, Wu Shang, there is one thing that I have been wanting to do for a while now. But it seems that I have to deal with it right away! I need you two to help me with this.”

“What is it? Just tell us!” The two of them were very straightforward. They were currently so idle that their bones were starting to itch.

After Ji Mo went back with his injury, he blew everything out of proportion. When everyone heard that he went with Chu Yang to engage in such a big mission, they were extremely envious of him and hated the fact that they were not able to contribute to that battle.

“I need you two to help me kill a few people!” Chu Yang’s eyes shined icily as he said slowly, “Now is the best opportunity!”

Chu Yang had always had suspicions as to why Tie Shi Cheng’s condition had remained the same for so long without improving or worsening but took a bad turn at such a key moment. Plus, it got to a point where two King level experts were needed to maintain his

life with their full strength.

This... was too much of a coincidence!

If someone said that Du Shi Qing was not involved in this, Chu Yang would not believe them even if they beat him to death.

However, this would take time. Du Shi Qing could not have taken such precise action hastily.

According to his calculations, it was a little while after Kong Shang Xin got injured that the Hei Mo people pulled out from Iron Cloud Citadel, and that was when he started to search the entire citadel.

It was when the entire citadel was searched or when the Golden Horse Riders Department perpetrators in Iron Cloud Citadel discovered the great danger they were in that they made a move on Tie Shi Cheng in order to shift Iron Cloud's attention from themselves.

At the least, with Tie Shi Cheng's condition, they were able to completely contain Tie Bu Tian and the two martial experts by his side! Therefore, the two greatest threats against the already injured Kong Shang Xin and Yin Wu Fa were undoubtedly removed...

It was because of this that Chu Yang was not happy with Tie Bu Tian remaining in the royal palace for so long. With Tie Bu Tian's intelligence and wisdom, he would not have fallen into the enemy's traps so easily. But he essentially did not bother to think and immediately went into the royal palace!

From this, Chu Yang discovered Tie Bu Tian's greatest weakness. While Tie Bu Tian was brilliant and did things with great decisiveness, there was one thing that made Chu Yang a little uncomfortable: He was too emotional!

Emotions... these kind of things were cute in women, but in a man, especially one that was a prince of a nation and a future

ruler, it truly made people uncomfortable...

If someone wants to influence Du Shi Qing... what would they do?

Given Du Shi Qing's character, he would never do this. He would also not contact Diwu Qing Rou; this much, Chu Yang was certain. Du Shi Qing's hatred for Diwu Qing Rou could not be faked; then it must have been the people next to him.

"The people I want you to kill are..." Chu Yang said sternly, "You must never let your identity get exposed."

"Don't worry! This is too simple!" Dong Wu Shang laughed; his face was showing some expectation.

Gu Du Xing gently nodded; his eyes suddenly showed a sharp killing aura.

*****

Cheng Yun He stood in front of a window feeling a chill throughout his body!

Last night, after he finished all the arrangements, he immediately left. But after only two hours, there was a large-scale battle there. The sounds of fighting were so fierce that he could hear them clearly from a few miles out!

But at that time, he could do nothing! He could only control the urge to send support and silently wait.

Kong Shang Xin's shocking statement, don't let me die with regrets, seemed to have completely awoken everyone in Iron Cloud Citadel from their deep slumber!

At that moment, Cheng Yun He could feel that Kong Shang Xin was finished!

Not long after, Yin Wu Fa suddenly rushed in with a body full of injuries like a broken old sack. He only spoke a few trembling words and sank into a deep coma!

“Go… save my second brother!”

Cheng Yun He went through a tremendous change at that moment; he lost control!

He hastily arranged for people to send Yin Wu Fa away and erased all evidence. He knew that the military would come to search there soon. Sure enough, a little while later, teams of investigators came. They searched every corner; they even opened up comforters…

By the time everything calmed down, it was already morning.

Yin Wu Fa’s injuries were extremely serious. He was in danger of dying anytime. Since he already used Jade Spirit Ginseng once; it would have no effect if he used it again. Cheng Yun He could only give him Meng Hun Solution and quickly arranged for a getaway!

Meng Hun Solution could keep him alive for a month. If Yin Wu Fa could not return to Great Zhao within a month, he would surely die.

But Iron Cloud Citadel was in a heightened state of alert. The situation was volatile and all four gates were closed for the spy hunt; how could he get out?

Cheng Yun He was frowning each day because of this. He reached out to numerous officials and used the excuse of doing business to get out of the citadel, but they all apologized that they could not help.

Cheng Yun He thought for a long time, but could not find a secure escape plan.

In fact, since that day, he did not even dare use the invisible falcons. Because there were always people watching the sky day and night, and invisible falcons had to fly for a little bit before reaching the sky, the closely watching guards would probably discover them!

Once they were discovered, it would be a total catastrophe!

Without any means for contact, Cheng Yun He was walking on pins and needles.

If Prime Minister Diwu Qing Rou knew about what had developed during this time, what kind of reaction would he have?

Chapter 197: Unexpected robbing and killing

Of the thirty-six martial masters from Golden Horse Riders Department that went to Iron Cloud, twenty-six were now dead! Three Command Horse Riders were all killed. As for the two King level leaders, one was killed, and the other one, if he could not escape… his life would be in jeopardy as well…

This was the biggest loss in the history of Golden Horse Riders Department's existence! Having a King level leader die while out on a mission was even more impossible. Cheng Yun He could imagine the crazy reaction that Golden Horse Riders Department would have once they heard of this news…

Thinking about his own situation, Cheng Yun He felt immensely helpless. He had come to Iron Cloud Citadel with an important task, but, since he got here, he immediately fell into this bad situation without getting anything done!

From the first day he came here until now, he was pushed into a quagmire by Kong Shang Xin's unwarranted actions. At this point, he had sank deeper and deeper without any means of pulling out.

He frowned and walked leisurely as he muttered, "Perhaps, I have to… take a risk?"

*****

Afternoon came, and Du Shi Qing arrived. Iron Cloud Citadel was currently in chaos so Du Shi Qing would naturally come with bodyguards.

Fire Saber Great Master Gao Wei Cheng and four guards were blocked at the front of Bu Tian Pavilion; they were politely led to a hall for tea.

Seeing the situation, Gao Wei Cheng said angrily, "We are acquainted with your Minister Chu; why did he use us to climb to a

high position here at Iron Cloud Citadel and immediately forget all about us? This is the action of a petty person." (TLN: I think I just found a good word for "small person.")

Gao Wei Cheng's words made everyone at Bu Tian Pavilion glare at him angrily. The gazes were especially aflame for those who were wearing bandages; they hated the fact that they could not chop this thin, feces-spraying mouthed man into pieces.

"Sir, regardless of who you are, if you say one more bad word about the Minister here, we cannot guarantee that you will walk out alive!" Chen Yu Tong said solemnly.

Gao Wei Cheng snorted with a face full of condescension but did not say another word.

At this time, Chu Yang and Du Shi Qing were sitting opposite each other in another room.

"Senior Du, I want to know, what weakness do you have that Diwu Qing Rou has a hold over you?" Chu Yang slowly asked a long time after watching Du Shi Qing patched him up.

"Weakness..." Du Shi Qing's hands trembled.

"Exactly. I found it strange that given your character, you would allow Diwu Qing Rou to bully you..." Chu Yang said casually, "Especially last night, His Majesty's condition changed at such a time; this left me even more confounded..."

"Ah..." Du Shi Qing looked up at the heavens and let out a sigh. He remained solemn for a long time and finally said, "My mother, wife, and child are all at Golden Horse Riders Department... My mother is almost eighty this year... The most infuriating thing is my only son, who is twenty-three this year, has been brainwashed and has joined the ranks of Golden Horse Riders Department! He is a Silver Horse Rider! And my daughter-in-law... is also a Silver Horse Rider of Golden Horse Riders Department..."

"My life, my family have all fell into ruin..." Du Shi Qing sighed

loudly and said with frustration, “What ability do I have? Who lives their life for the rest of the world? They are just a small minority; the rest live for their parents and their families... Other people might not need this, but I, Du Shi Qing... cannot be like them.”

Chu Yang quietly sighed.

Du Shi Qing was definitely stuck with no way out! If it was a simple matter of his family being taken hostage, it would be easier to solve. They would only need to send a few martial experts to secretly rescue his family. While this was still difficult, it was not impossible.

However, the issue was his son and his daughter-in-law were loyal to Golden Horse Riders Department... This was the root of the challenge. Even if he was able to rescue them, it would be no different from rescuing two spies...

“If you don’t betray him, but disappear instead... how would that be?” Chu Yang asked cautiously.

“If that is the case, they would be safe...” Du Shi Qing laughed, “But how do I disappear? This is an issue worth some considerations... How could Diwu Qing Rou be easily fooled?”

“We don’t necessarily don’t have a way.” Chu Yang gently knocked on the edge of his bed and said casually, “What position does Fire Saber Great Master Gao Wei Cheng have in Golden Horse Riders Department?”

Chu Yang’s remarks were certain!

Du Shi Qing smiled a bitter smile and said, “Sure enough, it cannot be hidden from your eyes! Gao Wei Cheng is also a Golden Horse Rider. But this person comes and goes as he pleases. Plus, while his martial arts skill is not exceptional, his ability to control fire is nothing to look down upon. Even more so, it seems that Gao Wei Cheng comes from some mysterious place with a massive force

backing him... I only know this much."

"Maybe not! Mysterious place?..." Chu Yang sneered and said, "If Gao Wei Cheng really comes from there, his status is probably very low. How can people from there be so weak? Plus, if they do come out from there, there would be a lot of support; how could he be by himself?"

"Do you know about that place?" Du Shi Qing asked.

Chu Yang solemnly nodded and said, "All of Golden Horse Riders Department's missions are told to you by Gao Wei Sheng? How about the other four guards..."

"I am not certain." Du Shi Qing smiled wryly, "I know what you want to do, but you need to be careful. The forces behind Gao Wei Cheng... you are currently not their opponent."

"If we remain careful and timid like that, it would be best if we do nothing." Chu Yang said lightly, "If we do something, even when the sky collapses, we must push it back up!"

"Nothing is impossible!" Chu Yang said.

Du Shi Qing let out a deep sigh.

On the way back, Du Shi Qing sat on the carriage with a worried frown. Thinking back to Chu Yang's words, he was a little apprehensive.

He was not just worried about himself but about Chu Yang as well. If everything turned out successful, there was nothing to worry about. But the issue was Chu Yang's plan... would it be successful? Could it... get Chu Yang implicated as well?

Moreover, Chu Yang said something that gave Du Shi Qing the chills.

"Senior Du, if you don't treat His Majesty's condition... How many more days can he hang on?"

"This... I am not certain. At best, it will probably be ten days."

“Ten days?” Chu Yang mused, “…That should be enough?”

What was it that Chu Yang wanted to do?

“Senior Du, this Chu Yang is something; who does he think he is? He is simply unforgivable!” Gao Wei Cheng drove the horses and carriage along while fuming with anger, “In the beginning, he was so downtrodden; he came to you in the name of repaying a debt but used you to get fame and advance himself in Iron Cloud Nation.”

“At the time, he even righteously said he would never join the ranks of the officials; hah! Thinking about it now, this is such a joke.” Gao Wei Cheng’s saliva scattered everywhere.

“You don’t need to say anymore.” Du Shi Qing closed his eyes and said faintly.

“Hmm, this bastard, sooner or later…” Sooner or later what, Gao Wei Cheng did not say. He only rushed the horses and did not bother speaking about this again.

Success was close at hand!

The road opened up, and there were soldiers on patrol in all directions. This should have been the safest place…

“Senior Du, please go see a sick person for a little bit.” A voice softly rang out. It sounded very elegant and polite.

“Who is it?” Gao Wei Cheng turned and asked. These past few days, Du Shi Qing had seen too many sick people. Over time, Gao Wei Cheng had grown used to this.

“It’s me.” The voice faintly responded, “Senior Du still has not said anything yet, what right does a carriage driver like you have to call out?”

Gao Wei Cheng yelled angrily, “You should be more gracious if you’re asking to see a doctor; what kind of attitude is this?” Then he jumped off from the carriage and looked around furiously.

That voice said, “What is graciousness? I still have not learned it.

But when it comes to people who don't listen… killing them, I have learned."

Before those words ended, a black saber flashed and became a bolt of lightning in the air as it aimed straight for Gao Wei Cheng. The moment the saber flashed, a black shadow suddenly appeared.

And yet another black shadow appeared, and a sword rushed forth from behind the carriage. With a swoosh, the sword hit the four guards in the throats; they flew out in four directions. Immediately after, this person rushed into the carriage; this person's voice could be faintly heard, "Senior Du, saving a life is as urgent as putting out a fire; please come with me."

Then, boom, the carriage shattered, and a masked man in black flew out of the carriage with Du Shi Qing in one hand. Then the two legs of this person pushed and they flew away like some large birds. Then, they pushed on the roof of a nearby house and disappeared without a trace!

At this time, Gao Wei Cheng had become breathless from fighting with the other person in black. If he had not furiously emitted fire, his head would have fallen to the ground already…

Seeing that Du Shi Qing had been taken away, Gao Wei Cheng was extremely alarmed. He flew up wanting to stop them, but that person in black's saber techniques were extremely agile. His body essentially never touched the ground. This made Gao Wei Cheng really annoyed; he could barely pull out his arms and could only watch as Du Shi Qing was taken away.

"People… Senior Du has been captured!" Under such urgency, Gao Wei Cheng did not worry about his dignity and continued to scream out.

"Is this really a Saber Great Master?" That person in black sneered, "He really makes all Saber Great Masters lose face!" Of course, this person in black was also a Saber Great Master.

Gao Wei Cheng's cry rang out far and soldiers gathered from all directions.

"I originally wanted to play with you a little, but I can't believe you don't even need your own dignity. In that case, you should not bother with keeping your life." That person in black suddenly yelled out. He pulled away his saber, and, within moments, the saber seemed to have pulled with it all the air in the atmosphere, turning it into a vacuum!

Then the saber flashed in the night and slashed right for his head!

There was nothing pretty about this move, but it carried an awe-inspiring momentum and made people feel as if it could break a large mountain! Plus, there was no hesitation; no matter what was in front of it, it would cut and split that in two without a pause!

Gao Wei Cheng could only feel the saber fiercely locking on to him. At the moment, even making a move with his saber was difficult. Just as he was so terrified his soul practically left his body, he let out sudden roar. The saber in his hands along with the five openings on his face unexpectedly shot out raging fire!

At this moment, Gao Wei Cheng had turned into a fire person!

Chapter 198: King of Hell Chu roars

“So this is the Fire Saber Great Master!” The person in black snorted. The momentum of his saber remained unchanged. With a swoosh, it directly greeted the fire which it divided in two! Then, that very saber slash went right to the ground!

Using the rebound from the tip, that person in black did a somersault and shot into the sky.

At this time, the first batch of arrows rushed forth like a cascade of water.

The person in black did not let out a single sound as his saber danced in the air. His body quickly changed direction and paused at the edge of the wall to avoid the arrows that filled the sky. Without turning back, his body suddenly flashed and he was gone without a trace!

Gao Wei Cheng maintained his vigilant position with saber in hand. His fierce, forward gaze slowly dissipated, but he remained deaf to questions from those running toward him; he was nonreactive.

Right away, a trail of blood ran down from his forehead. The blood slowly diffused then it splattered out as Gao Wei Cheng’s body unexpectedly and slowly split into two halves. It was like a watermelon that had been chopped in two as it plopped to the ground.

His entire body was extremely evenly split; from head to toe, two parts of the same body formed the word one! (TLN: 一)

Organs were splayed out on the ground.

In all four directions, terrified voices were heard. Numerous soldiers were scared to the point that their blades fell to the ground. After that, groups of people turned away and retched...

All of Du Shi Qing’s bodyguards were dead; Fire Saber Great

Master Gao Wei Cheng died in battle and saintly doctor Du Shi Qing had disappeared!

In addition, the most infuriating thing was that this happened right in front of Iron Cloud royal palace's door. In fact, the distance was less than a thousand feet!

Such an incident truly caused a disturbance in all of Iron Cloud Citadel.

It was a total explosion of chaos!

Tie Bu Tian lost his composure and flew into a rage as he gave orders for the entire citadel to investigate!

King of Hell Chu lost his peace and flew into a rage as he commanded that even if they had to search a mouse's hole, they had to find saintly doctor Du!

All of the officials in Iron Cloud Citadel flew into a rage, and spontaneously organized for their guards to search!

Tie Long Cheng, who was at the battlefront, also flew into a rage; he commanded the military to put every effort into the investigation!

For the moment, Iron Cloud Citadel was in shock, as if the sky had fallen and the ground had split open.

They were just done surrounding King level masters with great casualties. Iron Cloud Citadels was currently in chaos of indescribable proportions...

Among all the people, the most frantic person was none other than King of Hell Chu, Minister Chu.

During the mobilization of Bu Tian Pavilion, King of Hell Chu's eyes were red under his mask as he fiercely glared at more than two hundred subordinates below. He grinded his teeth as he spoke each word, "Senior Du, Du Shi Qing, is a saintly doctor and he had done many good deeds by me."

“This time, I don’t care who took Senior Du, I must make him pay an astronomical price! I want these gutsy brigands to know that there are some things you cannot do! And there are people that you cannot mess with!”

“Right now, the most suspicious suspects are the remnants of Golden Horse Riders Department in the citadel! These bastards are probably doing outrageous things because they are cornered.”

“Right now, my commands!”

“Cheng Zi Ang!” Minister Chu let out a roar that shocked the entire Bu Tian Pavilion; dust rained down from the ceiling.

“I am here!” Still not healed from his injuries, Hall Leader Cheng took a step forward.

“I order!” King of Hell Chu’s eyes flashed with hysteria and rage that could not be hidden. Everyone who saw this could not help but shudder a few times. “Fierce Blood Hall will cease all activities, and everyone will be mobilized! If you cannot find Senior Du… Cheng Zi Ang! Think about the consequences on your own!”

“Yes!” Cheng Zi Ang’s haggard face secreted cold sweat the size of beans.

“Chen Yu Tong!” Minister Chu once again let out another roar, and the great hall once again shook three times.

“I command! Heavenly Secrets Hall will temporarily halt everything and mobilize all forces. All of the spy network will be mobilized as well! All of the connections, all of the exploitations, all of the f*ing what… all of that… all of everything…” King of Hell Chu emotionally slammed on the table, “Do you understand?”

“I…” Chen Yu Tong was on the verge on becoming unconscious. The great hall leader really wanted to ask: Minister, all of what… what is it?

However, Hall Leader Chen was not that gutsy. With his legs in attention and his body erect, he replied with an imposing air,

“Minister! I completely understand!”

“Good! If you can’t get it done, you will have to think about the consequences yourself.” Minister Chu pointed with his right hand, “Act now!”

“Understood!” Chen Yu Tong’s countenance was firm, and his steps were also strong as he walked out the door. He thought to himself: When the Minister has cooled down later, I will have to go in one more time to ask his what is what…

Otherwise, he already clearly said that… if I am not successful, then I would be…

“Send out my orders!” From the great hall, King of Hell Chu’s voice rang out like thunder, “All the imperial guards in the citadel, all the garrisons in the citadel, all the public security offices in the citadel, all the offices in the citadel, all of the justice department in the citadel, all of the citadel… mobilize! Even if these bastards have turned into bedbugs, they must be dug out and chopped into pieces!”

This murderous aura… this air…

Chen Yu Tong wiped the sweat off his face and quickly stepped out: Better to avoid him for now…

Tie Bu Tian was on his way to Bu Tian Pavilion.

Tie Bu Tian’s intuition told him that Chu Yang was involved in this. But he could not sense anything else…

The moment he arrived at Bu Tian Pavilion’s door, he was just in time to see a bunch of fearful people wiping their sweat. They filed out from inside with pale and sweaty faces.

“What happened?” The prince asked.

Before he was done speaking, he heard a roaring voice from within. With a swoosh, a broken table flew out and shattered into pieces in the yard.

There was immediately an angry voice yelling, “Jerks! Bastards! This is really a joke for the world. The saintly doctor was kidnapped right in front of the royal palace! What did you all eat? This country feeds you into fat pigs. Motherf*, you can only take money and ignore everything else?! This Iron Cloud needs to be cleaned up! It must be repaired!”

Everyone was standing neatly in shock!

He still wants to do more cleansing? Do you want to kill everyone...

“It seems that Bu Tian Pavilion needs to be cleansed and straightened out. Not one by one! Crush it all!” King of Hell Chu’s angry voice did not cease to ring out; it was accompanied by the thunderous sounds of things being smashed.

Everyone trembled and hastily ran out...

Cleansing the royal court, if it was not too serious, then it was only imprisonment. But cleansing Bu Tian Pavilion... the only path was death! They had to quickly get to work...

“What! Motherf*!” King of Hell Chu continued to scold loudly.

Tie Bu Tian calmly listened for a while and finally walked in.

“Minister, please calm down for a moment!”

“Bullsh*t! Given this infuriation, how can I calm down?! I am so angry I could die... Ah, Your Majesty?” Minister Chu was yelling angrily before discovering that the person he was yelling at was the prince. He was temporarily at a loss of words from embarrassment.

Tie Bu Tian quietly stood and looked at Chu Yang for a long time. Then he said slowly, “Minister, what do you think about the disappearance of saintly doctor Du?”

“I am furious!” Chu Yang said, “For such a thing to happen at the most important place in Iron Cloud Citadel is truly alarming.” Chu Yang’s tone was grave.

“Ah, unless Senior Du is found, I am afraid there is no hope for Father’s condition.” Tie Bu Tian’s voice was controlled with the greatest of efforts, but grief and helplessness could still clearly be heard.

Chu Yang sighed and immediately looked up. He looked straight at Tie Bu Tian and said, “I am very angry with Senior Du’s disappearance. But concerning the emperor’s condition, I ask for your forgiveness because I have a different view.”

Tie Bu Tian remained quiet as he looked into Chu Yang’s eyes without even blinking; then he asked, “What kind of view?”

“These past few days, Senior Du has come here, and I have talked to him about the emperor’s condition.” Chu Yang sighed, “Senior Du has said that the emperor is currently near the end of his life. Each one of his breaths is torture! And Senior Du essentially has no way to treat the emperor any more. He could only try his best to stimulate pain in the emperor, and use this pain to keep him breathing and conscious…”

Chu Yang said casually, “Senior Du has once said that there were many times during the emperor’s lucid state when he would plead with Senior Du to stop treating him and let him die quickly instead! At this stage, living on is the greatest torture in the world! If you are keeping the emperor alive at this point, you are not being filial. You are keeping him in a most torturous state!”

“Don’t say anymore!” Tie Bu Tian suddenly closed his eyes and let out a sharp scream.

His chest palpitated, and, after a long time, two streams of tears ran down from the corners of his eyes. They rolled down his cheeks and dripped to the ground, but he never bothered to wipe them away.

“What you are saying, how could I not know? Each time I witnessed Father struggling in pain, how could I feel comfortable?” Tie Bu Tian muttered, “How could I not know that

my father would rather die than live? How could I not know that Father wants his life to end right away?"

"Father was a great hero! But, right now, he does not even have the strength to end his own life! For a hero, how tragic is this?" Tie Bu Tian brutally wiped the tears on his face; he suddenly said loudly, "But have you people ever thought about me?!"

"What should I do? I might be a prince, but I have no friends! My first duty is as my father's son; being a prince comes second. As long as Father still has breath, I still have a father! I would not be an orphan!" Tie Bu Tian choked, "How could I not know that each day Father lives is another day of torture? But I continue to dream and hope that there would be a chance... or... a miracle would appear... or Senior Du would figure out some way... or someone would suddenly appear with some heavenly treasure capable of helping Father recover overnight..."

Chapter 199: The Emperor's summon

"You are not me! You don't know how I feel!" Tie Bu Tian gritted his teeth and said, "While it is torturous, as long as he is still breathing, there is hope! This hope is slim and even ridiculous, but it exists! I also feel that each day is filled with hope!"

"Seventeen thousand years ago, when things were still primitive and barbaric, in the first generation or Shen Yu Empire, the emperor's life was threatened by an illness. All of the saintly doctors said that he could not be saved. But a mysterious person appeared at the last minute with a Nine Tribulations Pill. It led to the immediate recovery of that emperor! It was said that that emperor's condition was even more severe than that of my father." Tie Bu Tian reached out his hand and grabbed Chu Yang's shirt's hem. He said painfully, "He was an emperor; my father is also an emperor! But why isn't anyone giving my father Nine Tribulations Pill? Why?"

"Nine Tribulations Pill?" Chu Yang felt as if his mind was hit hard with a big sledge hammer!

"Yes! Nine Tribulations Pill! The truth behind this has been buried by history, and no one will ever dare to say that the skim records in the ancient books of the royal family are infallible because they are written by the royal family." Tie Bu Tian looked up at the heavens and said angrily, "Why is there nothing when it is my father's turn?"

Chu Yang did not say anything!

He could not believe that there was such a story!

Nine Tribulations Pills had appeared seventeen thousand years ago. Then it could be said that seventeen thousand years ago there was once a Nine Tribulations Sword master! Because Nine Tribulations Pill could only be obtained by a Nine Tribulations Sword master.

“Everyone knows that Father is better off dead than alive. However, even if they don’t look from the aspect of human emotion, from the political aspect, if Father dies… Would I still look like a human being? Would anyone want to fight for Iron Cloud? Because Iron Cloud has a cold-blooded prince, would anyone voluntarily fight for him? If a person could not even take good care of his own father, does he still have a conscience? Would he still be worthy of others risking their lives for him?”

“I don’t want to think about this; this is too cruel, but I cannot avoid thinking about it! Do you think that I, Tie Bu Tian, want to be the prince? Do you believe that I truly want the emperor position? Do you believe that… I really do not pay any mind to the people or the lives of the soldiers?” Tie Bu Tian angrily stared at Chu Yang, “You come an uncultivated background; how much of this politics do you understand?”

“You only know of what should be and what should not be! But do you know that between what should and should not be there is a blurred gap?” Tie Bu Tian roared, “What you all see are well-drawn out, but when it comes to me, it is wrong! As a ruler, six hundred million people are watching me and what I do wrong.”

“I also want to not take care of anything and just fall into a deep sleep; but I cannot do so! I also want to go to work when the sun rises and rest when the sun sets. Do you know that that life of a peasant is what I dream of every night? But I will never live it. Even if Iron Cloud Nation is destroyed, I still cannot have this! Do you understand?”

Tie Bu Tian said solemnly, “I am very tired. Each day, I am so tired that I want to die. But have you ever thought with my father still lying there, still watching me, watching… his child working hard for Iron Cloud Nation, I will not feel tired! Do you understand such feelings?”

“If Father dies… a minor thing would be that I lost my father. But the major thing would be the effect on the lives of six hundred

million people within the thirteen hundred miles of Iron Cloud territory!”

Tie Bu Tian’s voice slowly grew low, “And right now, the disappearance of saintly doctor Du has taken away all hope for Father!”

“I also do not want saintly doctor Du to go missing or your father to suffer an unfortunate incident.” Chu Yang said slowly, “But there is one thing. You are a prince ruling an entire nation. Even if it is cruel, you have to see everything clearly... this can only be advantageous for Iron Cloud.”

“That is correct.” Tie Bu Tian’s tone was very cold, “Even though I am a prince, Iron Cloud has been ruled by me for a long time. In any case, I am not a ruler in name, and a nation with two rulers is unacceptable. If Father dies, the entire royal court of Iron Cloud, regardless of whether they are military or court officials, against me or for me, they would have to take a step toward me as their center! For Iron Cloud, this can only be advantageous!”

“Especially under the current messy situation of the country on the verge of falling, this can only be a good thing!” Tie Bu Tian smiled icily and said, “But who has thought about how I feel?”

“Have you thought about it?” Tie Bu Tian asked Chu Yang directly, “Have you thought about it?”

Chu Yang remained solemnly silent.

“I am not an ambitious person who lusts for power.” Tie Bu Tian quietly said. His shoulders trembled. In this moment, Prince Bu Tian maintained his intelligence and calmness, but seemed extremely delicate and pitiful...

“I am going back to the palace; during this time, I will have to trouble Minister Chu.” Tie Bu Tian took a deep breath and said, “Whether it is giving out pensions for the deceased soldiers, finding spies, or finding saintly doctor Du, I trust that Minister

Chu will do a good job."

Tie Bu Tian turned and said softly, "My father only has a few days left; no matter what, I must remain by his side and take care of him until the moment he dies! Even if I lose this country for it, I... will not have any regrets!"

Then he quickly walked out. Upon reaching the door, he paused and said gently, "Chu Yang, if you cannot find Du Shi Qing... I will hate you! I will hate you for the rest of my life!"

In any case, Tie Bu Tian was not an idiot. Du Shi Qing just left Chu Yang's place and immediately disappeared; how could he not be suspicious? But he said "hate" not "kill." This had some deep hidden meaning.

After he finished speaking those words, Tie Bu Tian immediately disappeared behind the door.

Chu Yang stood at the door and stared outside in surprise. If someone could see his face behind the mask, they would be able to discover that he was in an intense struggle.

Tie Shi Cheng was currently better off dead than alive; dying a little earlier would be a relief for him. Plus, it would be doing him a favor! Everyone understood this.

Forcefully dragging out the life of this once mighty emperor was truly a cruel thing to do! Everyone knew this!

At this time, letting Tie Shi Cheng die was not a sad thing for all of Iron Cloud but a reprieve. Plus, the government of Iron Cloud would be more fortified. Tie Bu Tian's position of power would become official. With regards to the war between the two nations, this was not damaging in any way; it would be a great good!

Moreover, Chu Yang's choice to have Du Shi Qing go missing at this moment had a threefold purpose. First, he would be able to protect Du Shi Qing. Second, Iron Cloud Citadel was currently in chaos and it was known that remnants of Golden Horse Riders

Department were still there. Therefore he could use this as an excuse to increase the search force. Most importantly was the fact that Golden Horse Riders Department had suffered a great loss!

Out of the two King level leaders, one was dead and the other one was dying. The three Command Horse Riders were all killed! The strength of Golden Horse Riders Department in Iron Cloud Citadel was greatly weakened. Plus, spies like Tang Xin Sheng had already been captured. Since these things happened not too long ago, Golden Horse Riders Department would not have a chance to arrange something else.

If Tie Shi Cheng died now, it would be totally unexpected for Diwu Qing Rou. Chu Yang speculated that Diwu Qing Rou currently could not even react in time.

It was because the Golden Horse Riders Department people who were still in Iron Cloud Citadel would absolutely not dare to contact Great Zhao. So Diwu Qing Rou was now even more in the dark! As long as he did not know or knew too late, they could safely pass through the chaos that would come as it did after Tie Long Cheng died in the previous life!

Without a trace, he was able to eliminate a chance of Tie Bu Tian getting assassinated and a great crisis for Iron Cloud!

For Tie Shi Cheng, it was a good thing; for Iron Cloud Nation, it was a good thing; for the six hundred million people, it was also a good thing. With so many good things, so many benefits, Chu Yang just never considered Tie Bu Tian!

He never considered Tie Bu Tian’s perspective on this issue.

Or perhaps he did, but disregarded it.

However, Chu Yang was currently feeling guilty because of Tie Bu Tian’s reaction. It got him to start reconsidering this issue.

My decision is not wrong.

But the starting point needs to be reevaluated.

No matter what, this will definitely cause some injuries for Tie Bu Tian. Whether the starting point is that of a humane cause or a desire, I will feel a little guilty that I am not doing right by Tie Bu Tian.

From this thought, Chu Yang expanded further and suddenly had this feeling: I want to change fate and change this world; am I considering this issue from a selfish point of view?

Thinking to this point, Chu Yang was somewhat enlightened.

He did not regret today's action, but he set out one principle for himself: From now on, whenever he did anything, he would try to think about it more.

Because he was afraid that he would regret it later! Or, at some moment in time, thinking about something might cause his heart to be restless.

Chu Yang understood well that this kind of self-torture on one's mind was truly the greatest kind of suffering in life! The kind that tore and ripped at one's conscience like this could absolutely send a person into a deadly dilemma.

Chu Yang did not want himself to be with such guilty conscience for the rest of his life.

That afternoon, the people who went to search for Yin Wu Fa did not find any information. Just as Chu Yang planning on going back to Heavenly Armament Pavilion, one of the Shadow Guards appeared, "The Emperor wants to see you!"

"The Emperor wants to see me?" Chu Yang was temporarily stunned, "The Emperor?"

"The currently ruling emperor!" The Shadow Guard dryly explained, "Let's go."

Before Chu Yang could reply, the Shadow Guard had grabbed him. Then Chu Yang felt himself floating out the door and out of the gate. And like a dream... he was at the royal palace...

Chu Yang did not know what to say.

Even if you want to take me away, you should at least give me a word of warning. Especially when you whisked me away, you don't show yourself. People on the road looked at me as if I was a demon flying in the air.

This feeling was truly frustrating!

"The energy in your body is very odd!" When the Shadow Guard placed him down, he suddenly let out this mysterious sentence. He frowned and shook his head, "I have never encountered it before."

Then he disappeared without waiting for Chu Yang's answer.

Chu Yang gathered his wits and looked. He was at large room in the royal palace. The air was filled with the noxious smell of medicine. Through a thin curtain of tassels, he could faintly see Tie Bu Tian standing vigilantly within. He seemed to be talking about something in a very low voice.

After a pause, Tie Bu Tian turned his head toward the door and said softly, "Is that Minister Chu out there?"

Chu Yang said, "It is Chu Yang."

"Please come in." Tie Bu Tian said with a mournful voice, "Father has been wanting to meet you."

Chapter 200: Number one beauty, pinnacle of power, wealth of a nation... stay

A servant softly walked forward and gently parted the curtain of tassels. After Chu Yang walked in, the servant gently released the curtain and quietly left. From beginning to end, not a sound was made.

Chu Yang was immediately shocked the moment he walked in.

In front of him was a cushioned seat with a person resting on it. To say that it was a person was truly forced. It was, in more blunt terms, a pile of dried bones.

Besides the bones, this person's other organs did not weigh more than half a pound. It could be said that this was just wrinkly skin glued on top of a skeleton.

On his face, there was not a hint of pink hue. The only light came from the two opaque eyes that still shined with glorious vitality. And it was only when this person opened his eyes that others get the sense that he was still alive.

The gloomy aura belonging to the dead quietly oozed out from this living person's body.

This person's body was dressed in a bright yellow robe, but this noble attire was not able to cover up this person's gloomy aura.

At the moment, his eyes were looking in Chu Yang's direction with great effort.

Chu Yang could not imagine that a body so emaciated could still sit! Although, he was only reclining.

"You... are Chu Yang?" This person's voice was so low that it would be inaudible if one did not pay attention. But the one fortunate thing was that each faint word was articulate enough for others to understand.

Tie Bu Tian stood behind his body with one arm on his shoulder. Tears had started to come out at the edge of his eyes looking as if they could fall to the ground at any moment.

This person was none other than Tie Shi Cheng, the leader of Iron Cloud Nation and Tie Bu Tian's father.

He had been falling into lengthy states of unconscious that lasted more than twenty hours, but after each time, he remained awake for less than fifteen minutes. The most tragic thing was, each time he woke up, his was absolutely lucid!

This was the greatest torment for his family! Insanity would have been easier on them! But when he woke up this time, he heard about Du Shi Qing's disappearance and immediately demanded that Tie Bu Tian give him a dose of Dragon Spirit Fragrance!

Dragon Spirit Fragrance also had the name Recover Spirit Fragrance. It could help a dying person be more energetic and assist them to say what they needed to say and do what they needed to do!

But this period is also extremely short. Once it was over, the spirit's fire would be completely extinguished! And the person would die!

"Yes." Chu Yang replied softly. He truly did not dare to use any force when speaking. Looking at the shape this emperor was in, a person would feel that the slightest of disturbances would be unbearable.

"Ah, no need for ceremony." Tie Shi Cheng's eyes slightly twitched, "Come closer, and let me see you. You are standing so far; I can't see what you look like."

Chu Yang complied and took a few steps forward.

The distance between him and Tie Shi Cheng earlier was about five or six steps, and yet Tie Shi Cheng could not see him well... It could be said that the eyesight of this ruler was extremely bad.

“Not bad. You are indeed talented and good looking.” Tie Shi Cheng smiled slightly. He was at least a little better looking when he did not laugh. When he laughed, he looked like a horrifying demon.

“Your Majesty is too kind.”

“Bu Tian often praised you in front of me. Haha. He thinks I cannot hear him, but I heard everything clearly.” Tie Shi Cheng smiled with a trace of pride; then he sighed and said, “Today is the most relaxed I’ve been in this whole decade.”

Behind him, Tie Bu Tian’s slightly reddened face suddenly became pale.

“During this past period, I have heard about all the things that you have done.” Tie Shi Cheng’s eyes gradually grew brighter and sharper. A majestic aura slowly emitted outward from within his soul.

This was Dragon Spirit Fragrance gradually having an effect from inside his body.

“You have done very well!” Tie Shi Cheng’s sharp gaze judged Chu Yang as he slowly said, “I have also told Bu Tian many times that to be a ruler, you have to be a little cruel. When killing is necessary, then killing must be done even if it is your own descendants. There is nothing that cannot be done; this is the path a ruler must travel on. The path of a ruler is surely a lonely one filled with ups and downs! He essentially cannot have any certainty.”

“It is much more exhausting to be ruler than to be a commoner. There are some people you know you should not kill, but you still have to kill. There are some people you know you will miss, but you still have to kill them! There are some things that you know are wrong, but you still have to do them! Because when you are a ruler, you take on all of these things to bear on your own!”

Even though Tie Shi Cheng was looking at Chu Yang, his words seemed to be not for Chu Yang but for Tie Bu Tian.

“Being a ruler... what you need to think about is the world, not yourself and especially not your family. It is the pain of a ruler. Who in this world does not have feelings? Rulers have them too, but they are not allowed. Therefore, the heart of each ruler is lonely and pitifully sad. There are countless things that bother their conscience! They torture themselves day and night; that is why, to this day, the life expectancy of a ruler is still not long...”

Tie Shi Cheng let out another sigh; whatever he was thinking about caused an extreme sorrow to appear in his eyes.

Chu Yang did not know what to say to this dying emperor and resorted to remaining silent and not say anything.

“When I was eighteen, I ascended to the throne as emperor. In a few years, I built up a powerful military! We were an unmatched power! South and north, wherever we went they all surrendered! In five years, we expanded Iron Cloud’s territory by a third! At the time, I was ambitious. I felt as if this whole world was in the palm of my hand; this whole world was for me to unify!”

“Iron Cloud was stable when Great Zhao saw Iron Cloud as a threat and attacked! I was in the prime of my life and very ambition; I led the army myself! Iron Cloud’s weapons were sharp and unparalleled! I won one battle after another. Even with Diwu Qing Rou’s leadership, they were no match for my weapons!”

“At the time, five hundred thousand Iron Cloud troops fought with four hundred thousand of Diwu Qing Rou’s Great Zhao soldiers over an area of four hundred mile at Twin Dragons Mountain! I had total faith that I was going to obliterate Diwu Qing Rou’s army and grind them to dust as we directly invade Great Zhao! Using that powerful momentum, we would take over Limitless Nation and rule all of Lower Three Heavens!”

That hoarse voice of Tie Shi Cheng gradually rose with

excitement. A pink hue appeared on his face as his gaze became proud and awe-inspiring. It was as if he was reliving the time he led thousands of soldiers to conquer the world.

“However, just as the battle started, a group of assassins appeared! Thirteen Revered Martial Artists snuck into camp and tried to assassinate me without a care for their own lives. But that was not enough, there was a saintly archer who shot one arrow at me from more than one hundred miles away!” Tie Shi Cheng’s eyes showed a great resentment, “It was that arrow that pulled my world from the pinnacle straight into hell!”

“On the arrow was a poison without any antidote. In that battle, our soldiers were like a snake without a head. We suffered a great loss and pulled back to Iron Cloud Citadel like a turtle in hiding. Since then, we have been trying to hang on until this day…” When he got to this point his voice grew soft and trailed off.

“Ten years ago, I should have died, but I did not die until now… I have made them wait too long!” Tie Shi Cheng sighed. His eyes closed slightly, and two streams of tears fell down from his face.

Chu Yang said quietly, “Your Majesty, do you still have some unfinished business?” At this moment, saying something like “Long live the emperor” or some other gibberish about having a restful heart would have been inappropriate and even stupid. Chu Yang knew that if Tie Shi Cheng wanted to see him, he did not want just talk about his feelings.

If he wants to talk about his feelings, there are many courtiers; why would he want to talk about it with someone he just met like me?

“Unfinished business… there are many… many…” Tie Shi Cheng’s body suddenly shook a bit. His voice exposed a distracted tone with a mix of unresolved regrets.

“My unfinished business is Iron Cloud…” Tie Shi Cheng sighed. Then he suddenly asked, “Minister Chu, as a dying person, can I

request that you remain at Iron Cloud?”

Chu Yang was stunned; he looked up at Tie Shi Cheng.

“This punk Bu Tian, he has the making of an emperor. He strategizes well enough, but he is not cruel enough!” His eyes seemed almost dried up as he stared at Chu Yang, “Minister Chu can make decisive killings and deal with everything neatly. You perfectly complement Bu Tian’s deficiencies!”

“Both of you together are truly a pair made by the heavens… a partnership!” Tie Shi Cheng’s voice sounded a little weird.

“I am truly sorry. I cannot remain here.” Chu Yang paused then apologetically replied.

“If you stay… I… I can marry my only daughter to you!” Tie Shi Cheng stared at Chu Yang and said, “Don’t be in a rush to turn it down… Once you marry my daughter, you will be the regent emperor of Iron Cloud Nation! You will be sitting at the pinnacle of power with authority in your hand!”

From behind him, Tie Bu Tian dropped his head and bit his lip. He spoke up, “Father…”

“Minister Chu, my daughter is the number one beauty of Iron Cloud Nation.” Tie Shi Cheng did not pay any attention to Tie Bu Tian, and continued to look at Chu Yang, “You will have the pinnacle of power and the wealth of a nation as your wedding dowry! Will you agree to stay?”

“Number one beauty, pinnacle of power, and wealth of a nation.” Chu Yang let out a pained smile, “This is truly a hard to resist temptation, but… I already have someone in my heart. Plus… my life’s aspirations are not in this Lower Three Heavens.”

Chu Yang smiled, “Your Majesty’s kindness, I greatly appreciate it.”

Two potent rays of light suddenly emitted from the depth of Tie Shi Cheng’s eyes. A long time after, he said softly, “Good! Good!

You are truly worthy of the name King of Hell Chu!”

He weakly coughed twice and said casually, “Minister Chu, I have a question. You must answer truthfully.”

Chu Yang answered, “Please speak, Your Majesty.”

“Du Shi Qing’s sudden disappearance, does it have anything to do with Minister Chu?” Tie Shi Cheng asked gravely. Behind him, Tie Bu Tian suddenly perked up and looked at Chu Yang with a sharp gaze.

Table of Contents

- Transcending the Nine Heavens
  - Synopsis
  - Copyright
  - Chapter 101: King of Hell Chu
  - Chapter 102: Too clean, not good
  - Chapter 103: Suspicions everywhere
  - Chapter 104: Dark Night Challenger
  - Chapter 105: Just do it
  - Chapter 106: Undecipherable
  - Chapter 107: Make the move! Slaughter the Sun
  - Chapter 108: Qing Wu
  - Chapter 109: She is my life!
  - Chapter 110: Bitter? Not bitter
  - Chapter 111: She is your weakness
  - Chapter 112: Mo family clan
  - Chapter 113: Uncle Chu Yang
  - Chapter 114: Chu Yang's impulsiveness
  - Chapter 115: A glimmer of hope
  - Chapter 116: Diwu Qing Rou's note
  - Chapter 117: Grave situation
  - Chapter 118: Staying won't work, leaving is not okay
  - Chapter 119: Calculating to death
  - Chapter 120: King of Hell Chu's Fury
  - Chapter 121: Reminder
  - Chapter 122: Would you dare to make a bet?
  - Chapter 123: The mind of a powerful person
  - Chapter 124: Strategy! Would Diwu Qing Rou fall for it?
  - Chapter 125: Flirting with girls is too difficult…
  - Chapter 126: Asking for a betting debt
  - Chapter 127: Minister Chu is as bright as a full moon
  - Chapter 128: Glib tongue
  - Chapter 129: King of Hell Chu is loyal until death
  - Chapter 130: Breakthrough to Martial Artist
  - Chapter 131: Cursing and flattering
  - Chapter 132: Archenemy

Chapter 133: Hotshot
Chapter 134: Dreaming of a gentle dance, who needs earthly fame and fortune
Chapter 135: A small gift for little sister
Chapter 136: Who has the advantage?
Chapter 137: Gu Du Xing's invitation
Chapter 138: I won't be the only one defrauded!
Chapter 139: King of Hell Chu's origin!
Chapter 140: Information extraction
Chapter 141: Captured
Chapter 142: Escape
Chapter 143: The real master appears
Chapter 144: A battle of Kings
Chapter 145: Mutual destruction
Chapter 146: If you're going to leave, leave quickly!
Chapter 147: Boom! Boom! Boom!
Chapter 148: One spot of cold light radiates over a vast area
Chapter 149: Suspicion
Chapter 150: Diwu Qing Rou's deduction
Chapter 151: Studious Minister Chu
Chapter 152: Coming right to the door to get hustled
Chapter 153: Set the net and wait for fish
Chapter 154: Gu Du Xing returns
Chapter 155: Rebellion
Chapter 156: Based on what?
Chapter 157: A gamble
Chapter 158: The "intelligence" of Saber King
Chapter 159: Grieving Saber King arrives
Chapter 160: Diwu Qing Rou's miscalculation
Chapter 161: Extreme breakthrough is that easy!
Chapter 162: Initial persuasion
Chapter 163: Cousins
Chapter 164: I want true martial brothers
Chapter 165: I hope to have…
Chapter 166: Kong Shang Xin in action
Chapter 167: Prison raid
Chapter 168: Fighting "hard"
Chapter 169: How could this be?
Chapter 170: Battle report
Chapter 171: Playing a little

Chapter 172: You are all currently in grave danger
Chapter 173: Two schemes to lure snakes out of their holes are deployed at the same time
Chapter 174: Intentional bump
Chapter 175: Three King level masters lose together
Chapter 176: Brother Chu Yang, did you feel anything yet?
Chapter 177: A man’s ambition in life is to control the world!
Chapter 178: Scheming cannot beat a great change
Chapter 179: Working with thugs to search the whole citadel
Chapter 180: Blow the water of Nine Heavens dry with my purple jade flute
Chapter 181: Master the world
Chapter 182: I have my own way
Chapter 183: I would like to invite you for a drink
Chapter 184: A single promise
Chapter 185: For you, I will trample the Nine Heavens
Chapter 186: Get drunk for you
Chapter 187: The frightening King of Hell Chu
Chapter 188: You Yun’s luck
Chapter 189: Start the operation
Chapter 190: Flood King level leaders out
Chapter 191: Even with nothing left, we will not hesitate to fight!
Chapter 192: Surround and kill King level leaders!
Chapter 193: The end of the road
Chapter 194: Don’t let me die with regrets
Chapter 195: Wrong and right
Chapter 196: Tormenting Tie Bu Tian
Chapter 197: Unexpected robbing and killing
Chapter 198: King of Hell Chu roars
Chapter 199: The Emperor’s summon
Chapter 200: Number one beauty, pinnacle of power, wealth of a nation… stay